UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
3 1761 00191897 8

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/chronicletransla05froiuoft

THE TUDOR TRANSLATIONS

EDITED BY

W. E. HENLEY

XXXI

HMod
F927.86c
Eb

THE CHRONICLE OF
FROISSART

TRANSLATED OUT OF FRENCH BY

SIR JOHN BOURCHIER
LORD BERNERS

ANNIS 1523–25

With an Introduction by

WILLIAM PATON KER

VOLUME V

58385
25/11/02

LONDON
Published by DAVID NUTT
At the Sign of the Phœnix
LONG ACRE
1902

D
113
F713
1901a
V.5

Edinburgh: Printed by T. and A. Constable

HERE AFTER FOLOWETH THE TABLE OF THIS PRESENT VOLUME

[THIRD AND FOURTH BOOKS]

CAP. PAGE

lxxxvii. Howe the Frenche ambassadours came to the duke of Bretayne upon the takyng of the constable of Fraunce; and of the answere that was made to them . . . 1

lxxxviii. Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one acorde and alyaunce agaynst the kynge and his counsayle; and of the murmurynge of the people agaynst the duke of Irelande; and of the aunswere of the Londoners to the duke of Gloucestre 5

lxxxix. Howe the day of accompte came, and there the offycers appered in the presens of the kynges uncles and commons of Englande; and howe syr Symon Burley was prisoner in the towre of London; and howe syr Thomas Tryvet dyed 14

xc. Howe the kyng of Englande departed fro London; and howe syr Symon Burley was beheeded at London, and his nephewe also; and howe the duke of Lancastre was dyspleased 18

xci. Howe the counsayle drewe togyder for the reformacyon of the kynge and of the realme; and howe by the counsayle of the duke of Irelande the kynge was of the accorde to make warre agaynst his uncles, and agaynst the cyties and townes 21

xcii. Howe the kynge of Englande made his sommons to drawe towardes London; and howe syr Roberte Tryvylyen was taken at Westmynster and beheeded, by the commaundement of the kynges uncles 25

xciii. Howe tydynges came to the kynge of the dethe of his knyght, and demaunded counsayle theron; and howe he ordayned the duke of Irelande soveraygne of all his menne of warre 29

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

xciiii. Howe the duke of Irelande sent thre knightes to London to knowe some tydynges; and howe the kynges uncles and they of London went into the feldes to fyght with the duke of Irelande and his affinyte 32

xcv. Howe the kynges uncles wan the journey agaynst the duke of Irelande; and howe he fledde and dyvers other of his company 35

xcvi. Howe the duke of Irelande and his company fled; and howe the kynges uncles were at Oxenforde; and howe syr Nycholas Bramble was beheeded; and howe the kynge was sent for by the bysshoppe of Caunterbury 37

xcvii. Howe by the kynge and his uncles all the lordes of Englande were sente for to come to Westmynster to a generall counsayle there to be holden 42

xcviii. Howe the kynge of Portyngale with his puyssaunce assembled with the duke of Lancastre and his puissaunce; and howe they coulde nat passe the ryver of Dierne; and howe a squyer of Castyle shewed theym the passage . . 44

xcix. Howe the tydynges spred abrode that the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre were passed the ryver of Dierne; and howe it came to the kynge of Castylles knowledge; and howe certayne of the Englisshe knyghtes came and rode before Vyle Arpent; and howe the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre determyned there to tary the commynge of the duke of Burbon 49

c. Howe the duke of Lancastre gave lycence to his men; and howe an haraulde was sent to the kynge of Castyle; and howe thre knyghtes of Englande wente to speake with the kynge of Castyle for a saveconducte for the dukes men to passe thorough his countrey 54

ci. Howe these thre knyghtes obtayned a saveconducte of the kynge of Castyle for their people to passe; and howe dyvers of the Englysshemen dyed in Castyle; and howe the duke of Lancastre fell in a great sickenesse 58

cii. Howe syr Johan Hollande the duke of Lancastres constable tooke his leave of the duke, and he and his wyfe retourned by the kynge of Castyle, who made hym good chere: and howe syr Johan Dambritycourt went to Parys to accomplysshe a dede of armes bytwene hym and syr Boucyquaut 63

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

ciii. Howe the duke of Burbone departed fro Avignon to go into Castyle with all his hoost, and came to Burgus in Spaygne, and there founde the kynge of Castyle; and howe the duke of Lancastre herde those tydynges; and howe the duke of Burbone departed fro the kyng, and went streyght agayne into Fraunce 67

ciiii. Howe the erle of Foiz receyved honourably the duke of Burbon, and of the great gyftes that he gave hym; and howe syr Willyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passackes company departed out of Spayne; and of the incydent that fortuned in the towne of saynte Phagon 70

cv. Howe the kynge of Castyle and his counsayle were yvell content with syr Willyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultier of Passackes company; and howe the duke of Lancastre departed fro saynt Jaques to Bayon 74

cvi. Howe the erle of Armynake tooke great payne to treate with the companyons to departe out of the realme of Fraunce . 76

cvii. Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles who had layde all his landes in guage, and wyste nat what to do, came for refuge to the archebysshoppe of Cologne his uncle, who blamed hym; and howe ambassadours went to Berthaulte of Malygnes . . 81

cviii. Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles was maryed to Mary, doughter to Berthalte of Malygnes, by whome he hadde a doughter, and after maryed agayne in Englande, and hadde issue two sonnes and a doughter; and howe syr Johan of Bloyes wedded the eldest doughter of the erle of Guerles, and howe after, the countie of Guerles remayned with the erle of Guerles yongest doughter 86

cix. Howe these castelles of Gauleche, Buthe, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant; and howe the duke of Julyers sustayned the Lynfars in his countre, who robbed all maner of people; and of the great assemble that the duke of Brabante made to go to Julyers; and howe he was dyscomfyted . . . 90

cx. Howe the duke of Brabant dyed; and howe the duke Guillyam of Guerles treated with the duchesse of Brabante to have agayne the thre castelles, and what aunswere he had; and howe he made alyaunce with the kynge of Englande 99

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

cxi. Howe the duchesse of Brabante sent messangers to the Frenche kynge, complaynynge of the duke of Guerles; and howe the kynge and his counsayle were sore busyed with incydentes that fell in the realme of Fraunce, as well for the defyaunces of Guerles as the busynesse in Bretayne . . . 104

cxii. Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Naver dyed in the cytie of Pampylona; and howe Charles his sonne was crowned; and howe Vanthadore was besieged by the duke of Berrey; and howe the duke of Burgoyne sente to the duchesse of Brabante 108

cxiii. Howe the Frenchemen after they had brent and ryfled the towne of Seaull retourned to their garyson; and of the joye that the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse of Brabant made for that dede; and howe syr Johan Boesme Launce dyscomfyted the Englysshemen 114

cxiiii. How syr Johan Boesme Launce ledde these prisoners to Mount Ferante; and howe they of the countrey were gladde whan they herde of this entreprise; and howe Geronet and his company were sette to raunsome, and delyvered by the money that Perot of Bierne lent hym . . . 117

cxv. Howe Geronet of Mandurant with twelve of his company retourned to Mount Ferant; and howe Perot of Bernoys with four hundred speares wente to Mount Ferante; and wolde nat entre into the towne by none other way but in at the gate 121

cxvi. Howe Geronet lette in Perot le Bernoys and his company into the towne of Mount Ferant, whereof the countrey was afrayde; and howe the kynge and his uncles beynge at Parys were therwith sore dyspleased, and also the erle Dolphyn of Auvergne 126

cxvii. Howe Perotte le Bernoys and his company tooke their counsayle, and determyned nat to kepe the towne of Mount Ferant; and howe the sayd Perot and his company departed thens by night with all their pyllage and prisoners, and wente and refresshed them in the towne of Ousac . . 130

cxviii. Howe they of the towne of Cleremounte made a skrimysshe with these pyllers that had taken and robbed the towne of Mountferant at the gates of the towne 131

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

cxix. Howe the duke of Berrey marryed the Lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloyes sonne; and howe the same yere the sonne of the duke of Berrey marryed the Lady Mary of Fraunce, suster to the yonge kynge Charles of Fraunce . 134

cxx. Howe, after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre, all that ever he had wonne in Galyce the Frenchemen recovered it in lesse than fyftene dayes; and howe the Englysshemen that had ben there in that warre defamed and spake yvell of the countrey of Galyce; and howe the Frenche kynge sente for the duke of Irelande 140

cxxi. Howe the constable of Fraunce wolde nat accorde that the kynge shulde goo into Almaygne, bycause of the incydentes of the realme; and howe the duke of Bretaygne fournysshed his garysons, and made alyaunce with the kynge of Englande and with the kynge of Naverre, and of the army made by the Englysshemen 145

cxxii. Howe the Brabansoyes layde siege to the towne of Grave; and howe the constable of Fraunce tooke saynt Malo and saynte Mathewes, and sette there men in garysone; and howe the duke of Lancastre was at Bayon, greatly dyscomfyted in that he coulde get no maner of ayde . . . 150

cxxiii. Howe the duke of Berrey sente letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon; and howe the duke sente the copye of the same letters into Foyze and into Naverre, to the entent to have them publysshed in Spayne; and howe the duke of Bretaygne demaunded counsayle of his men in all his busynesse 154

cxxiiii. Howe the duke of Bretayne delyvered up the thre castelles of syr Olyver of Clyssons; and howe he receyved joyously the lorde of Coucy and his company, ambassadours fro the Frenche kynge; and howe the duke of Lancastre made great chere to syr Helyon of Lygnacke, seneschall of Xaynton, ambassadoure fro the duke of Berrey . . 160

cxxv. Howe the kynge of Castyle sente his ambassadours to the duke of Lancastre to treate for a maryage to be hadde bytwene his sonne and the dukes doughter; and howe at the request of the duke of Berrey a truse was made by the duke of Lancastre in the countreys of Tholousyn and Rouergue . 165

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

cxxvi. Howe the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne departed to go to Bloyes; and howe the duke of Bretayne came thyder; and howe the dukes dyd so moche that they had hym to Parys, in maner agaynst his wyll 170

cxxvii. Howe Lewes, kynge of Cycyle, entred into Parys in estate royall; and howe the duke of Bretayne entred on the nyght of saint Johan the Baptyst, the yere of grace a thousande thre hundred fourscore and sevyn; and of a dede of armes done before the kynge at Moutereau Fault Yon, bytwene a knyght of Englande, called syr Thomas Harpyngham, and a Frenche knyght, named syr Johan de Barres 173

cxxviii. Howe the duke of Bretaygne entred into Parys, and came to the castell of Loure to the Frenche kynge . . . 174

cxxix. Howe the erle of Arundell, beynge on the see more than a moneth, came to the haven of Maraunt, a lytell fro Rochell; and howe he sent a messanger to Perot le Bernoys, that he and other capytayns shulde kepe the feldes 177

cxxx. Howe they of Marroys and Rochelloys were sore afrayde of the Englysshemen that were a lande; and howe they of Rochell made a skrymysshe with theym; and howe after the Englysshemen had pylled the countrey about Maraunt, they drewe agayne to the see with their pyllage, whiche was great 181

cxxxi. Howe Perot le Bernoys and his companyons resorted agayne to their holdes with great pyllage; and howe the duke of Guerles coulde have no ayde of the Englysshemen to reyse the siege before Grave; and howe the Brabansois made a brige over the ryver of Meuse, the whiche they of Guerles dyd breake, bryn, and dystroy, as ye shall here after, . 185

cxxxii. Howe the Brabansoys passed the ryver through the towne of Ravesten over the bridge there, and so entred into Guerles; than the duke departed fro Nymay with thre hundred speares, and came agaynst them and dyscomfyted them, bytwene Ravesten and the towne of Grave . . 188

cxxxiii. Howe the duke of Guerles, after he had discomfyted the Brabansoys, he went agayne to Nymay; and howe tydynges came to the Frenche kynge; and howe the kynge sent ambassadours to the kynge of Almayne . 192

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

cxxxiiii. Howe the Frenche kynge gave leave to the duke of Bretaygne to retourne into his countrey; and howe the countrey of Brabant wolde nat consent to the kynges passage nor his army; and howe the ambassadours of Fraunce spedde . 197

cxxxv. Howe the erle of Bloys sent to the Frenche kinge two hundred speares; and howe the duke of Lorayne and the lorde Henry of Bare came to the kynge; and howe the dukes of Julyers and of Guerles knewe that the Frenche kynge came on them 202

cxxxvi. Howe syr Hellyon of Lygnacke made his reporte to the duke of Berrey; and howe the lordes of Scotlande assembled toguyder in the cytie of Berdane, and determyned to reyse up an armye to entre into Englande; and of an Englyssh squyer who was taken by the Scottes, who knewe the secretes of bothe realmes, Englande and Scotlande . 206

cxxxvii. Howe the erle Duglas wan the penon of sir Henry Percy, at the barryers upon Newecastell upon Tyne; and howe the Scottes brent the castell of Pondlen; and howe syr Henry Percy and syr Rafe his brother tooke advyse to folowe the Scottes, to conquere agayne the penon that was lost at the skrymysshe 211

cxxxviii. Howe sir Henry Percy and his brother, with a good nombre of men of armes and archers, went after the Scottes to wyn agayne his penon, that the erle Duglas had won before Newcastell upon Tyne; and howe they assayled the Scottes before Mountberke in their lodgynges . . 215

cxxxix. Howe the erle James Duglas by his valyantnesse encoraged his men, who were reculed, and in a maner disconfited, and in his so doynge he was wounded to dethe . . 219

cxl. Howe in this bataile sir Rafe Percy was sore hurte, and taken prisoner by a Scottisshe knyght 220

cxli. Howe the Scottes wanne the batayle agaynst the Englysshemen besyde Ottebridge, and there was taken prisoners sir Henry and sir Rafe Percy; and howe an Englisshe squier wolde nat yelde hym, no more wolde a Scottysshe squyer, and so were slayne bothe; and howe the bysshoppe of Durham and his company were disconfyted amonge themselfe 223

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

cxlii. Howe sir Mathewe Reedman departed fro the batayle to save hymselfe; and howe sir James Lynsey was taken prisoner by the bysshoppe of Durham; and howe after the batayle scurrers were sent forthe to discover the countrey . . 226

cxliii. Howe the Scottes departed, and caryed with them the erle Duglas deed, and buryed hym in the abbey of Nimayes; and howe sir Archambault Duglas and his company departed fro before Carlyle, and retourned into Scotlande . . 232

cxliiii. Howe the duke of Jullyers came and excused hymselfe of the defyaunce that his son the duke of Guerles had made to the Frenche kyng, and so became his subjette; and of dyvers feates of armes done bitwene the Frenchemen and the Almaygnes before Rencougne 235

cxlv. Howe the duke of Julyers and the archebysshop of Cologne departed fro the Frenche kyng and wente to Nimaye to the duke of Guerles; and howe by their meanes he was reconsyled and brought to peace with the Frenche kynge and with the duchesse of Brabant 240

cxlvi. Howe the erle of Arundell and the knyghtes of Englande beyng on the see, by fortune of the wynde came to the palyce besyde Rochell, whose beynge there was signifyed to sir Loyes of Xancere: and of the departyng of the erle of Arundell 245

cxlvii. Howe the admyrall of Fraunce was ordayned by the Frenche kynge and his counsayle as ambassadour, to go to the kynge of Castile; and howe the duke of Berrey sent to the erle of Foize to treate for a maryage bytwene the duke of Berrey and the erles doughter of Bolonge 251

cxlviii. Howe Geffray Tete Noyre dyde chose a capitayne over his compay, and howe he made his testament and so dyed; and howe the duke of Guerles departed fro his countrey to go into Pruce, and of the incydence that fell to hym in the lande of the duke of Stulpe, where he was taken prisoner and disconfyted 256

cxlix. Howe sir Johan of Vyen dyde his message to kyng Johan of Castyle fro the Frenche kynge and his counsayle, and what answere the kynge of Castyle made to hym . . . 260

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

cl. Howe sir Loyes of Xancere went to se the erle of Foize at Orthays; and howe before the duke of Lancastre at Burdeux there were dedes of armes done bytwene fyve Frenchemen and fyve Englysshemen; and howe the duchesse of Lancastre went with her doughter into Castyle to kyng John . . 263

cli. Howe the duchesse of Lancastre departed fro the kyng of Castyle, and went to Mantuell to bring her fathers bones to Civyle; and howe the Frenche kyng sent ambassadours to the erle of Foize, to treate for the mariage of the duke of Berrey his uncle with therle of Boloyns doughter . . . 267

clii. Howe certaygne wyse men treated for a peace to endure for thre yere bytwene Fraunce and Englande, and all their alyes, as well on the one parte as on the other, by lande and by see . 271

cliii. Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Paris 275

cliiii. Howe the lorde of Castellmorant, whom therle of saynt Poule had lefte behynde him in Englande, retourned into Fraunce with the charter of the truse, sealed by kynge Richarde and his uncles, to endure thre yere by see and by lande . . 287

clv. The maryage of kynge Loyes, sonne to the duke of Anjou, to the doughter of kynge Peter of Arragone; and howe he went with the quene of Naples his mother to Avignon to se pope Clement 288

clvi. Howe the Frenche kyng had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme; and howe he went fyrste into Burgoyne and to Avignone to se pope Clement 291

clvii. Howe sir Peter Courtney came into Fraunce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle; and howe the lorde of Clary conveyed hym; and by what occasyon he dyde armes with hym in the marchesse of Calis 301

clviii. Howe the justes at saynt Inguelyert, otherwyse called Sandyngfelde, were enterprised by sir Raynolde of Roye, the yonge sir Bouciquaut, and the lorde of saynt Pye . . 308

clix. Of the complayntes made to the Frenche kynge by the people of Languedocke, in the towne of Besyers, agaynst Betisache, treasourer to the duke of Berrey, of the great extorcyons that he had made, and of his confession, and of the cruell dethe that he hadde in the sayd towne . . . 311

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

clx. Howe the Frenche kyng beynge at Tholous, sent for the erle of Foize, who came thyder and dyd homage to the kyng for the countie of Foize 319

clxi. Of the feate and covynaunt that was done bytwene the kynge and the duke of Thourayne his brother, whiche of them shulde sonest come to Parys fro Mountpellyer, whiche is a hundred and fyftie leages asondre, eche of them but with one knight 324

clxii. Of the dethe of pope Urbayne of Rome, called the Antepape; and howe pope Clement wrote to the Frenche kyng, and to his uncles, and to the unyversite; and of the electyon of pope Bonyface by the cardynals of Rome 326

clxiii. Of the yeldynge up and takynge of the stronge castell of Vanthadore in Lymosyn, of olde parteyninge to sir Geffray Teate Noyre 330

clxiiii. Of the dedes of armes at saynt Ingylbertes, continewyng thyrtie dayes, agaynst all commers of the realme of Englande and other countreis, every manne thre courses 341

clxv. Of the enterprise and voyage of the knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande, and of the duke of Burbone, who was as chiefe of that armye, at the request of the Genovoys, to go into Barbary to besiege the stronge towne of Affryke . . . 358

clxvi. Of a capitayne, a robber and a pyller of the countre, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a strong castell in the marchesse of Rouergue, called the Roche of Vandoys; and howe it was besieged by the vicount of Meaulx, and of the takyng therof; and howe Aymergot was taken and brought to Parys 363

clxvii. Howe the Christen lordes and the Genovoys beyng in the ysle of Conymbres at ancre, departed thens to go and lay siege to the strong cytie of Affryke in Barbary; and howe they maynteyned the siege 396

clxviii. Howe after this adventure and dommage that fell to the Christen men by reason of this assaute before the towne of Affryke, and that so many knyghtes and squyers were deed, they maynteygned themselfe more wiselyer after than they dyde before, and contynued their siege a longe season after 417

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

clxix. Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London, whyle the Christen knyghtes and squyers were at the siege before the towne of Affryke agaynst the Sarasyns; and howe this feest was publisshed in dyvers countreis and landes . 419

clxx. Howe and by what incydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Affryke, and by what occasyon, and howe every man retourned to their owne countreis . . . 428

clxxi. Of thenglysshe knyghtes that were sente to Parys to the Frenche kyng fro the kyng of Englande and his uncles, to treate for a peace 437

clxxii. Of the dethe of kynge Johan of Castyle, and of the crownynge of kynge Henry his sonne 441

clxxiii. Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the voyage that he made into Lombardy; and howe he dyed at the siege before the towne of Alexandre . . . 442

clxxiiii. Howe sir Peter of Craon fell in the Frenche kynges displeasure and in the duke of Thourayns, and after he was receyved by the duke of Bretayne 456

THE CRONYCLE OF FROISSART

CAP. LXXXVII

Howe the Frenche ambassadours came to the duke of Bretayne, upon the takyng of the constable of Fraunce, and of the aunswere that was made to them.

IF I had ben as longe in company with this knight, sir Guyllyam of Aunsens, as I was with sir Espayn de Leon, whan I rode with hym fro the cyte of Paumyers to Ortayes in Byerne, or elles as long as I had ben with sir John Ferent Pertelette[1] of Portyngale, he wolde have shewed me many thynges. But it was nat so; for after dyner, whan we had rydden a ii. leages, we came to a forked waye; the one way was right to Towres in Towrayne, whether as I supposed to ryde, and the other waye was to Maylly, whether the knyght was determyned to ryde. So at this waye we brake company, takyng leave eche at other; but bytwene Prinulley[2] and our departynge he shewed me many thynges, and specially of the busynesse in Bretayne, and howe the bysshoppe of Langers was sent in the stede of the bysshoppe of Beawvoys, who died by the waye; and how the bysshoppe of Langers, with sir Johan de Bowyll and other, came to the duke of Bretayne, and of the answere that they had. And on the informacyon of this knyght I toke my foundacion, and have written as foloweth.

[1] *Pacheco.*

[2] *Rillé.*

Ye have herde here before howe these ambassadours departed fro Parys, fro the kyng and his counsayle, well instructed what they shulde saye and do; and so long they rode by their journeys, that they aryved at Nauntes. Than

CAP. LXXXVII

Howe the Frenche ambassadours came to the duke of Bretayne.

they demaunded where the duke was; it was shewed them howe he was about the marchesse of Wannes, wher as most accustomably he lay. They rode thyder, and so came to the cytie of Wannes, it is but xx. myles bytwene. The duke was in the castell called le Mote: than they came before the duke, who by semblant made to them good and swete recule. The bysshoppe of Langers, bycause he was a prelate, began to speke, and to make his preposicyon well and sagely, and sayde, Sir duke, we are here sente to you fro the kynge our maister and fro his uncles, the duke of Berrey and of Burgoyne, to shewe unto you howe they have great marveyle, in that the voiage that they wolde have made into Englande is by your meanes broken, and have taken and raunsomed the constable of Fraunce at so highe a raunsome, that they are ryght sorie therof. And moreover, ye wyll have thre of his castelles in Bretaygne, the whiche shal be a great anoyaunce to all the resydue of the countre, if they shulde be holde agaynst them, with the ayde of the towne of Jugone, the whiche is pertaynynge to the constables herytage. Therfore we are charged to shewe you, and we saye unto you as messangers fro the kynge our mayster, and from his uncles, that ye rendre agayne to the constable of Fraunce his herytage that ye with holde from hym, and sette hym agayne in peasable possessyon, accordyng unto ryght, in lyke maner as they were before, whan they were delyvered you perforce, and by none other ryght nor tytell that ye have to them; and also, that ye restore agayne entierlye all the money that ye have hadde of hym. And this is the commaundement of the kynge and his counsayle, that ye come personally to Parys, or where as it shall please the kyng to assygne you, there to make your excuse. And we repute hym so benygne and pacyent with that ye be of the blode royall, that he wyll here your excuse: and if he be nat reasonable, the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne wyll so temper hym, that ye shal be frendes and cosyn to the kynge, as by reason ye ought to be. Than the bysshopp tourned hym to sir Johan of Beull, and said, Sir, is nat this the kynges pleasure? And he sayde Yes; and so dyde sir Johan de Vyen. At these wordes there were no mo present but they foure.

CAP. LXXXVII

Howe the Frenche ambassadours came to the duke of Bretayne.

Whan the duke of Bretaine had herde the bysshoppe of Langers speke, he studyed a lytell, and good cause why, for it was a great matter, and at the laste he sayde, Sirs, I have well understande your wordes, and it is good reasone that I so do, bycause ye be sent from the kyng and his uncles; wherfore in their behalfe I wyll do you all the honour and reverence that I can do; I am bounde therto. But your demaunde and request requyreth counsayle, wherfore I shall take counsayle with myne, and make you suche answere, that ye shall be contented. Sir, ye saye well, quod they; it suffyceth us. Than they departed, and wente to their lodgynges. At nyght they were desyred to dyne the nexte daye with the duke. So the nexte daye they came to the duke, and were well receyved, and so wasshed and went to dyner, and satte downe; firste, the bysshoppe of Langers, bycause he was a prelate, and than the duke, than the admyrall of Fraunce, and thanne sir Johan de Beulle: they hadde a great dyner, and were well served, and after dyner they entred into a counsayle chambre, and there they talked of dyvers maters, and herde mynstrelsy.

These lordes of Fraunce thought surely to have hadde an answere, but they hadde none. Than wyne and spyces were brought in, and so made collasyon, and than toke their leave and departed to their lodgynge. The nexte daye they were apoynted to come to the duke, and so they dyde, and the duke receyved them swetely, and at the laste sayd, Sirs, I knowe well ye looke to be aunswered, for by the wordes that I have herde you saye, ye are charged by the kyng and his uncles to bring them an answere. Wherfore I say to you, that I have done nothynge to sir Olyver of Clesquyne[1] wherof I shulde repente me, savynge of one thynge, and that is, That he hadde so good a markette as to escape alyve: and in that I saved his lyfe was for the love of his offyce and nat for his persone, for he hath done me soo many displeasures that I ought to hate hym deedly: and savynge the displeasure of the kyng and of his uncles, and his counsayle, for all the takynge of sir Olyver, I have nat therby broken their voyage by the see. I wyll well excuse myselfe therin, for I thought non yvell the daye that I toke hym. A man ought to take his ennemy whersoever he

[1] *Clisson.*

CAP. LXXXVII

Howe the Frenche ambassadours came to the duke of Bretayne.

fynde hym. And if he were deed, I wolde thynke the realme of Fraunce to be as well ruled or better than it is by his counsayle. And as for his castelles that I holde, the whiche he hath delyvered me, I am in possessyon of them, and so wyll be, withoute the puyssaunce of a kynge take them fro me. And as for rendringe of his money, I aunswere, I have had so moche to do in tyme paste, by the meanes of this sir Olyver of Clysquyn, that I ranne in dette gretlye therby; and nowe I have payde them that I was bounde unto, by reason of this dette. This was the answere that the duke of Bretaygne made to the kynges ambassadours. Than they layde forthe other reasons, to enduce the duke to some reasonable waye; but all his answeres tourned ever to one conclusyon. And whan they sawe none other waye, they toke their leaves to departe, and the duke gave them leave. Thane they retourned, and dyd so moch by theyr journeys that they came to Parys, to the house of Beautie, besyde Wynsentes.[1] There was the kyng and the quene, and thyder came the duke of Berrey and the duke of Bourgoyne, havyng great desyre to knowe what answere the duke of Bretaygne hadde made.

[1] *Vincennes.*

The aunswere ye have herde here before, I nede nat to shewe it agayne. But the kyng and his counsayle were nat content with the duke of Bretaygne, that his ambassadours hadde made no better exployte: and they sayde howe the duke was a proude man and a presumptuous, and that the mater shulde nat so reste in peace, seynge the matter so prejudyciall for the crowne of Fraunce. And the entensyon of the kyng and his counsayle was, to make warre agaynste the duke of Bretayne; and the duke loked for nothynge elles, for he sawe and knewe well howe he had greatly displeased the kyng and his counsell. But he hated so mortally the constable, that it toke fro hym the good order of reason, for he repented hym sore that he had nat putte hym to dethe whan he hadde hym in his daunger. Thus the mater contynued a longe season; and the duke of Bretayne laye at Wannes, and lytell and lytell rode over his countrey, for he feared greatly embusshmentes. He kepte styll in love and favour his cyties and good townes, and made secrete treaties with the Englysshmen, and made

his castelles and forteresses to be as well kepte as thoughe he had had opyn warre, and was in many imaginacions on the dede he had done. Somtyme he wolde say, he wolde he had nat taken the constable; howebeit, he sayd ever to stoppe mennes mouthes, that sir Olyver of Clesquyn had sore displeased hym. So that many a man sayd, that elles he wolde never have done it. Therby he brought his countre in feare; for it is but a small signorie, if a prince be nat feared and douted of his menne, for and the worste fall, he maye have peace whan he lyst.

CAP. LXXXVII
Howe the Frenche ambassadours came to the duke of Bretayne.

Nowe lette us leave to speke of the duke of Bretaygne, and let us somwhat speke of the busynesse that was in the realme of Englande, whiche was in the same season, horryble and marveylous.

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsaile, and of the murmurynge of the people agaynst the duke of Irelande, and of the aunswere of the Londoners to the duke of Gloucestre.

YE have herde here before howe the kyng of Englandes uncles, the duke of Yorke and the duke of Gloucestre, with therle of Salisbury and the erle of Arundell, the erle of Northumberlande, the erle of Notyngham, and the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, all these were of one alyaunce and accorde agaynst the kynge and his counsayle. For these lordes and other were nat content with the kynges counsayle, and sayd among themselfe: This duke of Irelande dothe with the kynge what he lyste, and with all the realme; the kyng wyll nat be counsayled but by unhappy men, and of base lynage, and taketh no regarde to the great lordes of his realme. As longe as he hath suche counsayle about hym, the busynesse of Englande can nat do well, for a realme can nat be well governed nor a kynge well counsayled by suche ungracious people. It is sene, a poore man mounted into gret estate and in favoure

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsayle.

with his mayster, often tymes corrupteth and distroyeth the people and the realme. A man of base lynage canne nat knowe what parteyneth to honoure; their desyre is ever to enryche and to have all themselfe, lyke an otter in the water, whiche coveteth to have all that he fyndeth. Who hath any profyte by that the duke of Irelande is so great with the kyng? We knowe full well fro whense he came; yet we se that all the realme is ruled by hym, and nat by the kynges uncles, nor by none of his blode. This ought nat to be suffred. We knowe well ynoughe that the erle of Oxenforde had never the grace to do any valyaunt dede in this realme; his honour, wysedome, counsayle, or gentylnesse is ryght well knowen, and that was well knowen ones by sir Johan Chandos, in the prince of Wales house at saynt Andrewes in Burdeaux. Another demaunded What mater was that. I shall shewe you, quod the other knyght, for I was there present. There was wyne brought on a day into the Princes chambre, where as there were many lordes of Englande with hym; and whan the Prince had dronke, bicause sir John Chandos was constable of Acquitayne, the Prince sente hym his cuppe first to drinke, and he toke the cuppe and dranke, and made therof none offre firste to the erle of Oxenforde, who was father to this duke of Irelande. And after that sir Johan Chandos had dronke, a squyer bare the cuppe to the erle, who hadde suche dispyte that sir Johan Chandos hadde dronke before hym, that he refused the cuppe, and wolde nat drinke, and sayde to the squyer in maner of a mocke, Go to thy mayster Chandos, and bydde hym drinke. Shall I go, said the squyer, he hath dronke all redy. Therfore drinke you, sythe he hath offred it to you: if ye wyll nat drinke, by saynt George I shall cast the drinke in your face. Therle, whan he herd that, douted that the squyer wolde do as he sayde, and so toke the cuppe, and sette it to his mouthe and dranke, or at leest made semblant to drinke. And sir Johan Chandos, who was nat farre thens, sawe well all the mater, and helde hym styll tyll the Prince was gone from them; than he came to the erle and sayde, Sir Aubery, are ye displeased in that I dranke before you? I am constable of this countrey; I maye well drinke before you, sythe my lorde the Prince and

other lordes here are contente therwith. It is of trouthe ye were at the batayle of Poycters; but suche as were there knoweth nat so well as I what ye dyd ther; I shall declare it.

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsaile.

Whanne that my lorde the Prince hadde made his voyage in Languedocke and Carcassone to Narbone, and was retourned hyther to this towne of Bourdeaux, ye toke on you to go into Englande. What the kynge sayde to you at your commynge I knowe ryght well, yet I was nat there. He demaunded of you if ye hadde furnysshed your voyage, and what ye had done with his sonne the Prince. Ye aunswered, howe ye had lefte hym in good helth at Bourdeaux. Than the kynge sayde, What, and howe durste ye be so bolde to retourne without hym. I commaunded you and all other whan ye departed, that ye shulde nat retourne without hym, on payne of all that ye myght forfayte; and you thus to retourne: I straitly commaunde you, that within four dayes ye avoyde my realme, and retourne agayne to hym, for and I fynde you within this my realme the fifth day, ye shall lese your lyfe, and all your herytage for ever. And ye feared the kynges wordes, as it was reason, and so avoyded the realme, and so your adventure and fortune was good, for truely ye were with my lorde the Prince a foure dayes before the batayle of Poycters: and so ye hadde the day of the batayle fourtie speares under your charge, and I had threscore. Nowe ye maye se wheder I ought to drinke before you or nat, sythe I am constable of Acquytaygne. The erle of Oxenforde was ashamed, and wolde gladlye he hadde ben thens at that tyme, but he was fayne to suffre and to here those wordes. This sir Johan Chandos sayde to hym in opyn presence. Therfore it is nat to be marveyled, thoughe this duke of Irelande, who is sonne to the sayd erle of Oxenforde, be disdaynfull, in folowynge the steppes of his father; for he taketh upon hym to rule all Englande above the kynges uncles. Well, quod some other, why shulde he nat, sythe the kyng wyll have it so?

Thus the people in the realme murmured in dyvers places agaynst the duke of Irelande. And he dyde one thyng that greatly abated his honour, and that was, he had firste to his wyfe the doughter of the lorde of Coucy, the lady

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsaile.

Isabell, who was a fayre lady and a good, and of more noble blode than he is of; but he fell in love with another damosell of the quenes of Englande, an Almaygne borne, and dyde so moche with pope Urbayne at Rome, that he was devorsed fro the doughter of the lorde Coucy, without any tytell of reason, but by presumpcion, and for his synguler appetyte, and than wedded the quenes mayde, and kynge Rycharde consented therto. He was so blynded with this duke of Irelande, that if he had sayd, Sir, this is whyte, though it had ben blacke, the kyng wolde nat have sayd the contrarye. This dukes mother was greatly displeased with hym for that dede, and toke into her company his first wyfe, the lady of Coucy. The duke dyde yvell, and therfore at length yvell came to hym; and this was the first princypall cause that he was behated for in Englande: every thyng that turneth to yvell must have a begynning of yvell. This duke of Irelande trusted so moche in the grace and favour of the kyng, that he beleved that no man shulde trouble hym. And it was a common renome through Englande, that ther shulde be a newe taxe raysed through the realme, that every fyre shulde paye a noble, and the riche to beare out the poore. The kynges uncles knewe well it wolde be a harde mater to bringe about, and they had caused certayne wordes to be sowen abrode in the cyties and good townes of Englande, as to saye, howe the people of Englande were sore greved with taxes and talenges, and howe there was great rychesse raysed, and that the comon people wolde have accomptes of the governours therof, as the archebysshop of Yorke, the duke of Irelande, sir Symon Burle, sir Mychaell de la Pole, sir Nycholas Bramble,[1] sir Robert Tryvilyen,[2] sir Peter Goloufer, sir Johan Salisbury, sir Johan Beauchampe, and the maisters of the staple of the wolles. The commons sayd, that if they wolde make a trewe accompte, there shulde be founde golde and sylver suffycient, without raysing of any newe subsydies. It is a common usage, none is gladde to pay money nor to opyn their purses if they may lette it.

[1] *Brember.*
[2] *Tresilian.*

This brute and noyse spredde so abrode in Englande, and specially in the cytie of London, whiche is chyefe cytie in the realme, that all the commons rose and sayde, howe they

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsaile.

wolde knowe howe the realme was governed, sayenge, howe it was longe syth any accompte was made. Firste, these Londoners drewe theym to syr Thomas of Woodstocke, duke of Gloucestre, thoughe he were yonger brother than sir Edmonde duke of Yorke. The comon people reputed the duke of Glocestre for a valyant and a sage discrete parson. And whan they came before hym they sayde, Syr, the good cytie of London recommaundeth them to you, and all the people in generall requireth you to take upon you the governynge of the realme, for they knowe well it is nat unknowen to you howe the kynge and the realme is governed. The common people complayneth them sore, for the kynges counsayle demaundeth tayles upon tayles, aydes upon aydes, so that the realme hath ben more greved with tayles and other subsydies nat accustomed, sythe the kynges coronacyon, than in fyftie yere before, and it is nat knowen where the richesse is become: wherfore, sir, maye it please you to provyde some remedy, or elles the mater wyll go yvell, for the commons cryeth out theron. Than the duke answered and sayde, Fayre sirs, I have herde you well speke, but I alone can nat remedy this mater; howebeit, I se well ye have cause to complayne, and so hathe all other people; but though I be uncle to the kynge and sonne to a kyng, though I shulde speke therof, yet nothynge shal be done for all that: for the kyng my nephue hath suche counsayle as nowe about hym, whome he beleveth better than hymselfe, whiche counsayle ledeth hym as they lyste. But if ye wyll come to the effecte of your desyres, it must behove you to have of youre accorde and agrement all the cyties and good townes of Englande, and also some prelates and noble personages of the realme, and so come toguyder into the kynges presens, and I and my brother shal be there; and than ye maye saye to the kynge, Ryght dere sir, ye were crowned very yonge, and yvell ye have ben counsayled as yet hyther unto; nor ye have nat takenne good regarde to the busynesse of this your realme, by reason of the poore and yonge counsayle that ye have aboute you; wherby the matters of your realme hath hadde but small and yvell effectes, as ye have sene and knowen ryght well; for if God hadde nat shewed his grace, this realme had been loste and distroyed. Ther-

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsaile.

fore, sir, here in the presens of your uncles, we requyre youre grace, as humble subjectes ought to desyre their prince, that your grace wyll fynde some remedy, that this noble realme of Englande, and the noble crowne therof, whiche is discended to you from the noble kyng Edwarde the Thirde, who was the moost noblest kynge that ever was sythe Englande was firste inhabyted, that it maye be susteyned in prosperyte and honour, and your people that complayneth, to be kepte and maynteyned in their ryghtes, the whiche to do your grace dyde swere the daye of youre coronacion; and that it maye please you to call togyther the thre estates of your Realme, prelates and barownes, and wysemen of your cyties and good townes, and that they may regarde if the governyng of your realme that is past, be well or nat. And, sir, if they parceyve that it hath been well, thanne suche as be in offyce to remaygne styll as longe as it shall please your grace; and if they be founde contrarye, thane they in courtesse maner to be avoyded fro your persone, and other notable and dyscrete persones to be sette into offyce, first, by your noble advyse, and by the consent of my lordes your uncles, and noble prelates and barones of your realme. And, sirs, quod the duke of Gloucester, whan ye have made this supplycacion to the kynge, he wyll thanne make you some maner of answere. If he saye that he wyll take counsayle in the mater, than desyre to have a shorte day; and peyse so the mater before hande, to putte the kynge and suche marmosettes as be about hym to some feare. Saye to hym boldely, that the realme wyll no lengar suffre it, and that it is marveyle howe they have suffred it so longe; and I and my brother, and the bysshoppe of Caunterburye, and the erle of Salisbury, the erle of Arundell, and the erle of Northumberlande wyll be by; for without we be present, speke no worde therof. We are the greattest personages of Englande, and we shall ayde to susteyne your wordes, for all we shall say howe your desyre is but reasonable; and whan he hereth us speke, he wyll agre thereto, or els he dothe amysse; and therupon apoynt a tyme. This is the best counsayle I can gyve you. Than the Londoners answered and sayde, Sir, ye counsayle us nobly; but, sir, it wyll be harde for us to fynde the kyng and you and all

these lordes toguyder in one place. Nay, nay, quod the duke, it maye well be done; saynt Georges daye is nowe within this syxe dayes; the kynge wyll be than at Wyndsore, and ye knowe well the duke of Irelande wyll be there, and sir Symon Burle, and many other, and my brother and I and therle of Salisbury shall be there; therfore provyde for the mater ayenst that tyme. Sir, quod they, it shal be done. And so they departed ryght well contente with the duke of Gloucester. Than whan saynt Georges daye came, the kyng and the quene were at Wyndsore, and made there a great feest, as his predecessours hadde done before, the next daye after the feest of saynt George. Thyder came the Londoners, to the nombre of threscore horse, and of Yorke as many, and many other of dyvers good townes of Englande, and they lodged in the towne of Wyndsore. The kyng was determyned to departe to a place a thre leages thens, and whan he knewe of the commyng of the people to speke with hym, he wolde the sooner have ben gone; he sayde he wolde in no wyse speke with them. But than his uncles and therle of Salisbury sayd, Sir, ye may nat with your honour thus departe; the people of youre good townes of Englande are come hyder to speke with you; sir, it is necessary that ye here them, and to knowe what they demaunde, and there after ye maye aunswere them, or els take counsayle to aunswere them. So thus full sore agaynst the kynges mynde he was fayne to tarye. Than they came into his presens in the great hall alowe; there was the kynge and bothe his uncles, and the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, the bysshop of Wynchester, the Chaunceler, and the erle of Salisbury, the erle of Northumberlande, and dyvers other. There this people made their request to the kyng. And a burges of London spake for them all, named sir Simeon of Subery, a sage man and well langaged, and there declared well and boldely the effecte of thinformacyon that the duke of Glocester had shewed them before, as ye have herde. Whan the kyng had herde hym well, he sayd, Amonge you commons of my realme your requestes are great and long; they are nat over soone to be spedde; we shall nat be toguyder agayne a long season, and also great parte of my counsayle is nat here present; therfore I saye

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsaile.

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsaile.

unto you, gette you home agayne, and sytte in reste, and come nat agayne tyll the feest of Myghelmas, without ye be sente for, at whiche tyme our parlyament shal be at Westmynster. Than come and bringe your requestes, and we shall shewe it to our counsayle, and that is good we shall accepte it, and that ought to be refused we shall condempne. But sirs, thinke nat that we wyll be rewled by our common people; that shall never be sene; as for our governynge, nor in the governaunce of them that rule under us, we se nothynge but right and justyce. Than a sevyn of them all with one voyce answered and sayde, Right redoubted soverayne, savyng your gracyous displeasure, as for justyce in your realme is right feble; your grace knoweth nat all, nor canne nat knowe. Your grace nouther demaundeth for it nor enquereth therfore; and suche as be of your counsayle forbere to shewe it you, bycause of their owne profyte; for, sir, it is no justyce to cutte of heedes, handes, and fete; suche maner of punysshmentes be nat laudable. But, sir, good justice is to kepe your people in ryght, and to sette suche wayes and order as they myght lyve in peace, that they shulde have none occasyon to grudge or to make any commosyon: and, sir, we saye that ye sette us to longe a daye as to Mighelmas. Sir, we may be never so well eased as nowe; wherfore, sir, we saye all by one assente, that we wyll have accompte, and that shortely, of them that hath governed your realme sythe your coronacyon; and we wyll knowe where youre revenewes is become, with all the taxes, tayles, and subsydies this nyne yeres paste, and wheron they have been bestowed. If suche as are your treasourers make a good accompte, or nere therunto, we shall be ryght joyouse, and suffre them to governe styll. And if they can nat acquyte themselfe therin trewly, they shal be refourmed by youre deputyes establysshed to that purpose, as my lordes your uncles and other. With those wordes the kynge behelde his uncles and helde his peace, to se what they wolde saye. Than sir Thomas duke of Gloucester sayde, Sir, in the request and prayer of these good people, the commons of your realme, I se nothynge therin but ryght and reasone. Sir, quod the duke of Yorke, it is of trouthe: and so sayde all the other prelates and barons that were there present.

CAP. LXXXVIII

Howe the kyng of Englandes uncles were of one accorde and aliaunce agaynst the kyng and his counsaile.

Than the duke of Gloucester sayde agayne, Sir, it is but reason that ye knowe where your good is become. The kyng sawe well howe they were all of one accorde, and sawe howe his chefe marmosettes durst speke no worde, for there were to many gret men agaynst them. Well, quod the kyng, I am content; lette them be rydde awaye, for sommer season cometh on and huntynge tyme, wherunto we wyll nowe entende. Than the kynge sayd to the people, Sirs, wolde ye have this mater shortely dispatched? Yea, sir, quod they, and that humbly we beseche your grace; and also we beseche all my lordes here, and specyally my lordes your uncles to be thereat. We are content, quod they, for the apeysyng of all parties, as well for the kynge as for the realme, for our parte lyeth therin. Than they sayde agayne, We desyre also the reverende father in God, the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, the bysshoppe of Lyncolne, and the bysshoppe of Wynchester to be there. They aunswered and sayde, they were content so to be. Than agayn they desyred all other lordes to be there that were there present, as the erle of Salisbury and the erle of Northumberlande, sir Reynolde Cobham, sir Guy Brian, sir John Felton, sir Mathewe Gourney. And moreover they sayd, they wolde ordayne that of every good cytie and towne in Englande there shulde be a thre or four notable persons, and they shulde determyne for all the hole commontie of Englande. Than this mater was determyned, and to assemble the utas of saynt George at Westmynster, and there all the treasourers, collectours, and offycers of the kynges to be there, and to make there accomptes before these sayd lordes. The kyng was content therwith, and was brought to it by fayrenesse and nat by force, by the desyre of his uncles and other lordes: it semed to hym behovable to knowe where his treasoure was become. Thus amiably every man departed fro Wyndsore, and the lordes went to London, and the treasourers and other offycers were sende for throughout the realme, to come with their full accomptes, on payne of dishonourynge, and losse of all that they had, and lyfe.

CAP. LXXXIX

Howe the day of accompte came, and there the officers appered in the presence of the kynges uncles and commens of Englande, and howe sir Simon Burle was prisoner in the toure of London, and howe sir Thomas Tryvet dyed.

THE day prefixed came that all partes apered at Westmynster. And suche as shulde make their accomptes apered before the kynges uncles, and suche other prelates and lordes, with other, as were assigned to here them. This accompte endured more than a moneth; and some there were that made their accomptes nother good nor honourable, and suche were punisshed bothe by their bodyes and by their goodes. Sir Symon Burle was cast in arerage of ii. C. and l. M. frankes, bycause he was one of the governours in the kynges youthe; and he was demaunded where this good was bestowed. He excused hymselfe by the bysshop of Yorke and sir Wylliam Nevell, sayenge howe he dyde nothyng but by their counsayle, and by the kynges chamberleyns, sir Robert Tryvilyen, sir Robert Beauchampe, sir Johan Salisbury, sir Nycholas Braule, sir Peter Goufer, and other. And whan they were demaunded therof before the counsaile, they denyed the mater, and layd all the faute in hym. And the duke of Irelande sayd to hym prively bytwene them two, Sir Symon, I understande ye shal be arested and sette in prison, and holde there tyll ye have payed the somme that is demaunded; nothyng shal be abated. Go your waye whether soever they sende you; I shall right well make your peace, thoughe they had all sworne the contrary. I ought to receyve of the constable of Fraunce threscore M. frankes for the raunsome of Johan of Bretaygne, sonne to saynt Charles of Bloys, the whiche somme ye knowe well is owyng to me; I shall present the counsayle therwith at this tyme; and fynally, the kyng is our soveraigne lorde, he shall pardon and forgyve it you clerely, for the profet ought to be his and no mannes els.

CAP. LXXXIX

Howe the day of accompte came.

Syr, quod sir Symon Burle, if I thought nat that ye shulde helpe agaynst the kynge, and to beare out my dedes, I wolde departe out of Englande and go into Almayne, and to the kyng of Beame, for thyder I coulde be welcome; and so let the mater rynne a season tyll the worlde be better apeased. Than the duke sayde, I shall never fayle you; we are companyons, and all of one sect; ye shall take day to pay their demaunde: I knowe well ye maye pay and ye lyste in redy money, more than a hundred thousande frankes: ye nede nat feare the dethe; ye shall nat be brought to that poynte; ye shall se the mater otherwise chaunge before the feast of saynt Michell, whan I have the kyng ones at my wyll, wherof I am sure; for all that he dothe now at this tyme is by force and agaynst his wyll. We muste apease these cursed Londoners, and lay downe this slaunder and brute that is nowe raysed agaynst us and ours.

Syr Symon Burle had a lytell truste on the wordes of the duke of Irelande, and so came before the lordes of Englande, dukes, erles, barons, and counsayle of the good townes. Than it was sayde to hym, Sir Symon, ye have alwayes ben a notable knight in the realme of Englande, and ye were well beloved with my lorde the Prince; and ye and the duke of Irelande have had in a maner the governynge of the kyng; we have sene all your maters and well examyned them, the whiche be nother good nor faire, which gretly displeaseth us, for your owne sake. It is clerely determyned by the hole generall counsayle, that ye must go to prison into the towre of London, and there to remayne tyll ye have brought into this chambre the money of the kynges and of the realmes that ye have gathered, the whiche, as it apereth by the treasourers rolles, draweth to the some of two hundred and fyfty thousande frankes. Nowe loke what ye wyll say. Than syr Symon was halfe discomforted, and said, Sirs, I shall with a good wyll, and also it behoveth me so to do, to fulfyll your commaundement; I shall go where as ye commaunde me; but, my lordes, I require you let me have a clerke assigned to me, that he maye write all suche expenses as I have layde oute in tyme past, in Almayne and in Beame, in procurynge the kynges maryage; and if there be any reast, I beseche you let me have the kynges

CAP. LXXXIX

Howe the day of accompte came.

grace and yours, that I may have reasonable dayes to pay it. Sir, quod the lordes, we are content. Thus syr Symon Burle was in prison in the towre of London.

Than the counsayle[1] spake of sir Willyam Helmon[2] and of sir Thomas Tryvet, for they were nat greatly in the favour of some of the barones of Englande, nor of the commontie of the realme, for the vyage that they made into Flaunders, for it was sayd that never Englysshmen made so shamefull a vyage. The bysshoppe of Norwyche and sir Hughe Caurell,[3] that was as than capitayne of Calais, were excused, and layde to the others charge howe they hadde taken money for the gyveng up of Burbourcke and Gravelyng. Some sayd, that that dede was trayson. They were sent for, and sir Wylliam Helmon came, but sir Thomas Tryvet was excused; I shall shewe you howe.

[1] *constable* P.

[2] *Elmham.*

[3] *Calverley.*

The same weke that he was sente for, beyng in his owne house in the northe partes, he rode out into the feldes upon a yonge horse that he hadde, and spurred hym so that the horse ranne awaye with hym over busshes and hedges, and at laste fell in a dyke and brake his necke. And so sir Thomas Trivet dyed, whiche was great dommage, and his dethe was greatlye complayned with many good menne of the realme. Yet for all that his heyres were fayne to paye a certayne somme of floreyns to the counsayle, to the kynges behove, as they sayde. But the chiefe encytyng of those maters came by the kynges uncles, and by the generall counsayle of the countrey, as it appered after in Englande; for of trouthe, thoughe the duke of Gloucestre was the yongest brother in age, yet he was moost auncyent in the busynesse of the realme, for he drewe to that opinyon that moost of the noble menne and prelates and the commons helde. Whan that sir Thomas Tryvettes composicion was made after his dethe, by the maner as ye have herde here before, therby the penaunce of sir Wylliam Helmon was greatly asswaged; he entred with the counsayle, and by the meanes of the valyantnesse of his body, and the good servyce that he had done dyvers tymes for Englande, as well in Bourdeloyes as in Guyen and in Picardye, where he was alwayes proved a good knight, there was nothynge layde to his reproche but takynge of the money for the delyveraunce of

CAP. LXXXIX

Howe the day of accompte came.

Burborcke and Gravelynge. Than he excused hymselfe with fayre and swete wordes, and made dyvers reasonable reasons, and sayd, My lordes, whosoever were in lyke case as we were in that tyme in the garyson of Bourburke, I thynke wolde do as we dyde. I have herde sir John Chandos and sir Gaultier of Manny say dyvers tymes, who were right wyse and of gret valure, howe that a man ought of two or iii. wayes chose the best waye, and wherby most to endomage his enemyes. And thus sir Thomas Tryvet and I, beyng in the garysons of Bourburke and Gravelyng, and sawe howe we were enclosed on all parties, and no conforte aperyng to us from any parte, and parceyved well howe we coulde nat endure many assautes, for they that laye about us were as chosen men of armes as ever I sawe, or I trowe any other Englysshemenne; for as I knewe justely by the reporte of our harraude they were at leest a syxtene thousande men of armes, knyghtes and squyers, and a xl. thousande of other: and we were nat paste a thre hundred speares and as many archers, and also our garysone was of suche cyrcuyte that we coude nat entende on every place, and that we well parceyved by an assaut that was made us on a daye: for whyle we were at oure defence on the one parte, they caste in fyre on the other parte, wherby we were gretly abasshed, and that our ennemyes right well parceyved. And therfore, to saye the trouthe, the Frenche kyng and his counsaile wrought by great gentylnesse, seyng the case that we were in, to gyve us trewse; for if they had gyven us another assaute the nexte daye, as they were ordayned to do, I thynke they hadde taken us at their pleasure; yet for all this they courtesly treated with us, by the meanes of the duke of Bretayne, who tooke great payne in that mater; and where as we shulde have gyven theym money for our raunsommes, if we hadde ben taken, as it was lykely, they gave us money, wherby we dyde them dommage, and it was in them to have endomaged us. We thought we conquered greatly on them whan we had of their money, and departed oureselfe safe and withoute trouble, and hadde with us all that we had won in all the warre tyme on the fronters of Flaunders. And, my lordes, besyde that, to pourge me of all blame, if there be any persone in Englande or without, knight or esquyer,

CAP. LXXXIX

Howe the day of accompte came.

except the persons of my lordes the dukes of Lancastre, Yorke, and Glocester, that wyll saye and abyde therby that I have done any untrouthe to the kynge my naturall lorde, or accuse me of any trayson, I am here redye to receyve his gauge, and to putte my body in adventure, by dedes of armes to prove the contrarye, as the judge therto assigned shall ordayne. These wordes and suche other, and the valyauntnesse of the knighte excused hym greatlye, and saved hym frome the parell of dethe; and afterwarde he retourned agayne into his fourmer estate, and was after that a ryght valyaunt knyght, and avaunsed into the kynges counsayle. But as at that tyme sir Symon Burle was nat delyvered out of prisone, for the kynges uncles hated hym gretlye, and soo dyde all the commontie of Englande. The kynge dyde all that he myght to have hadde hym delyvered all the seasone that he laye at Shene, but his counsayle said it myght nat be, for his rekenynges were nat clere. Than the kynge departed, and the duke of Irelande in his company, and rode towardes Bristowe, and the quene, with other ladyes and damoselles with her.

CAP. XC

Howe the kynge of Englande departed from London, and howe syr Symon Burle was beheded at London, and his nephue also; and howe the duke of Lancaster was dyspleased.

FOR all that the kynge departed from the marchesse of London, yet the kynges uncles nor their counsayle departed nat, but taried styll about London. Ye have herde often tymes sayde, that if the heed be sicke, all the membres can nat be well; the malady must first be pourged. I saye it, bicause this duke of Irelande was so great with the kyng, that he ruled hym as he lyste. He and sir Symon Burle were two of the princypall counsaylours that the kynge had, for they hadde a longe season governed the kynge and the realme: and they were had in suspecte that they hadde gadered richesse without nombre; and the renoume ranne

CAP. XC

Howe the kynge of Englande departed from London.

in dyvers places that the duke of Irelande and sir Symon Burle had a long season gathered toguyder money and sente it into Almayne; for it was come to the knowledge of the kynges uncles, and to the counsaylours of the good cyties and townes of Englande that helde of their partie, howe they had sente out of the castell of Dover by see in the night tyme into Almayne certayne coffers and chestes full of money. They sayd it was falsely and felonously done, to assemble the rychesse of the realme, and to sende it into other straunge countreys, wherby the realme was greatly impoverysshed; and the people were soroufull, and sayde that golde and sylver was so dere to gette, that all marchandyse were as deed and loste, and they coulde nat ymagin how it was but by this meanes.

These wordes multiplied in suche wise, that it was ordayned by the kynges uncles, and by the counsayles of the good townes that were annexed unto them, that sir Symon Burle had deserved punisshment of dethe. And also the archbysshoppe of Caunterbury sayd, that in the season whan the Frenche kyng shulde have come with his armye into Englande, this sir Symon Burle gave counsayle that the shrine of saynt Thomas of Caunterbury shulde have ben taken downe and brought into Dover castell; and the noyse was, that he wolde have had it so, to thentent that if he had ben in any danger, to have taken and stollen it, and conveyed it out of England. These maters were so layde to his charge, that none excuse coulde be herde; but on a daye he was brought out of the towre, and beheeded lyke a traytour. God have mercy on his soule. To write of his shamefull dethe ryght sore displeaseth me; howebeit, I must nedes do it, to folowe the hystorie. Greatly I complayne his dethe; for whane I was yonge I founde hym a gentyll knyght, sage and wyse: but by this enfortune he dyed.

His nephewe and heyre, sir Richarde Burle, was with the duke of Lancastre in Galyce the same season that this case fell in Englande, and one of the most renoumed in all his hoost nexte the constable, for he was as soverayne marshall of all the hoost, and was chiefe of counsayle with the duke. Ye may well beleve that whan he knewe of the dethe of his uncle, he was sore displeased; and also this gentyll knight,

CAP. XC

Howe the kynge of Englande departed from London.

sir Richarde Burle, dyed in the same journey on his bedde, by reason of sicknesse, as many other dyde, as ye shall here after, at place and tyme convenyent. Whan kynge Rycharde knewe of the dethe of this knyght, as he was in the marchesse of Wales, he was sore dyspleased, and sware howe the matter shulde nat passe, sithe they had so put to dethe his knyght, without good reason or tytell of right. The quene also was sorie, and wepte for his dethe, bycause he fetched her oute of Almaygne. Suche as were of the kynges counsayle douted greatly, as the duke of Irelande, sir Nycholas Bramble, sir Thomas Tryvilyen, sir John Beauchampe, sir Johan Salisbury, and sir Michaell de la Poule. Also the kynges uncles had put out of offyce the archebysshoppe of Yorke, named Wylliam Nevell, brother germayne to the lorde Nevell of Northumberlande, whiche byshoppe had longe ben treasourer of all Englande; and the duke of Gloucestre had charged hym to medell no more with the busynesse of the realme, on payne of his lyfe, but that he shulde go to Yorke or therabout, wher it pleased hym in his benifyce, and dwell ther and medel no further. And also it was shewed hym howe the honoure of his lynage, and in that he was a preest, excused hym of many great maters sore prejudiciall to his honour: and also it was shewed hym, that the moost parte of the counsayle of the commontie wolde have had hym disgraced and putte to dethe, in lyke maner as sir Symon Burle was.

So he departed fro London, and wente into the Northe to dwell on his benifyce. With this he and all his lynage were sore dyspleased, and thought surely that the erle of Northombrelande had brought that mater to passe, for all that he was of his lygnage, and were neyghbours. Into his rome was cled nat, right valyant, a wyse, and a sage clerke, the archebtymes sf Caunterbury, who was gretely in the favour of n nat be es uncles. He was come of the Mountague anbicause thiies, and was uncle to the erle of Salysbury. There e rulmade of the kynges counsayle, by the advyse of all ith comons, therle of Salysbury, the erle Rycharde of Arundell, the erle of Northumberlande, the erle of Devonshyre, the erle of Notyngham, the bysshop of Norwyche, called syr Henry Spenser; the bysshop of Wyn-

chestre, chauncellour of Englande, abode styll in his offyce, and was with the kynges uncles. The most renomed man in the counsayle nexte the duke of Glocestre was syr Thomas Mountague, archbisshop of Caunterbury; and well he was worthy, for he was a dyscrete prelate, and toke grete payne to reforme the royalme and to brynge it into the ryght waye, and that the kynge shulde put from hym the marmosettes that troubled all the royalme. Often tymes he would speke with the duke of Yorke in that matter, and the duke wolde saye to hym Syr bysshop, I trust the matters shall otherwyse fall lytell and lytell, then the kynge my nephewe, and the duke of Irelande thinketh: but it must be done accordynge to reason, and to abyde the tyme: to be to hasty is no good meane, for surely yf we hadde nat perceyved them betymes, they wolde have brought the kynge and the royalme in suche case, that it shulde have ben at the poynte of lesynge. The Frensshe kynge and his counsayle knewe ryght well our dealyng, and what case we were in, and that caused the Frensshemen to avaunce themselfe to have come hyder so puyssauntly as they wolde have done, to have dystroyed us.

CAP. XC

Howe the kynge of Englande departed from London.

CAP. XCI

Howe the counsayle drewe togyder for the reformacyon of the kynge and of the realme, and howe by the counsayle of the duke of Irelande the kynge was of the accorde too make warre agaynst his uncles, and agaynst the cytees and townes.

IN lyke maner as the kinges uncles, and the newe counsayle of Englande, beynge at London, devysed of the busynesse of Englande to reforme it, and to bring it into good estate, so on the other syde the duke of Irelande and his counsayle ymagined nyght and daye howe they myght contynue in their estates, and to condempne the kynges uncles, as ye shall here after. Whanne kyng Richarde was come to Bristowe, and the quene with hym, they kepte themselfe in the castell there, and men that were farre of

CAP. XCI

Howe the counsayle drewetogyder for the reformacyon of the kynge and of the realme.

beleved that the kyng laye there for favour of the duke of Irelande, who said that he wolde go into Irelande. And it was sayd, that the kyng wolde se hym dispatched. It was agreed by the generall counsaile that if he wolde go into Irelande, he shulde have at the coste of the realme fyve hundred men of armes, and fyftene hundred archers, and that he shulde abide there thre yere, and to be well and trewly payde. Howebeit, the duke had no great wyll to make that vyage, for he sawe well the kyng was yonge, and as than he myght rule as he lyst: therfore he feared if he shulde go farre of, that the love and the favour that he was in with the kynge shulde asswage. Also besyde that, he was in suche love with one of the quenes damoselles, called Lancegrove, that in no wyse he coude leave the syght of her; she was a fayre and a pleasaunt damosell, and was come with the quene out of the realme of Beame. This duke loved her so entierlye that he wolde gladly be devorsed fro his owne wife, who was doughter to the lorde of Coucy, and dyde sende for that entente to Rome to pope Urbayne: all the good people of the realme had marveyle therof, and dispreysed hym greatly, for that the good lady was doughter to the doughter of good kyng Edwarde, and of the good quene Philyppe. The duke of Yorke and the duke of Glocestre toke that dede in great dispyte, but for all their hate the duke of Irelande set lytell therby: for he was so blynded with lovynge of this damosell, that he promysed to be devorsed and to mary her. He douted nat the Popes graunt, so that he myght gette the kynges and the quenes good wyll, for he reputed his wyfe that he had Frenche, and brought up in Fraunce, and so was her father the lorde of Coucy, and he had made warre agaynst pope Urbayne in the tytell of pope Clement, wherfore pope Urbayne loved nat that blode: therfore he sayde the Pope wolde enclyne the lyghtlyer to his devorse. This mater the duke dyde putte forthe, and promysed to Lancegrove to mary her. This duke had a mother, a wydowe, called the olde countesse of Oxenforde; she agreed nat to the opynion of her sonne, but blamed hym greatly of his folye, and sayde, howe God wolde be sore displeased with hym, and paye hym one day for all, and thane it wolde be to late to repente. And she toke the duchesse to her, and

kept her styll in her estate; and suche as ought the ladye any good wyll gave her great thankes therfore.

CAP. XCI

Howe the counsayle drewe togyder for the reformacyon of the kynge and of the realme.

Thus I have shewed you parte of the busynesse of Englande that fell in this season, and yet I shalle procede further, as I was enfourmed. Ye have herde howe the duke of Irelande was aboute the kynge in the marches of Wales, and nyght and daye ymagyned on none other thynge but howe he myght bringe about his entent, and so served the kynge and the quene with fayre wordes to please theym, and caused all other knyghtes and squyers there about to come to Bristowe to se the kyng and the quene, and made them great sporte in huntyng. The kynge suffred hym to do what he lyste. The same season that the kynge laye at Bristowe on the ryver of Syverne, in the marches of Wales, the duke of Irelande tooke great payne to ryde in and out, and specially into Wales, and sayd to suche as wolde here hym, gentylmen or other, howe the kynges uncles, to have the soveraygntie of the realme, hadde dismyssed out of the kynges counsayle noble, valyaunt, and sage personnages, as the archebysshoppe of Yorke, the bysshoppe of Dyrhame, the bysshoppe of London, sir Mychaell de la Poule, sir Nicholas Bramble, sir Johan Salisbury, sir Robert Tryvilyen, sir Johan Beauchampe, and hymselfe, and hadde putte to dethe a valyaunt knyght sir Symon Burle, so that and they multiplye in their estate they wyll distroye all Englande. This duke of Irelande dyde so moche, and preached so to the people, and to the knyghtes and squyers of Wales, and of the countreis there aboute, that the moost parte beleved hym. And on a daye they came in generall to the kynge to Bristowe, and demaunded of hym if that it were his pleasure, as the duke of Irelande hadde shewed theym. The kynge aunswered and sayd, Yea truely, and prayed and commaunded them, as they loved hym, to beleve hym, and sayd he wolde avowe all that he shulde do, affyrmyng how he thought his uncles were to hygh mynded, so that he feared leste they wolde surmounte hym, and take awaye his realme from hym. And they of the marches of Wales alwayes loved the prince of Wales, father to the kyng, for by the tidynges they herde out of the marches of London, they thought justely that the kyng and the duke of Irelande had

CAP. XCI

Howe the counsayle drewetogyder for the reformacyon of the kynge and of the realme.

good cause, and so demaunded of the kynge what his pleasure was to do. The kynge aunswered and sayd, howe he wolde gladly that the Londoners that hadde done hym so great trespasses, that they were corrected and brought to reason, and his uncles in lykewise. They of Wales sayd, they were bounde to obey their kyng, nor they ought no fayth nor homage to no man but to hym, for he was their kynge and soveraygne lorde: wherfore they sayde they were redy to go whyder soever the kyng dyd commaunde them. The kynge was well contente with that aunswere, and in lykewise so was the duke of Irelande. Whan the duke sawe that the kyng wolde shewe that the busynesse was parteynynge to hymselfe, and that he hadde so good desyre to distroye his adversaries, and to bringe theym to reason, he hadde therof great joye, and sayde to them of his counsayle, We can nat do better than to retourne to London, and shewe our puissaunce, and so to do, outher by fayre wordes or otherwyse, to bring the Londoners to their accorde, and to be obeysaunt to the kynges commaundement. Alwayes they enfourmed the kynge howe it was a great losse to a realme whan there be many heedes and chefe governours, and howe there coude no good come therby; and the kynge affyrmed the same, and sayde, howe he wolde no lenger suffre it, but that he wolde fynde suche remedy that other realmes shulde take ensample by his realme.

Nowe sirs, I reporte me if I have nat good cause to saye that the realme of Englande in this season was in great paryll and adventure to have ben lost without recovery. For the kynge was moved agaynst his uncles, and agaynst a great parte of all the great lordes of the realme, and they agaynst hym; and the cytes and good townes one against another. And the prelates hadde great indignacyon one agaynst another, so that none coude remedy it, but al onely God. Whan the duke of Irelande sawe that he had the agrement of the kyng, and of the moost parte of them of the countrey of Wales, than he came to the kyng, and sayd, Sir, if ye wyll instytute and make me your lieutenaunt, I shall take a xii. or a fyftene thousande men with me, and go to the marchesse of London, or to Oxenforde, your cyte and myne, and there we wyll shewe our puyssaunce agaynst these

Londoners, and your uncles, who have so great indignacyon agaynst you: they have putte to dethe some of your counsayle; and sir, outher by fayre wordes or otherwyse we shall bringe them to reason. The kynge sayde he was content, sayeng, I wyll and ordayne you to be the cheife soverayne of my realme, and to reyse up men where ye can gete theym, and leade them wheder ye thynke best, to augment our sygnorie and realme. And to the entent that every man shall clerely se that the hoole realme parteyneth to me, I wyll that ye beare with you my banners and standerdes, and other abylmentes of warre, suche as I wolde beare myselfe in batayle. And I thynke that if the people se my banners displayed, they shall take corage and hardynesse to susteyne my quarell. And I wyll ye punysshe suche rebelles as wyll nat obey you, in suche wyse as all other maye take ensample by them: I beleve all suche as shall se my baners wave in the wynde, shall put themselfe under them, and shal be afrayde to disobey our commaundement. These wordes greatly rejoysed the duke of Irelande.

CAP. XCI
Howe the counsayle drewetogyder for the reformacyon of the kynge and of the realme.

CAP. XCII

Howe the kyng of Englande made his sommons to drawe towardes London; and howe sir Robert Tryvylyen was taken at Westmynster and beheeded, by the commaundement of the kynges uncles.

THE kyng made his assemble in the countrey of Wales, and about the fronters of Bristowe, alonge the ryver of Syverne. Dyvers lordes and knightes were sende for: some excused themselfe lawfully, and some came at the kynges commaundement; howebeit, they doubted leste great yvell shulde come of that enterprice. In this meane season the kynge and the duke of Irelande had a secrete counsayle bytwene them, and determyned to sende some of their men into the marchesse of London, to se and to knowe howe the kynges uncles dyd, and what they pur-

CAP. XCII
Howe the kyng of Englande made his sommons to drawe towardes London.

posed to do; they studyed whome they myght sende in that busynesse to knowe the trouthe. Than a knyght, cosyn to the duke of Irelande, and of his counsayle, called sir Robert Tryvilyen, sayd, Sir, ye make doute whome to sende that is trusty to London: for the love of you I shall take on me to do that journey. Wherof the duke thanked hym, and lykewise so dyde the kyng. Therwith this sir Robert Tryvilyen departed from Bristowe, disguysed in maner of a poore marchaunt, upon a lytell nagge, and so came to London, and tooke his lodgynge where he was unknowen, and so taryed there a certayne space and lerned what he coulde. At last he understode that the kynges uncles, and the newe counsayle of Englande, wolde kepe a secrete parlyament at Westmynster, wherfore he thought to go and lye there, to lerne what shulde be doone there. And so he came and lodged at Westmynster, the same daye that their counsaile began, and lodged in an alehouse, right over agaynst the palys gate: and there he was in a chambre lokyng out at a wyndowe downe into the courte, and there he myght se them that went in and out to the counsaile: and he knewe nere hande every man, but none knewe hym, bycause of his apparel. At last on a day a squyer of the duke of Gloucesters knewe hym, for he had often tymes ben in his company; and assone as sir Robert Trivylien sawe him, he knewe him well, and withdrewe hymselfe out of the wyndowe. The squyer had suspecions therof, and sayd to hymselfe, Me thynke I se yonder sir Robert Trivylen. And to thentent to knowe the trouthe, he entred into the lodgyng, and said to the wife, Dame, who is that that is above in the chambre, is he alone, or with company? Sir, quod she, I can nat shewe you: but he hath been here a longe space. Therwith the squier went up, the better to advyse hym, and saluted hym, and sawe well it was true, but he fayned hymselfe, and tourned his tale and sayde, God save you, good man, I pray you be nat myscontented, for I toke you for a farmour of myne in Essexe, for ye are lyke hym. Sir, quod he, I am of Kente, and a farmour of sir Johan of Hollandes: and there be men of the bysshop of Caunterburyes that wolde do me wronge, and I am come hyther to complayne to the counsayle. Well, quod the

CAP. XCII

Howe the kyng of Englande made his sommons to drawe towardes London.

squier, if ye come into the palys I wyll helpe to make your waye, that ye shall speke with the lordes of the counsayle. Sir, I thanke you, quod he, and I shall nat refuce your ayde.

Than the squyer called for a potte of ale and dranke with him, and payed for it, and badde hym farwell and departed, and never seased tyll he came to the counsayle chambre dore, and called the ussher to open the dore. Than the ussher demaunded what he wolde, bycause the lordes were in counsayle. He answered and sayd, I wolde speke with my lorde and mayster the duke of Gloucester, for a mater that ryght nere toucheth hym and all the counsayle. Thanne the ussher let hym in, and whan he came before his mayster, he sayde, Sir, I have brought you great tidynges. What be they, quod the duke. Sir, quod the squyer, I wyll speke aloude, for it toucheth you and all my lordes here present; I have sene sir Robert Trivylyen disguysed in a vyllayns habytte, in an alehouse here without the gate. Trivylien, quod the duke. Yea truely sir, quod the squier: ye shall have hym or ye go to dyner, if you please. I am contente, quod the duke, and he shall shewe us some newes of his mayster, the duke of Irelande; go thy waye and fetche hym, but loke that thou be stronge ynoughe so to do, that thou fayle nat. The squier went forthe and toke foure sergiauntes with hym, and sayd, Sirs, folowe me a farre of, and as soone as I make to you a sygne, and that I laye my hande on a man that I go for, take hym and lette hym nat escape. Therwith the squyer entredde into the house where Trivylien was, and went up into the chambre; and as soone as he sawe hym he sayd, Trivylien, ye are nat come into this countre for no goodnesse; my lorde the duke of Gloucester commaundeth that ye come and speke with hym. The knyght wolde have excused hymselfe, and sayde, I am nat Trivylien, I am a fermour of sir Johan of Hollandes. Nay, naye, quod the squyer, your body is Trivylien, but your habytte is nat; and therwith he made token to the sergiauntes that they shulde take him. Than they went up into the chambre and toke hym, and so brought hym to the palays. Ye may be sure there was great prease to se hym, for he was well knowen. Of his takyng the duke of Gloucestre was ryght joyefull, and wolde se hym. And

CAP. XCII
Howe the kyng of Englande made his sommons to drawe towardes London.

whan he was in his presens the duke sayd, Trivylien, what thinge make you here in this countre; where is the kyng, where lefte you hym? Trivylien, whan he saw that he was so well knowen, and that none excusacion coude aveyle hym, sayd, Sir, the kynge sente me hyther to lerne tidynges, and he is at Bristowe, and hunteth along the ryver of Syverne. What, quod the duke, ye are nat come lyke a wyse man, but rather lyke a spye: yf ye wolde have come to have lerned tidynges, ye shulde have come in the state of a knyght. Sir, quod Trivylien, if I have trespassed, I axe pardone, for I was caused this to do. Well sir, quod the duke, and where is your mayster the duke of Irelande? Sir, quod he, of a trouth he is with the kyng. It is shewed us here, quod the duke, that he assembleth moche people, and the kynge for hym, wheder wyll he lede that people? Sir, quod he, it is to go into Ireland. Into Irelande, quod the duke of Gloucester. Yea sir, truely, quod Trivylien. And than the duke studyed a lytell, and sayde, A, Trivylen, Trivylien, your busynesse is nouther fayre nor good: ye have done great folly to come into this countre, for ye are nat beloved here, and that shall well be sene; you and suche other of your affinyte have done great displeasures to my brother and to me, and ye have troubled to your power and with youre yvell counsayle the kyng, and dyvers other nobles of the realme; also ye have moved certayne good townes agaynst us; nowe is the daye come that ye shall have your payment, for he that dothe well, by reason shulde fynde it; thynke on your busynesse, for I wyll nother eate nor drinke tyll ye be deed. That worde greatlye abasshed Trivylen, for gladlye there is no man wolde here of his ende; he wolde fayne have excused hymselfe with fayre language, in lowly humblyng hymself, for he coude do nothyng to apease the duke, for he was so enfourmed of hym, and of other of the duke of Irelandes secte, that nothyng aveyled hym. Where to shulde I make lengar the mater: sir Robert Trivylien was delyvered to the hangman, and so ledde out of Westmynster, and there beheeded and after hanged on a gibet. Thus ended sir Robert Trivylien.

CAP. XCIII

Howe tidynges came to the kyng of the dethe of his knight, and demaunded counsayle theron. And howe he ordayned the duke of Irelande soveraygne of all his men of warre.

SHORTELY these tidynges came to kynge Richarde, and to the duke of Irelande, beyng at Bristowe, howe sir Roberte Tryvylyen was shamefully putte to dethe. The kyng toke that mater in great dispite, and sayd and sware, that the mater shulde nat rest in that case; and howe that his uncles had done yvell without tytle or reason, to put to dethe his men and knyghtes, and suche as had truely served hym, and his father the Prince, wherby, he sayde, it semed that they wolde take fro hym the crown of Englande, and that the mater touched hym nere. Than the archbysshoppe of Yorke, who was soverayne of his counsaile, and had ben longe, said, Sir, ye demaunde counsayle, and I shall gyve you counsayle: your uncles, and suche as ben of their accorde, erreth greatly agaynst you, for it semeth by them they wolde shewe howe ye be counsailed but by traytors; they wolde have none to beare any rule but themselfe: it is great parell for all the realme, for if the commons shulde ryse and rebell, gret myschefe shulde fall in Englande, if the lordes and great men be nat frendes toguyder and all one. Wherfore sir, I counsayle you fynde remedy with puissaunce: ye are as now here in a countrey well peopled and named; sende out your commaundement to all suche as are bounde to serve you, gentylmen and other. And whan they be all assembled, sende them into the marchesse of London, and make your generall capitayne the duke of Irelande, who gladly wyll take on hym the charge; and let no baner nor penon be borne but all onely yours, to shewe therby that the matter toucheth no man but you: and all the countrey in goyng thyder wyll tourne and take parte with you, and drawe to your baners; and paraventure the Londoners wyll take your parte, for they hate you nat, for ye

CAP. XCIII

Howe tidynges came to the kyng of the dethe of his knight.

dyde them never displeasure: all the hurte ye have had your uncles have caused it. Sir, here is sir Nicholas Bramble, who hath ben mayre of London, and ye made hym knyght, for suche servyce as he dyde you on a daye, who knoweth and ought to knowe the maner of them of London; for he was borne ther, and it can nat be but that he hath good frendes there; therfore sir, desire his counsail in this mater that toucheth you so nere; for sir, by yvell enformacyon and rumoure of the people, ye maye lese your signorye. Than the kynge spake to sir Nicholas Bramble, and requyred hym to speke. And at the kynges request sir Nicholas sayd, Sir, and it lyke your grace, and all my lordes here present, I shall speke gladly after the lytell knowledge that I have: Fyrst, I saye I can nat beleve but that the moost parte of the Londoners oweth love and favour to the kyng that here is, for perfitely they loved the Prince his father, and that they well shewed whan the villayns rebelled, for accordyng to the trouthe if they hadde taken parte with the villayns, they had distroyed the kyng and the realme. And moreover, the kynges uncles have as nowe a good tyme, for they disport themselfe among them, and enforme the people as they lyste, for there is none to saye agaynst them; they have put me out and all the kynges offycers, and have put in them of their affynite, and have sente the kynge hyder to one of the borders of his realme. There can no good be ymagined of this, nor it can nat be knowen perfitely what they entende: it is a herde mater,[1] but by that they shewe they wolde putte the kyng out of his realme, for they go all by puyssaunce, and the kynge dothe all by gentylnesse; they have put to dethe that gentyll knyght sir Symon Burle, who hath doone the kyng moche fayre servyce in the realme of Englande and in other places: they layde great falsenesse in hym that he shulde have delyvered the castell of Dover to the Frenchemen, and they enformed the people that he caused the Frenchmen to come into Flaunders, and to Sluse, whiche was nothyng so. And also in the dispyte of the kyng they have shamfully slayne sir Robert Trivylien, and so they wyll do other, if they maye atteygne to their ententes. Wherfore I saye that it were better for the kyng to use rygour and puyssaunce than gentylnesse; every man

[1] *Se ceste chose dure longuement.*

knoweth thorough the realme that he is kyng, and howe that at Westmynster the noble kyng Edwarde made every man to be sworne, bothe lordes, prelates, and all the good townes, that after his dyscease they shulde take the kynge here for their soveraygne lorde; and the same othe made his thre uncles. And it semeth to many as men dare speke, that they holde him nat in the state and fourme of a kynge, for he may nat do with his owne what he lyst; they drive hym to his pensyon, and the quene also, whiche is a herde thyng for a kyng and a quene; it shulde seme they wolde shewe that they had no wytte to rule themselfe, and that their counsaylours be traytours. I saye these thynges are nat to be suffred; as for me I hadde rather dye, than longe to lyve in this daunger or peryll, or to se the kynge to be ledde as his uncles wolde have hym. The kynge thanne sayd, Surely it pleaseth nat us, and I saye, ye have counsayled me as honourably as maye be, for the honour of us and our realme.

CAP. XCIII

Howe tidynges came to the kyng of the dethe of his knight.

At this counsayle at Bristowe it was ordayned that the duke of Irelande shulde be soveraygne of all the kynges men of warre, suche as he coude get, and to go to London, to knowe the perfyte ententes of the Londoners, trustynge that if he myght ones speke with theme, to tourne them to his acorde by reason of suche proffres[1] as he wolde make them in the kynges name. And so within a shorte space after, the duke of Irelande with a fyftene thousand men departed fro Bristowe, and rode to the cytie of Oxenforde; and there aboute he lodged and all his people, and had baners displayed of the kynges armes, and none other, to shewe that all he dyde was in the kynges tytell and quarell. Tydinges came to the kynges uncles, that the duke of Irelande aproched towardes London, with a xv. thousande men, with the kynges baners displayed. And on a daye all the lordes were at counsayle at Westmynster, and had with them the chefe of London, suche as they trusted best, and there they shewed them how the duke of Irelande was comyng agaynst them with an armye royall. The Londoners who were enclyned to their partie sayde, Sirs, let them come in the name of God; yf the duke of Irelande demaunde of us batayle, he shall have it incontynent; we will close no gate

[1] *proffes* P.

CAP. XCIII

Howe tidynges came to the kyng of the dethe of his knight.

we have for xv. M. men: nat and they were xx. The dukes were right joyfull with that answere, and incontynent they sent out knyghtes, squyers, and messangers, to assemble men of warre togyder fro dyvers parties; and suche as were sent for obeyed, for so they had sworne and promysed before. Men came fro the bysshoprike of Caunterbury, and Norwiche, and out of the counties of Arundell and Sussex, and of Salisbury, and Southampton, and out of all the countreis therabout London. And so great nombre of people came to London, and knewe nat what they shulde do.

CAP. XCIV

Howe the duke of Irelande sente thre knyghtes to London, to knowe some tydynges. And howe the kynges uncles, and they of London, went into the feldes to fyght with the duke of Irelande and his affinyte.

NOWE let us somwhat speke of the duke of Irlande, and of his counsell, being at Oxford, with a xv. M. men; howbeit, the most parte of them were come thyder by constraynt, rather than of good corage. Than the duke of Irlande advised to knowe thententes of them of London, and to sende sir Nicholas Bramble, sir Peter Golofer, and sir Michaell de la Pole, to the towre of London, and to go thyder by water, and to set the kynges baners in the hyght of the towre, to se what the Londoners wolde do. These thre knyghtes, at the duke of Irlandes request, departed fro Oxenforde; and the next day they passed the Temmes, at the bridge of Stanes, and rode to dyner to Shene, the kynges place, and there taryed tyll it was late, and fro thens rode to another house of the kynges, called Kenyngton. And there they lefte their horses, and toke botes, and went downe the water with the tyde, and passed London bridge, and so came to the towre, and was nat knowen, for no man was ware of theyr comynge. And there they founde redy the capitayne of the towre, whom the kynge had sette

there before, and by hym these knyghtes knewe moche of the dealyng of them of London, and of the kynges uncles; and the capitayne shewed them howe they were come thyder to lodge in great daunger. Why so, quod they, we be the kynges servauntes, and we may well lodge in his house. Nat so, quod the capitayne. All this cytie and the counsaile wolde gladly be under the obeysaunce of the kyng, so that he wolde be ruled by his uncles, and by none other. And this that I shewe you is of good wyll, for I am bounde to shew you, and to counsaile you to the best of my power, but I am in dout to morowe whan day cometh, and that it be knowen in London that servauntes of the kynges be come hyther, ye shall se this towre besieged bothe by lande and water, by the Londoners, and nat to departe hens tyll they se and knowe who is lodged within it. And if ye be founde here, ye shal be incontynent presented to the kynges uncles, and than ye may well ymagin what ende ye shall come to; I thynke they be so sore displeased agaynst the kynges counsayle, and agaynst the duke of Irelande, that and ye be taken, ye shall nat escape with your lyves. Study well upon these wordes, for I assure you they be true.

CAP. XCIV

Howe the duke of Irelande sente thre knyghtes to London.

Than these thre knightes who had wende to have done marveyls, were sore abasshed, and there determyned to tary all night as secrete as they coude, for feare of spyeng. And the capitayne promysed to kepe them sure for that nyght, and so kept the keyes with hym. And in the mornynge these knyghtes had dyvers ymaginacions and counsayles, to se howe they shulde deale. And all thynges consydred, they durst nat abyde the adventure to be knowen there, they feared greatly to be there beseged; and or day came whan the fludde was come they tooke a barge and passed the bridge, and went to Kenyngton. And whan it was daye they toke their horses and rode to Wyndsore, and there taryed all that nyght, and the nexte day they rode to Oxenforde, and there founde the duke of Irlande and his men, to whom they shewed all these tidynges, and howe they durst nat tary at the towre of London. The duke was pensyfe of those tidynges, and wyst nat what to say nor do, for he knewe well all the people that he had assembled there, were nat all of one corage, wherfore he wyst nat wheder it

CAP. XCIV

Howe the duke of Irelande sente thre knyghtes to London.

were better to retourne to the kyng, or to abide there. He toke counsayle with his knyghtes, and fynally their counsayle rested, that sythe the kyng had ordayned hym to be constable over all his people, and to correcte and to punysshe all rebelles, that he shulde kepe the felde: for if he shulde do otherwyse, it shulde be to his great blame and rebuke, and to bring him into the indignacion of the kyng, and to shewe that his quarell were nother good nor right. And also they said, that it was better for him to dye with honour and to abyde the adventure, than to shewe any false corage. But they counsayled hym to sende worde what case he was in to the kyng to Bristowe; as yet they sayd, blessed be God they kepte the feldes, and none to recountre them. So thus the duke sent to the kyng, desyring hym to sende hym more ayde, whiche the kynge dyde daylye.

Tidynges came to the kynges uncles, being at London, that the duke of Irlande with his company were in the marchesse of Oxenforde: there they toke counsayle what was best for them to do. There was with the kynges uncles the archebysshop of Caunterbury, the erle of Arundell, the erle of Salysbury, the erle of Northumberlande, and dyvers other lordes and knyghtes of Englande, and the rulers of London. There it was ordayned by the duke of Gloucester, that without delay they shulde issue out into the feldes, and that the mayre of London shulde putte into harnesse all the people in every warde, suche as wolde ayde them: sayeng, surely howe they wolde go and fyght with the duke of Irelande, whersoever they coude fynde hym. The mayre of London was as than a man of armes; he toke chosen men bytwene the age of twentie yeres and xl.; and the lordes were a thousande men of armes; they departed fro London, and went and lodged at Braynford, and there about, and the nexte daye at Colebroke, and dayly the nombre encreased, and so toke the waye to Redyng, to passe the Temes there aboute, for the bridges bytwene Wyndsore and Stanes were broken, by the commaundement of the duke of Irelande; so long they journeyed that they aproched nere to Oxenforde. Tidynges therof anone came to the duke of Irelande; than he beganne to dout and toke counsayle; than he was counsayled to take the feldes, and to put his people in order of batayle, and to

display the kynges baners, sayeng, By the grace of God and saynt George, the journey shulde be his. As it was devysed so it was done. Than they sowned their trumpettes, and every man armed hym and issued out of Oxenforde in order of batayle, with the kynges baners displayed; the day was fayre and clere, and a pleasaunt season.

CAP. XCIV
Howe the duke of Irelande sente thre knyghtes to London.

CAP. XCV

How the kynges uncles wan the journey agaynst the duke of Irelande, and howe he fledde, and dyvers other of his company.

TIDINGES came to the duke of Gloucester, beyng within thre leages of Oxenforde, by a ryver syde, whiche falleth into the Temmes, a lytell besyde Oxenforde, howe that the duke of Irelande was drawen into the feldes in order of batayle; wherof the duke of Gloucester had great joye, and sayde, howe he wolde fyght with hym if he myght passe the ryver. Than trumpettes sowned the dislodging, and ordered themselfe redy to fyght. They were within two leages of their ennemyes, and sertched to passe the ryver, and sente oute people to sertche the depnesse of the water, and they founde the ryver in suche a poynt, that in xxx. yeres before it was nat so base. And so the scurers passed at their ease, and rode and advysed the maner of their ennemyes, and than retourned to the duke of Gloucester, and sayd, Sir, God and the ryver is this daye on your parte, for the ryver is so lowe that it is nat to the horse bely; and sir, we have sene the maner of the duke of Irelande, they be redy raynged in the felde in good maner; we can nat saye if the kyng be there or no, but the kynges baners be there with the armes of Englande and of Fraunce, and none other. Well, quod the duke, a Goddes name so be it, of that armes I and my brother have parte; avaunce forward in the name of God and saynt George, let us go se them nerer. Than every man rode forthe with great courage, whan they knewe they myght passe the ryver at their ease; and so shortlye all their hoost passed the ryver.

CAP. XCV

How the kynges uncles wan the journey agaynst the duke of Irelande.

Tidynges came to the duke of Ireland howe the kynges uncles were passed the ryver of Temmes, and how they shulde have batayle brefely. Than the duke of Irelande was abasshed, for he knewe well if he were taken, the duke of Glocester wolde cause hym to dye shamefully, and that nouther golde nor sylver shulde raunsome hym. Than he sayde to sir Peter Golofer, and to sir Mychaell Pole, Sirs, surely my corage beareth yvell agaynst this journey, nor I dare nat abyde the bataile agaynst the kynges uncles, for if they take me I shall dye shamefully. Howe the Devyll is it that they be passed the ryver of Temmes? it is but a poore token for us. Why sir, quod the two knyghtes, what wyll ye do? I wyll save myself, and you also, quod the duke, and the rest save them who can. Well sir, quod the knyghtes, than lette us drawe ourselfe out a syde on a wynge, and so we shall have two strynges on our bowe. We shall se howe our men do: if they do well, than we shall abyde for the honour of the kyng, who hath sent us hither; and if they be discomfited we shall take the feldes, and take the advauntage by flyeng, and save ourselfe where we may. This counsayle was holden good. Than the duke and these two knyghtes rode along their batayle, and made good vysage, and sayd, Sirs, kepe your batayls in good order, and by the grace of God and saynt George, we shall have this daye a fayre journey, for the ryght is ours: it is the kynges quarell, therfore we shall spede the better. Thus they rode up and downe dissymulynge. At laste they gette themselfe out of the prease, and so came to one of the corners of the batayle and made a wynge; and therwith there came on the duke of Yorke, and the duke of Gloucestre, and other lordes, with their baners displayed, makyng great noyse with trumpettes. And as soone as the duke of Irelandes company sawe them commynge in so good order, and so fiersly, they were so abasshed that they helde none arraye, but tourned their backes and fledde, for the noyse ran howe the duke of Irelande and his counsayle were fledde and gone: and so than every man fledde, some hyther and thyder, they wyste nat whyder, without makynge of any defence. And the duke of Irelande and the two knyghtes of his counsayle fledde biforce of their

horses, and had no mynde to returne to the towne of Oxenforde, but withdrewe thens as moche as they myght.

CAP. XCV

How the kynges uncles wan the journey agaynst the duke of Irelande.

Whan the duke of Gloucester sawe the demeanour of his enemyes, and sawe howe they fledde, he hadde remorse in his conscience, and wolde nat do the yvell he myght have done, for he knewe well that many of them that were there presente were there rather by constraynt and by insytacion of the duke of Irelande than for any good love. Therfore he sayd to his men, Sirs, the journey is ours; I charge every man, on payne of dethe, that ye slee no man without he make defence; and if ye gete any knightes or squyers, bring them to me. His commaundement was done, so that there were but fewe slayne, without it were in the prease, as they rode one over another. In the chase there was taken lytell sir Johan Beauchampe and sir Johan Salisbury, and they were presented to the duke of Glocester, who was right joyous of them. Than the duke tooke the waye to Oxenforde, and gave leave to all his men of warre to retourne to their owne houses, and thanked them of the servyce they had done to hym and to his brother, and sayd to the mayre of London and his company, Sirs, departe you all home agayne; wherof they were all gladde. Thus departed that armye.

CAP. XCVI

Howe the duke of Irelande and his company fledde; and howe the kynges uncles were at Oxenforde; and howe sir Nycholas Bramble was beheeded; and howe the kynge was sent for by the bysshop of Caunterbury.

NOWE shall I shewe what became of the duke of Irelande and of sir Peter Golofer and sir Michaell de la Pole. As I shewed before, they saved themselfe, as it was nedefull for them, for if they hadde ben taken they had suffred dethe without mercy. I can nat saye if they went to the kyng or nat; if they dyde, they taried nat long, but departed the realme of

CAP. XCVI
Howe the duke of Irelande and his company fledde.

Englande assone as they coude, and, as I have herde reported, they rode through Wales, and toke shyppyng at Carleon, and sayled into Scotlande, and came to Edenborowe, and there they toke another shyppe and sayled, costyng Friselande and the yle of Theseley[1] and the countre of Hollande, and so came and arryved at the towne of Dondrest.[2] Than were they gladde; and, as I was enfourmed, the duke of Irelande had long before conveyed by Lombardes moche golde and sylver to Bruges, for feare of all casueltes; for though he was great with the kyng, yet always he douted the kynges uncles and the commons of the realme; wherfore he made provisyon before hande, of money, to ayde hym whan nede were; and, as it was shewed me, the threscore thousande frankes that he had receyved for the redempcyon of the chyldren of Bretayne, and specially for John of Bretayne, for Guy was deed, whiche money, as it was sayde, he founde redy there at his commynge; and he shulde receyve more, in thre yere, other threscore thousande frankes; wherfore he was nat abasshed, for he had substaunce suffycient for a longe space. And whan duke Aubert of Bavyer, who had Haynalte, Holand, and Zelande in governaunce, under the erle Willyam his brother, who as than was lyvynge, whan he understode that the duke of Irelande was come, as a fugetyve out of Englande, into the towne of Dordrest, he studyed and imagyned a lytell, and thought he shulde nat longe abyde there, seynge that he was fledde out of Englande, and had the yvell wyll of his cosyn germayne, to whome he bare his love and favour. And also he conceyved howe the duke of Irelande had dalte but yvell with his cosyn germayne, the lady Isabell of Englande, who had been lady of Coucy: wherfore he commaunded the duke of Irelande, bycause he hadde displeased his cosyns of Englande, and had broken his laufull mariage, and wolde mary another wyfe, that he shulde departe out of that countrey, and gette hym another lodgynge, and that he shulde nat be suffred to abyde in no towne of that countrey. Whan the duke herde that, he douted that he shulde be taken, and delyvered into the handes of his enemyes; and he humyled hymselfe greatly to them that were sente to hym, and sayde he wolde gladly obey the duke Aubertes com-

[1] *Texel.*
[2] *Dordrecht.*

maundement: and so payed and trussed, and entred into a vessell and all his, on the ryver of Mornegue,[1] and dyd so moche by water and by lande, that he came to Berette,[2] whiche towne pertayned to the bysshoppe of Trece.[2] There he was well receyved, and there he taryed tyll he harde other tydinges. Nowe let us leave spekyng of hym, and speke of Englande.

CAP. XCVI
Howe the duke of Irelande and his company fledde.

[1] *Merwede.*
[2] *Utrecht.*

After the endynge of this journey that the kynges uncles had agaynste the duke of Irelande besyde Oxenforde, and that every man was gone home, the bysshoppe of Caunterbury and the two dukes taryed styll at Oxenforde, I can nat tell howe long. And there was beheededde the lytell Beauchampe and sir Johan of Salisbury. After that justyce the two dukes retourned to London, and there taryed a season to here some tidynges fro the kynge; and they coulde here none, but that he was at Bristowe. Thanne the lordes at Westmynster, by the instigacion of the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, determyned that it shulde be honourable for them to sende to the kynge to Bristowe, and to shewe hym amyably that he hath ben a certayne space agaynst the moost parte of his realme, who loved hym better, and are gladder to kepe his honour than suche marmosettes as he hath beleved, by whom his realme hath ben in great trouble and peryll. In this meane season was brought to London sir Nycholas Bramble, who was taken in Wales, as he fledde from the journey to have saved hymselfe; of whose takynge the kynges uncles were right joyfull, and sayde, howe they wolde make no stoore of hym, but he shulde go the same waye as the other hadde done before. He coude never excuse hymselfe but that he must dye. He was beheeded without London; his dethe was sore complayned of some men of London, for he hadde been mayre of London before, and had well governed his offyce, and dyde one day great honour to the kyng, whan he slewe with his owne handes Lyster, wherby all the rebelles were disconfyted, and for that good servyce the kynge made hym knyght. But in the maner, as I have shewed you, he was beheeded, by reason of the overmoche belevynge of the duke of Irelande.

After the dethe of sir Nicholas Bramble, the kynges

CAP. XCVI

Howe the duke of Irelande and his company fledde.

uncles sawe that all suche as they hated, and wolde have oute of the kynges counsayle, were deed and fledde awaye. Than they thought the kynge and the realme shulde be brought into good order; for thoughe they had slayne some of the kynges counsayle, and chased theym awaye, yet they coude nat take awaye the signorie of the kyng, but thought to rule the realme in good forme, to the honour of the kynge and his realme. Than they sayd to the bysshop of Caunterbury, Sir, ye shall go lyke yourselfe to Bristowe to the kyng, and there shewe hym what case the busynesse of his realme is in, and recommaunde us to hym, and shewe hym in our behalfe that he gyve no credence of lyght enformacion agaynst us. He hath beleved some to moche for his owne honour and for the profyte of his realme. And saye also to hym, that we requyre hym, and so do all the good people of London, that he wolde come hyder; he shal be welcome and receyved with gret joye; and we shall set suche counsaile about hym, that he shal be well pleased. And we charge you retourne nat agayne withoute hym, and desyre hym nat to be displeased, thoughe we have chased awaye a meny of traytours that were about hym, for by them his realme was in great paryll of lesynge. The bysshop sayd he shulde do ryght well his message; and so departed and roode forthe lyke a great prelate, and so came to Bristowe, and the kynge was there, but with a privye company; for suche as were wont to have ben of his counsayle were deed and fledde awaye, as ye have herde before. The bysshop was in the towne two nightes and a day or the kyng wolde speke with hym, he was so soore dyspleased with his uncles for drivynge awaye of the duke of Irelande, whome he loved above all men, and for sleeynge of his knyghtes: finally he was so entysed, that he consented that the archbysshop shulde come into his presens. Whan he came before hym, he humyled hymselfe greatlye to the kynge, and there shewed the kyng every worde as the kynges uncles had gyven hym in charge, and shewed hym, that if it were his pleasure to come to London to his palys of Westmynster, his uncles and the mooste parte of all his realme wolde be ryght joyeouse, elles they wyll be ryght sorie and yvell displeased; and sayde; Syr, without the comforte, ayde, and accorde of

your uncles, and of your lordes, knyghtes, and prelates, and of your good cyties and townes of Englande, ye canne nat come to any of youre ententes. He spake these wordes boldelye, and sayde moreover, Sir, ye canne nat rejoyse so moche youre ennemyes, as to make warre with youre frendes, and to kepe your realme in warre and myschiefe. The yonge kynge, by reasone of the bysshoppes wordes, beganne to enclyne; howebeit, the beheedynge of his knyghtes and counsaylours came sore into his courage. So he was in dyvers ymaginacions; but finally he refrayned his displeasure, by the good meanes of the quene, the lady of Boesme, and of some other wise knightes that were about hym, as sir Rycharde Stener[1] and other. Thanne the kyng sayd to the bysshoppe, Well, I am content to go to London with you; wherof the bisshop was right joyous, and also it was to hym a great honoure that he hadde spedde his journey so well.

CAP. XCVI

Howe the duke of Irelande and his company fledde.

[1] *Stury.*

Within a short space after, the kyng departed, and lefte the quene styll at Bristowe, and so came towardes London with the archbysshoppe in his company, and so came to Wyndsore, and there the kyng taryed a thre dayes. Tidynges came to London howe the kynge was commynge; every manne was gladde. Than it was ordayned to mete hym honourablye. The daye that he departed fro Wyndsore, the way fro Braynforde to London was full of people, on horsebacke and a foote, to mete the kynge. And his two uncles the duke of Yorke and the duke of Gloucester, and Johan, sonne to the duke of Yorke, the erle of Arundell, the erle of Salisbury, the erle of Northumberlande, and dyvers other lordes and knyghtes, and prelates departed out of London, and mette with the kyng a two myle fro Braynforde. There they receyved hym swetely, as they ought to do their soveraygne lorde. The kynge, who bare yet some displeasure in his herte, passed by and made but small countenaunce to them, and all the waye he talked moost with the bisshop of London: at last they came to Westminster. The kyng alyghted at his palis, whiche was redy apparelled for him: there the kyng dranke and toke spyces, and his uncles also, and other prelates, lordes, and knyghtes. Than some tooke their leaves; the kynges uncles, and the arche-

CAP. XCVI
Howe the duke of Irelande and his company fledde.

bysshoppe of Caunterburye, with the counsayle, taryed styll there with the kyng, some in the palais, and some in the abbey and in the towne of Westminster, to kepe the kynge company, and to be nere toguyder to commune of their busynesse. There they determyned what shulde be done.

CAP. XCVII

Howe by the kynge and his uncles all the lordes of Englande were sente for to come to Westmynster, to a generall counsayle there to be holden.

A GENERALL Parlyament was ordeyned to be holden at Westmynstre, and all prelates, erles, barons, and knyghtes, and the counsayles of all the good townes and cytees of Englande were sent for to be there, and all suche as helde of the kyng. The archebysshoppe of Cauntorbury shewed to the kynges uncles and counsayle that when kynge Rycharde was crowned kynge of Englande, and that every man was sworne and made theyr releves to hym, and that whan he receyved theyr faythes and homages he was within age; and a kynge ought nat to governe a royalme tyll he be xxi. yeres of age, and in the meane season to be governed by his uncles, or by his nexte kynne, and by wyse men. The bysshop sayd this bycause the kynge as then was but newlye come to the age of xxi. yeres; wherfore he counsayled that every man shulde be newe sworne, and renewe their releves, and every manne newe to knowledge hym for theyr soveraygne lorde. This counsayle was excepted of the kynges uncles, and of all other of the counsayle: and for that entent all prelates and lordes, and counsayles of good cyties and townes were sent for to come to Westminster at a daye assigned. Every man came thyder, none disobeyed, so that there was moche people in London and at Westminster. And kyng Richarde was in his chapell in the palys, rychely apareyled, with his crowne on his heed; and the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury sang the masse. And after masse, the bisshoppe made a col-

lasyon. And after that the kynges uncles dyde their homage to the kyng and kyssed hym, and there they sware and promysed hym faithe and homage for ever; and than all other lordes sware, and prelates, and with their handes joyned togyder they dyde their homage, as it aparteyned, and kyst the kynges cheke. Some the kyng kyst with good wyll, and some nat, for all were nat in his inwarde love; but it behoved hym so to do, for he wolde nat go fro the counsayle of his uncles. But surely, if he might have had his entent, he wolde nat have done as he dyde, but rather have taken crewell vengeaunce for the dethe of sir Symon Burle, and other knyghtes that they had putte fro hym and slayne, without desert, as he thought. Than it was ordayned by the counsayle, that the archebysshop of Yorke shulde come and pourge hymselfe, for he hadde alwayes been of the duke of Irelandes parte, agaynst the kynges uncles. Whan the bysshop of Yorke herde of this, he douted hymselfe, for he knewe well he was nat in the favour of the kynges uncles; therfore he sente his excuse by a nephue of his, sonne to the lorde Nevell, and he came to London, and came first to the kynge, and shewed hym his uncles excuse, and dyde his homage in the bysshoppes behalfe. The kyng toke it well, for he loved hym better than the bysshoppe of Caunterbury, and so he hymselfe excused the bysshoppe, or elles it had ben yvell with him. But for the kynges love they forbare hym and toke his excuse; and so he taryed styll in his bysshoprike a longe space, and durste nat lye at Yorke, but taryed at Newcastell on the ryver of Tyne, nere to his brother the lorde Nevell and his cosyns. In this estate was at that tyme the busynesse of Englande, and so of a longe space the kynge was nat mayster over his counsayle, but his uncles and other bare all the rule. Nowe we wyll leave to treat of the maters of Englande, and speke of the busynesse of the kyng of Castyle and of the kynge of Portyngale, and of their warres.

CAP. XCVII

Howe all the lordes of Englande were sente for to come to Westmynster.

CAP. XCVIII

Howe the kynge of Portyngale with his puissaunce assembled with the duke of Lancastre and his puyssaunce; and howe they coude nat passe the ryver of Derne; and howe a squyer of Castyle shewed them the passage.

IT is reason, sythe the mater so requyreth, that I retourne agayne to the duke of Lancastres journey, and howe he parceyvered al this season in Galyce. I shall begyn there as I lefte, for I have great desyre to make an ende of that storie. Whan the duke of Lancastre had wonne and conquered the towne and castell of Dauranche[1] in Galyce, and brought it under his obeysaunce, and refresshed hym there foure dayes, for there he founde well wherwith, than the fyfthe day he departed, and sayde he wolde go to the castell of Noy. And so he dyde, and lay four dayes in a fayre medowe alonge a ryver syde; but the grounde was dried up by reason of the heate of the sonne, and the water corrupted, so that their horses wolde nat drinke therof, and suche as dyde dyed. Thanne it was ordayned to dislodge thens, and to tourne agayne to Auranch, for sir Richarde Burle and sir Thomas Morryaulx, marshalles of the hoost, sayd it was nat possyble to get the strong castell of Noy but by longe siege, by great wysedome and dispence, and moche artillary. And also tydinges came to the duke of Lancastre, that the kynge of Portugale approched with all his hoost, to the nombre of a thousande speares and tenne thousande able men. So that the two hoostes togyder were lykely to do a great dede, for the duke of Lancastre hadde a fyftene hundred speares, knightes and squiers, and a sixe thousande archers. These tydinges rejoysed greatly the duke of Lancastre, and so dislodged fro Noy, and wente agayne to Auranche in Galyce; and the duke sente for the duchesse his wyfe and the other ladyes and damoselles; for the duke sayd he wolde abyde there for the kynge of Portugale: and so he dyde.

[1] *Orense.*

CAP. XCVIII

Howe the kynge of Portyngale with his puissaunce assembled with the duke of Lancastre and his puyssaunce.

Ye shall knowe, that whan kyng Johan of Portugale and his marshalles had taken the towne of Feroull, they rode and aproched Auranch to come to the duke of Lancastre. And in their way they founde the towne of Padrone, whiche rebelled against them; but at their first comyng they yelded them to the kynges obeysaunce. The kynge taryed there and in the marches there about a fyftene dayes, and wasted greatlye the countrey of vitayls, and yet they had great plentie comyng dayly fro Portugale. Thus these two great hoostes were in Galyce, and greatly impoverysshed the countre, and the dayes waxed so hote, that no man coude styrre after nyne of the clocke, without he wolde be brent with the sonne. The duke of Lancastre and the duchesse were at Auranche, and their men abrode in the countrey in great poverte for lacke of vitayls for themselfe and for their horses. Nothynge that was good or swete coulde growe out of the grounde, it was so drie and brent with the sone; and that grewe was lytell worthe, for the season was so hote, that all was brent. And the Englysshemen, if they wolde have any thynge for themselfe or for their horses, it behoved them or their servauntes to go a forragyng a xii. sixtene, or twentie myles of, which was great payne and daunger. And the Englysshmen founde the wynes there so stronge, hoote, and brynning, that it corrupted their heedes and dried their bowelles, and brente their lightes and lyvers; and they had no remedy, for they coude fynde but lytell good waters to temper their wynes nor to refresshe them, whiche was contrary to their natures. For Englysshemen in their owne countreis are swetely norisshed; and there they were brent both within and without; they endured great povertie: the great lordes wanted of that they were accustomed unto in their owne countreis.

Than the knyghtes and squyers and other of Englande sawe the daunger and myschefe that they were in, and were likely to be, what for lacke of vytayle and heate of the sonne, whiche dayly encreased. Than they began to murmure, and to saye in the host in dyvers places, We feare our journey wyll come to a smal effect and ende; we lye to long in one place. That is true, sayd other; there is two thynges greatly contrarye for us; we leade in our company women

CAP. XCVIII

Howe the kynge of Portyngale with his puissaunce assembled with the duke of Lancastre and his puyssaunce.

and wyves, who desyreth nothyng but rest; and for one dayes journey, by their wylles, they wolde reste fyftene. This distroyeth us, and wyll do; for as soone as we came to Coulongne,[1] if we had gone forwarde we had spedde well, and brought the countre to good obeysaunce, for none wolde have ben agaynst us: but the longe taryeng hath enforced our ennemyes, for nowe they have provyded them of men of warre out of Fraunce, and by them their townes, cyties, and passages be kepte and closed agaynst us. Thus they disconfyted us withoute batayle: they nede nat to fyght with us, for the realme of Spayne is nat so pleasaunt a lande to traveyle in as is Fraunce or Englande, wherin are good villages, fayre countreis, and swete ryvers, faire medowes, and attemperate ayre for menne of warre; and here is all the contrarye. What ment oure lorde the duke of Lancastre, if he thought to wynne this countrey, to leade in his company women and children? This is a great let and without reason, for it is knowen in all Spaygne, and els where, that he and his bretherne are the true enherytours of the countrey, at leest their wyfes, doughters to kyng Don Peter. As for doyng of any conquest or tournyng of any townes, the women do lytell therin.

[1] *Corunna.*

Thus as I have shewed you, the people jangled in the duke of Lancasters hoost one to another. Than tidynges came to the duke that the kyng of Portugale aproched nere, wherof he was joyfull. And whan the kynge was within two leages, the duke with his knyghtes mounted on their horses and rode to mete hym, and there they mette amiably and all their companyes. The kynges hole hoost was nat there, but taryed behynde in the guydyng of sixe great lordes of Portugale, as Pouvase[2] of Congne, Vase Martyn de Merlo, Posdiche de Asnede, Gonse[3] Salvase de Merlo, sir Aulve Perrier marshall, and Johan Radighes Desar, and dyvers other; and the kyng had with hym a thre hundred speares. So at Auranche the kynge and the duke were togyder a fyve dayes, and toke counsayle toguyder. The fynall conclusyon was, that they shulde ryde togyder and enter into the countrey of Campe, and to go to the towne of Arpent, where syr Olyver of Clesquyne, constable of Spaygne, was. But they wyst nat how to passe the ryver of Derne,[4] whiche

[2] *Lopo Vasques.*

[3] *de asne degouse* P.

[4] *Douro.*

was fell and orgulous at certayne tymes, and specially rather in somer than in wynter; for whan the snowe and froste melteth on the mountayns, by reason of the sonne, than is the ryver moost depest and most dangerous to passe, for in wynter it is frosyn, and than the ryvers are but base and lowe. Yet for all that they concluded to ryde into the countre of Campe, trustyng at some place to fynde some passage. This conclusyon was publysshed throughe all their hoostes, wherof every man was joyfull, for they had lyen a long space sore oppressed and in great daunger at Auranche and therabout, and many were sore diseased.

CAP. XCVIII

Howe the kynge of Portyngale with his puissaunce assembled with the duke of Lancastre and his puyssaunce.

Thus the kyng of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre departed fro Auranche and rode toguyder, but their hostes were seperated into two partes, bycause none of them understode other, nor had no maner of aqueyntance toguyder; and also to eschewe riottes or debates that myght have fallen bytwene them, for Portugales are hote and hastye, and in lykewise Englysshmen be dispytefull and fierse. Thus they were apoynted by the marshals of bothe hostes to lodge and to forrage in divers partes, and nat toguyder. Thus they rode forthe, and were of that puyssaunce able to fyght for a journey with kynge Johan of Castell and all his adherentes.[1] So longe they journeyed, that they came to the ryver of Derne, whiche was nat easy to passe, for it was depe and with highe bankes, and full of great broken stones, so that but at certayne bridges whiche were broken, or elles so well kepte, that it was in maner impossyble to passe, they might nat gette over. So these two hostes had great ymaginacions how they might passe. Than so it fell that sir John Holande, who was constable of the Englysshe hoost, and the marshalles sir Richarde Burle and sir Thomas Moreaulx, and their forragers, as they rode before, they encountred a squier of Castell, called Donnage Bangher. He knewe well all the passages of the countrey, and he knewe where there was one passage that bothe horsmen and fotemen might easelye passe the river; and he came over at the same passage, and was taken and brought to the sayd lordes, of whom they were ryght glad. And there he was so streitly examyned, and also by the wordes of the constable, who sayde to hym howe he wolde quyte his raunsome, and gyve hym a good

[1] *adhenrentes* P.

CAP. XCVIII

Howe the kynge of Portyngale with his puissaunce assembled with the duke of Lancastre and his puyssaunce.

rewarde, if he wolde shewe them where they myght passe surely the ryver, for they sayde they had herde howe there was one sure passage over the ryver. The squyer, who toke but lyght advysement, and was covetous of the constables offre, and was gladde to be delyvered out of their handes, sayd, Sirs, I knowe well the passage, and I shall shewe it you, and shal be your guyde, where as ye and all youre menne maye passe without any daunger.

Of this the constable and marshalles had great joye, and so rode forthe toguyder, and sent worde of this tydinges to the duke of Lancastre, and so folowed the vowarde, and the constable and marshalles came to the passage. Than the Spanysshe squyer entred firste into the ryver, and shewed them the way; and whan they sawe the passage so pleasaunt they were ryght joyfull, and so every man passed over; and whan the vowarde was over, they lodged there to gyve knowledge to all other that folowed after. Than the constable kepte his promyse with the squyer that was their gyde; and so he departed fro them and rode to Medena del Campo, where the kynge of Castyle lay, a good towne in the countrey of Campe. Than the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre came to the passage, whiche was called Plasce Ferarde, bycause the gravell and sande there was firme and stable, and without parell. There they and their hoostes passed over, and the next day the rerewarde, and than they all lay in the countrey of Campe. Tydinges came to them of Ruelles, of Cateseris,[1] of Medena, of Vyle Arpente,[2] of saynt Phagon,[3] and to other cyties, townes, and castels of the countrey of Campe and Spayne, howe the Englysshemen and Portugaloyse were passed over the ryver of Derne, and had founde the passe, wherof every man had marvayle, and sayd, This can nat be done without trayson, for they shulde never have founde out the passage, but if some of the countre had shewed it to them. The kynge of Castelles lordes knewe how the squier of Castyle had shewed it them, and was their guyde; therupon he was taken, and knowledged the trouth, as he hadde done. Thanne he was juged to dye, and was brought to Vyle Arpent, and there beheeded.

[1] *Castrogeriz.*
[2] *Villalpando.*
[3] *Sahagun.*

CAP. XCIX

Howe the tydinges spred abrode that the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre were passed the ryver of Derne, and howe it came to the kyng of Castels knowlege. And howe certayne of the Englysshe knyghtes came and rode before Vyle Arpente; and how the king of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre determyned there to tary the commyng of the duke of Burbone.

WHAN the kynge of Castyle knewe howe the kyng of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre were in the feldes with a great puyssance and daily aproched, wherof he was sore abasshyd, and called to hym syr Gaultyer of Passac and syr Willyam of Lignac, and sayde, I have great marvayle of the duke of Borbon, that he commeth nat: our enemyes aproche and kepe the feldes, and none encountreth them: they waste our countrey, and the people of my realme are yvell contente that we fyght nat with theym; wherfore, sirs, I requyre you gyve me counsayle what is best to do. These two knyghtes, who knewe more of dedes of armes than the kyng dyd, for they had more used it, and therfore thyder they were sente oute of Fraunce, they sayde: Syr, surely the duke of Borbon cometh without fayle; and whan he cometh, we shall take counsayle what we shall do; but tyll he come, let us make no countenaunce of batayle. Let our enemyes go and come whyder as they lyst; lette them kepe the feldes; and we shall kepe the townes that be stronge, and well provyded bothe with men and vytayles: they shall be in the sonne and in great heate, and we shall be in the shadowe and in the fresshe ayre: they shall fynde the countrey wasted and pylled, and the more forewarde that they go, the lesse sustynaunce shall they fynde. And therfore, syr, at the begynnynge, to eschewe all inconvenyentes, all lytell holdes were beaten downe, and maners and churches, suche as men of the

CAP. XCIX

Howe the tydinges spred abrode that the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre were passed the ryver of Derne.

countrey wolde have put in their goodes; and this was wysely done, or els nowe your enemyes shulde have founde places to have rested in; and as nowe they shall fynde nothyng, without they brynge it with theym, but heate and the sonne on their heedes, the whiche shall burne and slee them. And, sir, all your townes, cyties, and castelles are well garnysshed and provyded for with good men of armes, artyllery, and vytayles. I thynke they shall be skrymysshed withall, for that is the lyfe and norysshynge of men of warre and their passetyme, for they ryde aboute all the worlde to seke adventures; therfore, sir, be nothynge abasshed, for we truste in this besynes we shall have no great domage. The kynge, by reason of these knyghtes wordes, was greatly recomforted, for he perceyved well they shewed him the trouth and reason.

Nowe let us speke of the duke of Lancastre and of the kyng of Portugale, who were in the feldes in the countrey of Campe. They wolde gladly have bene in some towne to have refresshed theym, for their foragers whersoever they wente coude fynde no thing, and for feare of encountrynges, they rode nat but in great companyes. And somtyme, whan they sawe a village on a hyll, or on the playne, than they rejoysed and wolde say: Go we thyder, for there we shal be all ryche and well provyded; and thyder they wolde ryde in great haste. And whan they were there, they founde nothynge but bare walles, and the howses broken downe, and nother catte nor dogge, cocke nor hen, man, woman, nor childe there; it was wasted before by the Frenchemen. Thus they loste their tyme, and their horses were leane and feble, by reason of their poore norisshyng: they were happy whan they founde any pasture. And some were so feble that they coulde go no further, but dyed for great heate and povertie; ye and also some of the great men dyed and were sore dyspleased with hoote fevers, and had nat wherwith to refresshe them; and sometyme by sodeyn coldes that toke them sleping in the nyght. In this case they were in, and specyally in the duke of Lancastres hoost, for the Englisshmen were of a febler complexion than the Portugaloys, for they coulde well endure the payne, for they be harde and accustomed to the ayre of Castyle. In

this case as I have shewed you the Englisshmen were in, and many dyed, and namely suche as had but smale provisyon for themselfe.

CAP. XCIX

Howe the tydinges spred abrode that the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre were passed the ryver of Derne.

Sir Richarde Burle, sir Thomas Moreaulx, sir Thomas Percy, the lorde Fitzwater, syr Maberyne of Linyers, sir John Dambreticourt, Thyrrey and Guyllyam of Soumayne, and with theym a two hundred horsemen, knyghtes and squyers, suche as wolde avaunce theymselfe, and desyringe of dedes of armes, at a tyme mounted on their horses, the beste they hadde, to the entente to ryde to Vyle Arpente, to awake the Frenchmen that were therin; for they had herde surely howe sir Olyver of Clesquyn[1] was within that towne, who was constable of Castyle, and with hym a great nombre of good men of armes. These lordes with their company rode forthe in a morenynge, and came to a lytell ryver that ranne before the towne and passed over. The larome rose in the towne and brute that the Englysshemen were come to the barryers. Thanne knyghtes and squiers armed them quickely, and came to the constables lodginge, and their varlettes sadled their horses and brought them to their maisters. The constable wolde nat by his wyll have suffered them to have issued out agaynste the Englysshmen, but he coulde nat let them, their corages were so fierse; and so they issued out well horsed and in good ordre. Firste issued sir Johan of Barres, the vicounte of Barlier, sir Johan of Brakemount, sir Pyer of Wyllannes, sir Tristram de la Gayll, and dyvers other, with great desyre to fyght agaynst the Englisshmen. And whan the Englysshmen had made their course before the towne, than they passed agayne the ryver where as they had paste, and drewe togyther on the sandes, and fayre and easely withdrewe fro the ryver a thre bow shottes. Than the Frenche knightes came cryeng their cryes, every manne his speare on the thyghe; and whan the Englysshmen sawe them, sodeynly they tourned with their speares in the restes. There was a sore rencountre, and dyvers overthrowen on the sandes on bothe parties; and whan that course was done, they lefte nat so, but skrymysshed togyther, but the powder of the subtyle sandes rose up so thycke, that one of them coulde nat se another, nor knowe eche other, so that themselfe nor their horses coulde

[1] *Clysson* P.

CAP. XCIX

Howe the tydinges spred abrode that the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre were passed the ryver of Derne.

skant drawe their brethes, their mouthes were so full of dust. So that therby eche party was fayne to withdrawe by their cries. Thus they departed, and no manne slayne nor greatly hurte. And bycause of this course that the Englysshe knyghtes made, they paste that daye but one leage fro the towne of Arpente, and so retourned to their lodgynges, and sycknesse toke them, heate, colde, and fevers. The duke of Lancastre wyste nat what to saye nor do, for he sawe well howe his men fell sicke dayly and lay in their beddes. And he was hymselfe soo wery and hevy, that gladly he wolde have layen in his bedde, and it had nat ben for discoragynge of his people. And on a day he spake with the kynge of Portugale, and demaunded counsayle of hym, desyringe hym to gyve his beste advyse what was beste to do, for he feared great mortalyte to fall in his host. Than the kyng sayd, Syr, it semeth well howe that the Spaynyardes nor Frenchmen wyll nat fyght with us at this tyme; they purpose to suffre us to waste ourselfes and our provysions. Why, syr, quod the duke, and what wyll ye than counsayle us to do? I shall shewe you, quod the kyng of Portugale. As for this season, whyle the sonne is so hoote, that ye and your people drawe againe into Galyce, and let every man refressh himselfe, and at Marche or Aprill than come to the felde agayne, and do so moch that newe ayde and comforte maye come to you oute of Englande by one of your bretherne. A realme is nat so soone wonne, and specyally to agree with the ayre nat acustomed before. Let your men go and passe their tyme in suche townes and forteresses as ye have in Galyce under your obeysaunce. This may well be, quod the duke; but than maye fortune to fall, as I shall shewe you. That is, whan our enemyes seeth that we be departed one fro another, you into Portugale and I into Galyce, at saynt Jaques or at Colongne, than the kynge of Spayne wyll ryde with great puyssaunce: for I have herde that he hathe foure thousande speares, Frenchmen and Bretons, and he shall fynde as many mo in his owne countrey. And also the duke of Burbon, uncle to the Frenche kyng, cometh after with two M. speares; and assone as he cometh he wyll set forwarde, so that and we be than at home in oure countreys, or we can assemble togyder

CAP. XCIX

Howe the tydinges spred abrode that the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre were passed the ryver of Derne.

agayne, as we be nowe, our enemyes shall do us great domage. Thanne the kynge sayde, Well: than lette us kepe styll the feldes in the name of God; as for my men be fresshe ynough, and are of good mynde to abyde the adventure, and I with them.

Thus they determyned to abyde the commynge of the duke of Burbon, to se if they shulde be fought withall thanne or nat, for they all demaunded nothinge but batayle. The tyme went ever forwarde and the sonne mounted, and the dayes chafed mervaylously, for it was aboute mydsomer, whan the sonne was in his strength, and specially in Spayne and Granade, and in the farre countreyes of Septentryon. Nor after Aprell there fell no rayne nor swetnes fro Hevyn, wherby every thynge was brente on the erthe. The Englisshmen eate grapes whan they myght get them, and dranke of the hote wynes; and the more they dranke the more they were set afyre, and therby brente their lyvers and longes, for that dyete was contrary to their nature. Englysshmen are norisshed with good metes and with ale, which kepeth their bodyes in temper; and there the nyghtes were hoote, bycause of the great heate in the day, and the mornyng mervaylously colde, whiche dysceyved them. For in the nyght they coulde suffre no thynge on them, and so slepte all naked, and in the mornynge colde toke them or they were ware, and that caste them into fevers and flyxes without remedy. And as well dyed great men as meane people.

CAP. C

Howe the duke of Lancastre gave lycence to his men, and howe a haraulte was sente to the kinge of Castyle, and howe thre knightes of Englande went to speke with the king of Castyle for a saveconduct, for the dukes men to passe through his countrey.

BEHOLDE nowe and se howe fortune tourned. Ye maye well beleve that the duke of Lancastre beynge in the realme of Castyle, coulde never have loste by batayle, nor his men dyscomfetted, nor loste his men as he dyd in that voyage by reason of sycknes, and hymselfe also nygh deed. And sir Johan Holande, who was constable of the hoost, whan he sawe his frendes and men thus infected with this malady without remedy, and herynge the complayntes of one and other, sayeng eche to other, Ah, the duke of Lancastre hath brought us to dye in Spaygne, cursed be this voyage: he wyll never have Englysshman more to come out of Englande to serve hym. He spurneth agaynst the pricke; he wolde his men shulde kepe the countrey whan it is wonne; and whan his men be all deed, who shall thanne kepe it? He sheweth nat that he can any skyll of the warre, sythe he seeth that none cometh agaynst us to fight in batayle. Why dothe he nat drawe than into Portugale, or into some other place? Than he shulde nat have the domage nor losse that he hath, for thus we shall all dye without any strokes. Whan sir Johan Holande herde and understode these wordes, for the honoure and love of his lorde the duke of Lancastre, whose doughter he had maryed, he came to the duke and sayd quickly to him, Sir, it must behove you to take newe and shorte counsayle: your people be in a harde case, and lykely to dye by syckenesse: if nede shulde fortune they are nat able to ayde you, they be wery and in a harde case, and their horses deed, so that noble men and other are so discoraged that they are nat lyke to do you any good servyce at this tyme. Than sayd the

duke, And what is beste than to do? I wyll beleve counsaile, for it is reason. Syr, quod the constable, me thynke it were beste ye gave lycence to every man to departe where as they thynke beste, and yourselfe to drawe outher into Portugale, or into Galice, for ye are nat in the case to ryde forewarde. That is trewe, quod the duke, and so I wyll do. Saye you to them howe I do gyve them leave to departe whyder it please them, outher into Castyle, or into Fraunce, so they make no false treaty with our enemyes, for I se well for this season our warre is paste. And paye every man their wages, and rewarde theym for their costes. Syr, quod the constable, this shall be done.

CAP. C

Howe the duke of Lancastre gave lycence to his men.

Sir Johan Holande made it be knowen by a trumpet in every lodgyng the entencion of the duke of Lancastre, howe he dyd gyve lycence to every man to departe whyder they lyst, and that every capytayne shulde speke with the constable, and they shulde be so payed that they shulde be content. This tydynges rejoysed some, suche as desyred to departe to chaunge the ayre. Than the barones and knyghtes of Englande toke counsayle howe they myght retourne into Englande; it was thought impossyble for them to retourne by the see, for they had no shyppes redy, and were farre fro any porte. And also their men were so sicke with fevers and flixes, that there were many deed, and so sicke that they coude nat endure the travayle on the see. So all thynges consydered they thought it best to repayre home thorough the realme of Fraunce. Than some sayde, Howe maye that be, for we be enemyes to all the realmes that we muste passe through. First, through Spayne, for we have made theym open warre. The kynge of Naver in lykewyse is joyned in this warre with the kynge of Castyle, and also the kynge of Aragone, for he is alyed with the Frenche kynge; and also he hath done to us a great dyspite: he hath taken and layd in prison at Barselona the archebysshop of Burdeaux, who wente thyder to demaunde the arerages that the realme of Aragon oweth to the kynge of Englande, our soveraygne lorde. And to sende to the Frenche kyng it is harde for us to do; it is farre of, and peradventure whan oure messanger cometh to the kynge, he is yonge, and peradventure his counsayle wyll do nothynge for us, for sir

CAP. C

Howe the duke of Lancastre gave lycence to his men.

Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce, hateth us mortally: for he wyll say that the duke of Bretayn, his great adversary, wyll become Englissh. Than some other that were of great wysdome and imaginacyon said, All thinges consydred, we thinke it best to assay the kyng of Castyle; we thynke he wyll lyghtly condyscende to suffre us to passe through his countrey peasably, and to gette a saveconducte fro the kynges of Fraunce, Aragon, and Naver.

This counsayle was taken, kepte, and herde, and a haraulde called Derby was sente forthe to the kynge of Castyle with letters. This haraulde rode forthe and came to Medena de Campo, and there he founde the kynge of Castyle; and than he kneled downe and delyvered his letters, and the kynge opened them and redde them; they were written in Frenche. Whan he hadde well understande them, he turned hym and smyled, and sayde to a knyght of his, Go and make this haraulde good chere: he shall be answered to nyght, and departe to morowe. Than the kynge entred into his secrete chambre, and sent for sir Wyllyam of Lygnac, and for sir Gaultyer of Passac, and red to them the letters, and demaunded of them what was beste to do.

I shall shewe you the substaunce of the matter. Syr Johan Holande, constable of the duke of Lancastres hoost, wrote to the kynge of Castyle, desyring hym to sende by the herault letters of safeconducte for ii. or thre Englysshe knightes to go and come safe, to speke and to trete with hym. Than these knightes answered and sayd, Sir, it were good ye dyde this, for than shall you knowe what they demaunde. Well, quod the kyng, me thynke it is good. Than there was a safeconducte written, conteyninge that sixe knightes might safely go and come at the poyntyng of the constable. This was sealed with the kynges great seale, and sygned with his hande, and delivered to the heralt, and xx. frankes in rewarde. Than he returned to Auranche,[1] where the duke and the constable were.

[1] *Orense.*

The herault delivered the safeconduct to the constable. Than the knyghtes were chosen that shulde go; sir Mauberyn of Linyere, sir Thomas Morell, and sir Johan Dambreticourt; these thre knyghtes were charged to go on this

CAP. C

Howe the duke of Lancastre gave lycence to his men.

message to the kynge of Castile. And they departed assone as they might, for some thought long, for there were many sicke and lacked phisicions and medicins, and also fresshe vitaylles. These Englysshe ambassadours passed by the towne of Arpent, and there the constable of Castyle, sir Olyver of Clesquy, made them good chere, and made them a supper: and the next daye he sent with them a knyght of his of Tyntemache, a Breton, to bring them the more surelyer to the kyng, for encountryng of the Bretons, of whom there were many sprede abrode. And so long they rode that they came to Medena de Campo, and there they founde the kynge, who had gret desire to know what they wolde. And whan they were alyghted at their lodgyng, and chaunged and refresshed them, they went to the king, who made to them gode semblaunt, and were brought to him by the knightes of his house. Than they delyvered to the kyng letters fro the dukes constable, but none fro hymselfe, for as than he wolde nat write to the kynge. But they sayd, Sir kyng, we be sent hyder to you fro the erle of Huntyngdon, constable with the duke of Lancastre, acertaynynge you of the great mortalyte and sickenesse that is amonge our men; therfore the constable desyreth you that ye wolde to all suche as desyreth to have their helthe, opyn your cyties and good townes, and suffre them to entre to refresshe them, and to recover their helth if they maye; and also, that suche as have desyre to passe into Englande by lande, that they maye passe without daunger of you, of the kyng of Naver, and of the Frenche kyng, but pesably to retourne into their owne countreis. Sir, this is the desyre and request that we make unto you as at this tyme. Than the kyng answered and said soberly, Sirs, we shall take counsayle and advise what is good for us to do, and than ye shal be answered. Than the knyghtes sayd, Sir, that suffyceth to us.

CAP. CI

Howe these thre knyghtes obteyned a saveconduct of the kyng of Castyle for their people to passe: and howe dyvers of thenglysshmen dyed in Castyle: and howe the duke of Lancastre fell in a great syckenesse.

THUS they departed fro the kynge at that tyme, and went to their lodgynges, and there taryed all that day, and the next day tyll none; than they went to the kyng. Now I shall shewe you what answere the king had of his counsaile. This request gretly rejoysed the kyng, for he sawe well his enemyes wolde departe out of his realme; and he thought in hymselfe he wolde agre therto, yet he was counsayled to the contrary. But he sent for the ii. Frenche capitayns, sir Gaultier of Passacke, and sir William of Lignac; and whan they were come he right sagely shewed them the desyre and request of the constable of the Englysshe host, and herupon he demaunded of them to have their counsayle. First, he desyred sir Water Passacke to speke. He was lothe to speke before other of the kynges counsayle there, but he was fayne so to do, the kyng so sore desyred hym. And so by the kynges commaundement he spake and sayde, Sir, ye are come to the same ende that we have alwayes said, and that was, that your enemys shulde wast themselfe: they are nowe disconfyted without any stroke strikyng; sir, if the said folkes desyre to have comforte and refresshyng in your countre, of your gentylnesse ye maye well graunt it them, so that whansoever they recover their helthe, they retourne nat agayne to the duke, nor to the kynge of Portugale, but than to departe the streight way into their owne countreys, and that in the terme of sixe yere they arme them nat agaynst you, nor agaynst the realme of Castyle; we thynke ye shall gette right well a safeconducte for them of the kynge of Fraunce, and of the kynge of Naverre, to passe peasably through the realmes. Of this answere the kynge was ryght joyfull, for they counsayled hym accordynge to his pleasure; for he had nat cared

CAP. CI

Howe these thre knyghtes obteyned a saveconduct of the kyng of Castyle.

what bargeyn he had made, so that he myght have ben quyte of the Englysshmen. Than he sayd to sir Water Passacke, Sir, ye have well and truely counsayled me, I thanke you, and I shall do accordyng to your advise. Than the thre Englysshe knyghtes were sent for.

Whan they were come they entred into the counsayle chambre. Than the bysshop of Burgos, chaunceller of Spayne, who was well langaged, sayd: Sirs, ye knyghtes of England perteyning to the duke of Lancastre, and sent hyder fro his constable, understande that the kyng here of his pytie and gentylnesse, wyll shewe to his enemyes all the grace he maye. And sirs, ye shall retourne to your constable, and shewe hym fro the kyng of Castyle that he shall make it to be knowen through al his hoost by the sowne of a trumpet, that his realme shal be open and redy to receyve all the Englysshmen hole or sicke, so that at thentre of every cyte or towne they laye downe their armure and weapons; and there shall they fynde men redy to bring them to their lodginges. And there all their names to be written and delyvered to the capitayne of the towne, to thentent they shulde nat retourne agayne into Galyce, nor into Portugale, for no maner of busynesse: but to departe into their owne countreis assone as they may. And assone as the kyng of Castyle my soverayne lorde hath optayned your safeconducte to passe through the realmes of Naver, and Fraunce, to go to Calis, or to any other porte or haven at their pleasure, outher into Bretaygne, Xaynton, Rochell, Normandy, or Picardy: also the kynges pleasure is, that all suche knightes or squiers of any nacyon what soever it be, that entred into this vyage, in any wyse arme nat themselfe for the space of sixe yere agaynst the realme of Castyle, and that they swere thus to do whan they take the safeconducte. And of this composycion ye shall have letters open to beare to your constable, and to suche companyons as sent you hyder. These knyghtes thanked the kynge and his counsayle of their answere, and sayd, Sir, there be certayne artycles in your answere, we can nat tell if they will be accepted or nat: if they be nat we shall sende agayne to you our heraulte: if he come nat we shall accept your sayeng. Well sirs, the kyng is content, quod they of his

CAP. CI

Howe these thre knyghtes obteyned a saveconduct of the kyng of Castyle.

counsayle. Than the kyng went into his chambre, and sir Water Passacke, and syr Wyllyam Lignacke, kepte styll company with the Englysshe knyghtes, and brought them into a fayre chambre, where their dyner was redy apparelled for them, and there dyned with them; and after dyner had wyne and spyces in the kynges chambre and toke their leave. Their letters were redy, and they toke their horses and so departed and rode to Vylecloppes, and the next day they came to the towne of Arpent and dyned, and at night lay at Noy, in Galyce, and the next daye they came to Auranche, and there founde the constable. So it fortuned that in this mean season one of the duke of Lancasters great barons died, a right valyant man, called the lorde Fitzwater; he was greatly bemooned, but agaynst dethe none maye stryve; his enterment was honorably done, the kyng of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre present. And whan these thre knyghtes were come to the dukes lodgyng, they shewed all that they had done, and shewed their letters of confyrmacion of the same: than some sayde it was a herde covenaunt; and some sayd Nay, holdyng opinyon that it was right courtesse, perfitely consyderyng the danger that they were in. These tidynges anone sprede abrode in the host how the duke had gyven lycence every man to departe who so lyst. Than suche as were sycke and feble desyring a fresshe ayre, departed as soone as they might, and toke their leave of the duke and of the constable, and than they were truely payd their wages as curtesly as might be. And some were content with fayre wordes; and so they departed by companyes. Some went to Arpent, some to Ruelles, some to Vilcloppes, some to Noy, some to Medena de Campo, and other places: and in every place they were welcome and brought to their lodgynges, and their names presented to the capitayne. The greattest parte of the gentylmen went to Arpent, bycause in that towne there were many straungers, Bretons, Frenchmen, Normayns, and Poictevyns, over whome sir Olyver de Clesquyn was capitayne. The Englysshemen trusted better in them than they dyde in the Spaynyerdes, and good cause why.

Thus as I have shewed you the duke of Lancastres army brake up at that tyme in Castyle, and every man sought the

best for hymselfe. Ye maye well beleve that this dyde greatly trouble the duke of Lancastre, and great cause why. For he sawe his enterprise sore putte a backe and brought into a herde case; howebeit, lyke a valyaunt sage prince as he was, he comforted hymselfe as well as he myght, for he sawe well it coulde none otherwyse be. And whan the kyng of Portugale sawe howe the matter went, and that their army was broken of, he gave lycence to all maner of men, except a thre hundred speares that were come to serve hym: he retaygned them styll, and so departed fro Auranche with the duke of Lancastre, and his wyfe, and rode to saynt Jaques, called Compostella. And whan the kyng and the duke were there, the kynge taryed there four dayes, and than departed with all his men, and retourned to his countrey to his wyfe, who laye at Porte, a good cytie in Portugale.

CAP. CI

Howe these thre knyghtes obteyned a saveconduct of the kyng of Castyle.

Nowe shall I shewe you what befell of dyvers knyghtes and squyers, suche as were departed fro the duke and gone into Castile. Dyvers that were enfecte with sickenesse, for all their chaungynge of newe ayre, and newe medycins, yet they coulde nat scape the peryll of dethe: dyvers dyed in Arpent. In the meane season that the king of Castyle sent to the kynge of Naverre, and to the Frenche kyng, for their saveconductes to passe pesably, whiche was nat soone optaygned, dyvers lordes, knyghtes, and squyers of Englande dyed in their beddes, whiche was gret domage, and a great losse to their countrey. In Arpent there dyed thre great barones of Englande, and ryche men; the first was sir Richarde Burle, who had ben marshall of the dukes hoost: another the lorde Ponynges: and the thyrde the lorde Percy, cosyn germayne to the erle of Northumberlande. And in the towne of Noy dyed sir Mauberyn of Lyniers, a Poytevyn, a ryght noble and an expert knyght; and in the towne of Ruelles there dyed a great baron, called the lorde Talbot. So that there died here and there a xii. gret lordes, and a fourscore knightes, and two hundred squyers. This was a great dysconfetture, without any stroke stryken; and there dyed of other meane men mo than fyve hundred. And I herde it reported of a knyght of Englande, as he retourned through Fraunce, his name was sir Thomas Quynbery, that

CAP. CI

Howe these three knyghtes obteyned a saveconduct of the kyng of Castyle.

of fyftene hundred men of armes, and foure thousande archers, that the duke of Lancastre hadde brought out of the realme of Englande, there never retourned agayn the halfe parte.

The duke of Lancastre fyll in a perylous sickenesse in the towne of saynt Jaques; and oftentymes the brute ranne in Castyle and in Fraunce, howe he was deed, and surely he was in a great adventure of his lyfe. Thyrrey of Soumayne, a squyer of honour, and squyer for the dukes body, was taken with sickenesse and dyed at Besances; he was naturally borne of the countie of Heynaulte. And his brother Wyllyam of Soumayn was with hym tyll he dyed, who in likewyse was in great adventure of his lyfe. Of a trouthe there was none so hardy, so ryche, nor so jolye, but that they were in feare of themselfe, and every day loked for none other thyng but deth. And with this sickenesse there were none infected but al onely the duke of Lancasters company: among the Frenchmen there were none sicke. Wherby dyvers murmuracyons were among the Spanyerdes, sayeng, The kyng of Castyle hath done great grace to these Englysshmen to suffre them to lye and rest them in his countre, and in his good townes, but we feare it wyll cost us greatly: for they have, or are lyke to bring into this countrey great mortalyte. Than other wolde saye, Ah, they are Christenmen as we be: there ought compassion and pyte to be taken one of another; this was the communyng among them. And true it was the same season a knyght of Fraunce dyed in Castile, for whom gret sorowe was made, for he was gracyous, courtesse, and hardy in armes, and was brother to sir Johan, sir Raynolde, and sir Launcelotte of Roy,[1] and he was called sir John of Roy, but howe he dyed I shall tell you. He was in a towne of Castyle, called Seghovie,[2] and laye there in garyson: he had an impostume in his body; and he was yonge and lusty, and tooke no hede therof, but on a day lept on a great horse and rode out into the feldes, and spurred his horse, so that by gambaldyng of the horse the impostume brake in his body; and whan he was retourned to his lodgynge he was layde on his bedde sicke; and that semed well, for the fourthe daye after he dyed, wherof his frendes were right soroufull.

[1] *Voy* P.

[2] *Segovia, Segbome* P.

CAP. CII

Howe sir Johan Holande, the duke of Lancastres constable, toke his leve of the duke, and he and his wyfe retourned by the king of Castyle, who made hym good chere: and howe sir Johan Dambreticourt wente to Parys to acomplysshe a dede of armes bytwene hym and Bouciqualt.

YE maye well knowe that every man eschewed this sickenesse that was amonge the Englysshmen, and fledde therfro as moche as they myght. All this season sir Johan Holande, the dukes constable, was still with the duke, and certayne knightes and squyers, seynge the season of warre paste, thynkynge to eschewe the peryll of the sickenesse, sayd to the constable: Sir, let us retourne, and we wyll go to Bayone, or to Burdeux, to take fresshe ayre, and to eschewe this sickenes, for whan so ever the duke of Lancastre wyll have us agayne, lette hym write for us, and we shall soone be with hym, whiche were better than to kepe us here in daunger and parell. They called so often on hym that on a day he shewed the duke their murmuracyons. Than the duke sayde: Syr Johan, I wyll ye retourne and take my men with you, and recomende me to my lorde the kyng, and to all my bretherne in Englande. With right a good wyll sir, quod the constable; but syr, though sycke men have had great curtesy by the constable of Castyle, as in suffering them to entre to abyde there at their ease tyll they recover their helthes, yet they maye nat retourne agayne to you into Castyle, nor into Portugale: and if outher they or we take our waye to Calays throughe Fraunce, than we must be bounde to beare none armure in syxe yere after agaynst the realme of Fraunce, without the kynge our soverayne lorde be present in propre persone. Than the duke sayd, Syr Johan, ye knowe well that the Frenchemen will take on you and on our men, in case they se them in daunger, all the vauntage they can do; therfore I shall shewe you whiche way ye shall passe curtesly through

CAP. CII

Howe sir Johan Holande toke his leve of the duke.

the realme of Castyle: and whan ye come into the entre of Navarre sende to the kynge; he is my cosyn, and in tyme past we hadde great alyaunce toguyder, whiche are nat as yet broken. For sith the warre began bytwene the kyng of Castyle and me, we have amiably written eche to other, as cosyns and frendes, nor no warre hath ben made by see bitwene us; but the Frenchmen have, wherfore I thynke he wyll lightly suffre you to passe through his realme. And whan ye be at saynt Johan Pie de Porte, than take the waye to Bisquay, and so to Bayon; than ye be in our herytage. And fro thens ye may go to the cytie of Burdeux without daunger of the Frenchemen, and there refresshe you at your ease. And whan ye have wynde and weder at wyll, than ye maye take the see and lande in Cornwall, or at Hampton, or there as the wynde wyll serve you. Than sir Johan said, Your counsayle shal be fulfylled without any faute.

It was nat long after but that the constable and his company departed, and there taryed with the duke and duches no mo but his owne housholde servauntes. And sir Johan Holande had his wyfe with hym, and so came to the cytie of Camores,[1] and there he founde the kynge of Castyle, sir Gaultier of Passacke, and sir Wyllyam of Lignacke, who made hym good chere, as lordes and knyghtes do whan they mete eche with other. And truely the kyng of Castyle was gladde to se the departyng of the Englysshmen; for than it semed to hym that his warre was at an end, and thought that there wolde never issue agayne out of Englande so many good men of warre in the duke of Lancasters tytell, to make warre in Castyle; also he knewe well howe there was great trouble and dyscorde within the realme of Englande. Whan the tidynges sprede abrode in Castile, in the good cyties and townes, where as the Englysshemen lay sicke, and were there to seke for their helthe, howe that sir Johan Hollande was come thyder to retourne agayne into Englande, they were ryght gladde therof, and so drewe to hym, to the entent to retourne with hym, as the lorde of Chameulx,[2] sir Thomas Percy, the lorde Lelynton,[3] the lorde of Braseton, and dyvers other, to the nombre of a thousande horses. Suche as were sicke thought themselfe halfe hole, whan they

[1] *Zamora.*

[2] *Camoys.*

[3] *Luton.*

knewe they shulde retourne, their voyage paste was so payn- CAP. CII
full to them.

Howe sir Johan Holande toke his leve of the duke.

Whan sir Johan Hollande toke leave of the kyng of Castyle, the kyng gave to hym and to his company great giftes, with mules and mulettes of Spaygne, and payde for all their costes. And than they rode to saynt Phagons[1] and there refresshed them thre dayes, and in every place they were welcome and well receyved, for there were knyghtes of the kynges that dyde conducte theym, and payde alwayes for their costes. So longe they rode that they passed Spaygne, and came to Naveret, where as the batayle had ben before, and so to Pavyers, and to Groyne,[2] and there rested; for as than they were nat in certayne if the kyng of Naverre wolde suffre them to passe throughe his realme or nat. Than they sent to hym ii. knightes, sir Peter Bysset, and sir Wylliam Norwiche. They founde the kynge at Tudela, in Naver, and there spake with hym, and spedde so well that they had graunt to passe through Naver, payeng for that they shulde take by the way: and as soone as these knyghtes were retourned, they departed fro Groyne, and so came to Pampylona, and passed the mountains of Rounceaux,[3] and lefte the way into Bierne, and entred into Bisquay, so to go to Bayon; at last thyder they came, and there sir Johan Holande taryed a long space with his wyfe, and other of the Englysshmen rode to Burdeaux. Thus this armye brake up.

[1] *Sahagun.*

[2] *Logroño.*

[3] *Roncesvalles.*

So it was in the season whyle these warres endured in Castile, and that the Englisshmen kepte the feldes, the lorde Bouciqualt, the elder of the ii. bretherne, sent by an herault to sir Johan Dambreticourt, desyring to do with hym dedes of armes: as thre courses with a spere, thre with an axe, and thre with a dagger, all on horsbacke. The knight was agreed therto. And after that, sir Johan Dambreticourt sent dyvers tymes to accomplysshe their feate, but Bouciqualt came nat forwarde; I can nat tell what was the cause, nor I wyll nat say but that he was a right good knight, and mete to have done a greatter feate in armes than that was. And whan sir Johan Dambreticourt was come to Bayone, in the company of sir Johan Holande, he was in dyvers ymaginacions on his chalenge, and thought that honorably he might nat departe out of those partes,

CAP. CII

Howe sir Johan Holande toke his leve of the duke.

seyng he was chalenged to do dedes of armes, and had graunted therto, without he fulfylled the same: for if he returned into England without doyng of any thyng, he thought that the Frenchmen wolde saye that he departed for feare. Than he toke counsayle of sir John Holande, and of other, what were best for him to do. He was counsayled to take the waye through Fraunce, with the safeconducte that the duke of Burbon had gotte hym, and so to go to Parys, and there to demaunde for sir Bouciqualt, or els by the way: therby at lest his honour shulde be excused. This counsayle the knight beleved, and folowed the same, and so departed fro Bayon, and entred into Biern, and so came to Artoys, and there founde therle of Foiz, who made hym good chere; and at his departyng the erle gave hym ii. C. florens, and a good horse. Than he rode forthe through Byern, and entred into the countre of Bigore, and so into Tholousin, and into Carcassynois, and in his company was Wylliam of Soumayne, and other squiers of Heynault, retournyng into their countreis. So longe he rode that he came to Parys, and at that tyme the kyng was in Normandy; and sir Boucikalt, as it was shewed hym, was in Aragon. Than sir John Dambreticourt, to acquyte his enterprice, presented hymselfe before certayne of the great barons of Fraunce, beyng at Parys, and shewed them howe he was come thyder to acquite hymself of his chalenge. And whan he hadde taryed there viii. dayes, he departed and came to Calais, and they of Heynault into their owne countreis. Thus lytell and litell the army that went into Spayne, and into Portugale, brake up.

CAP. CIII

Howe the duke of Burbone departed fro Avygnon to go into Castyle with all his host, and came to Burgus in Spayne, and there founde the kyng of Castyle: and howe the duke of Lancastre herde those tidynges; and howe the duke of Burbone departed fro the kyng, and went streyght agayne into Fraunce.

IT ought to be supposed that the duke Loys of Burbon, who was at the begynnyng of this enterprise and armye into Castyle, ordaynedde to be as chefe, was well enformed howe the maters went. If he had knowen that it shuld have ben so, he wolde have made the more haste, for it was long or he entred into Spaygne, for he toke a longe waye by Avignon, to se hym that wrote hymself pope Clement, and there taryed a long space. And whan he departed he rode to Mountpelyer, and there taryed a fyve dayes, and also at Besyers and Carcassone, Narbone and Parpinyon,[1] and than entred into the realme of Aragon, to se the yonge kynge there, and his cosyn the quene Yolant of Bare. And so rode to Barselona, and there founde the kyng and the quene his cosyn, and a great nombre of the lordes of the countrey that were come thyder to fest hym; and so they dyde. And whan he had ben there a sixe dayes he went to Valencensia the great, and there he herde sure tidynges howe the Englysshe armye was withdrawen and passed homewarde, and howe that sir Johan Hollande was in Naver goyng homwarde, with a great parte of his company, and howe there had ben a great dethe among them. And also he herde howe his cosyn the duke of Lancastre laye sicke in Compostella, in Galyce; and in dyvers places it was sayde howe he was deed. Howebeit, though there were as thanne but lytell to do in Spaygne, yet he thought to passe further, and sende worde of his comyng to the kyng of Castile, who was ryght gladde therof, and to mete with hym came to Burgus in Spayne, and there provyded greatly

[1] *Perpignan.*

CAP. CIII

Howe the duke of Burbone departed fro Avygnon to go into Castyle.

for his receyvynge, and suche as were there with hym of Fraunce were ryght gladde to se the duke of Burbone. Thus the duke passed Valencensia, and Saragosa, and all the portes, and entred into Spayne, and came to Burgus: and there he was well receyved, and there was sir Olyver of Clesquyn, constable of Castyle, and sir Wylliam of Lignacke, sir Gaultier of Passacke, sir Johan of Barres, sir Johan and sir Raynolde of Roy, and dyvers other knyghtes of Fraunce, who lefte their garysons to come and se the duke of Burbone: for there was as than no doute of the Englysshmen, nor of the Portugalois, for they were all withdrawen. And the Englysshmen forsoke their garysons that they had won in Galyce, for they knewe well they coude nat resyst the army of Fraunce, seyng their compaignyons were departed dyvers wayes, as ye have herde before.

Tidinges came into Galyce howe the duke of Burbon was come into Spaigne, and had brought with hym great nombre of knyghtes of Fraunce; brute and noyse was more thanne it was in dede by the one halfe. The commons were in great dout that the duke of Burbon wolde have entred there with great force and puissaunce, but that the duke of Lancastre was there amonge them, who greatly conforted them. Tidynges came to the duke of Lancastre, howe that his cosyn the duke of Burbone was come into Spayne, and was at Burgus with the kynge; and incontynent he sent worde therof to the kynge of Portugale, desyring hym to gather agayne toguyder his people, for he knewe nat what the Frenchemen wolde do, seyng the Englysshemen were avoyded the countrey. The kyng of Portugale, by reason of suche alyaunce as was bytwene them he consented, and departed fro Lixbone, and came to Conymbres, and there made his sommons throughout his realme, every man to be redy. And than he came to the cytie of Porte, to drawe nere to the countrey of Galyce, and to his father in lawe the duke of Lancastre, who was nat as than in good poynte to ryde, for the sickenesse that he had; howebeit, he began to amende.

Nowe let us speke of the duke of Burbon, who was with the kyng of Castyle, who made hym as good chere as he coude, and all other prelates and lordes of the realme: and

CAP. CIII

Howe the duke of Burbone departed fro Avygnon to go into Castyle.

many counsayles there was bytwene them, to determyne what they shulde do, outher to ryde into Galyce, or els to returne. The kyng of Castyle and they of his counsayle sawe clerely howe the mater shulde beste be for their profyte, and sayd eche to other whan they were togyder: By reason of these Frenchmen our landes are wasted and dystroyed: though they be come to kepe it, we have taken by them great domage, wherfore we thinke it shulde be good to thanke the duke of Borbon for the payne and travayle that he hathe endured in cominge hyder: and lette us desyre hym lovyngly to withdrawe his men of warre, seynge he nedeth nat to tary here for any warre that is aparente; for as for Galice, the recovery therof shall be but a small mater for us. Thus they of the kynges counsayle comuned eche with other. And further they said: If we ones receyve these people they must be payed of their wages; if nat they will pyll and robbe all the realme, for the comon people allredy begynneth to complayne, and therfore we thynke it were best to gyve them an honest congy to departe. This counsayle was upholden, and the kynge well consented thereto, for he sawe well it was the most profyte for his people and realme, for they coulde take no hurte but it shulde be to his domage and prejudice. So that one daye in the kynges presence, the archebysshop of Burgus, to the duke of Burbon, and before many of the knightes of Fraunce, shewed and declared to theym their ententes, as ye have herde before. And the duke of Burbon, and dyvers other knyghtes of Fraunce, who had rather retourne than to abyde there, for the countrey was nat mete for their complexions, were well contente to retourne, and prepared themselfe therupon. And bycause the duke of Burbone was laste that came, he retourned first, and toke his leave of the kynge, and said howe he wolde returne by the realme of Naverre: there were great gyftes gyven him or he departed, and might have had more if he wolde have taken it, but he refused every thynge except mules and mulettes, and dogges of Spayne. Than it was publisshed that all Frenchmen might at their pleasure departe out of Spayne, and retourne into Fraunce. But there taryed styll sir Olyver of Clesquyn, constable of Spayne, and the marshals, and a thre hundred

CAP. CIII
Howe the duke of Burbone departed fro Avygnon to go into Castyle.

speares of Bretons, Poictevyns, and Xayngtons. Thus the duke of Burbone returned. Whan he had taken his congy of the kynge and the quene, and of other lordes of Castyle, he was conveyed to Groyne, and so into Navarre. And where so ever he came he was welcome and well receyved, for the duke of Burbone was gracyous, curteyse, honorable, and well renomed. And the kynge of Naver receyved him lovyngly, and never shewed any maner of yvell wyll towardes the Frenche kynge, in that he had taken away fro him his enherytaunce of the countye of Evreux, in Normandy; for he sawe well the Frenche kyng that was as than nephewe to the duke of Burbon, was in no defaute therof, for whan it was done he was but yonge. But swetely he shewed the duke all his busynesse, desyringe hym to be a good meane bytwene hym and his cosyn the Frenche kynge; the duke promysed hym so to be. Than the duke departed, and passed thorough the realme of Naver peasably, and all other suche as wolde passe. And thus they passed the mountayns of Rouseaulx, and all alonge the countrey of Bastelles,[1] and so entred into Bierne, and into Salvaterra.

[1] *Basques.*

CAP. CIV

Howe therle of Foize receyved honourably the duke of Burbon, and of the great giftes that he gave him; and how sir Willyam of Lygnac, and sir Gaultier of Passackes company departed out of Spayne; and of the incydent that fortuned in the towne of saynt Phagon.

WHAN the erle of Foyz, beynge at Ortays, understode that the duke of Burbon was at Salvaterra, he was glad therof, and sente for his knightes to be aboute him. And on a day in great araye he rode with a fyve hundred knyghtes and squyers two leages out of Ortays, and mette with the duke of Burbon, who in lykewyse rode with a great rout of knyghtes and squiers, and

there they met amyably, as great prynces ought to do. And whan they had comuned togyther a certayne space, as it was shewed me, whan I was at Ortays, the erle of Foize drewe hym a parte in the felde with all his company, and the duke abode styll in another parte. Than the erle sente to the duke thre knyghtes, named syr Espayne de Lyon, sir Peter Campestan, and sir Menaunt of Nowalles. And whan they came before the duke, they sayd, Sir, here is a present that my lorde the erle of Foiz hath sent to you at your returnynge out of Spayne, for he knoweth well ye have been at great dyspence: therfore syr, he dothe gyve you at your entring into his countrey of Bierne, eyght thousande frankes, and this mulette, and two coursers, and two palfreys. Syrs, quod the duke, I thanke the erle of Foyze; but as for the floreyns, I wyll take none; as for the other presente, I wyll receyve them with a good wyll. Thus the florens were refused, and the mules and horses receyved. Than the erle of Foyz came to the duke, and brought hym into the towne of Ortays, and lodged him in his owne place, and all other were lodged in the towne; the duke was thre dayes in Ortays, and had great chere with dyners and suppers. And there the erle of Foize shewed the duke a great parte of his estate. On the fourthe daye the duke departed, and the erle gave to the knightes and squiers great gyftes: as it was shewed me, the comynge thyder of the duke of Burbon coste the erle of Foize ten thousande frankes. Thus the duke departed and went into Fraunce, and rode by Mountpelyer, and by the cytie of Puy, and by the countye of Forestes, wherof he was lorde by the lady his wyfe.

CAP. CIV

Howe therle of Foize receyved honourably the duke of Burbon.

For all the departyng of the duke of Burbon, as ye have herde, out of Spayne, sir Willyam Lignac, and sir Gaultier of Passac departed nat so soone, nor the companyes to the nombre of a thre thousande speares, and syxe thousande of other men of warre: and lytell and lytell ever they departed. They were many out of wages and wery of the warres, and so retourned yvell horsed and yvell aparelled, all to torne and ragged. The metynge with suche people was nothynge profytable, for they unhorsed whome soever they met, and made warre to all marchauntes, and to men of the churche, and to poore people of the countre, where any thinge was

CAP. CIV
Howe therle of Foize receyved honourably the duke of Burbon.

to gette. These rutters sayde howe the warre had undone them, and howe the kynge of Castyle hadde yvell payed theym their wages, wherfore they sayde they wolde pay themselfe. And surely suche cyties, castels, and good townes, as were nat stronge in Castyle, douted them greatly; and agaynst them townes and cyties closed their gates for feare of parels, for all was havocke with them, without it were well defended. Suche knightes and squyers as came by the erle of Foyze to se hym were well receyved, and had gyftes and rewardes gyven them ryght largely. As it was shewed, the comyng and retournynge of men of warre that passed by therle of Foize for the sayd journey, coste hym the some of xl. thousande frankes.

This season there fell an incydent in the towne of saynt Phagon,[1] in Spaygne, after the departynge of the duke of Burbone, the whiche coste fyve hundred mennes lyves. So it was, that whan sir Gaultier of Passac, and sir Willyam of Lignac, entred firste into Spayne, their companyes spredde abrode into dyverse places in the countrey, and aboute the towne of saynte Phagon, whiche was a good plentuous countrey. There were many of the Bretons, Poictevyns, and Angevyns, of Xainton, and men of the Lowe Countreys. And whan they entred fyrste into saynt Phagon, they entred by syxe, ten, fyftene, and twenty, so that at laste there were mo than fyve hundred of one and other, maysters, and servauntes; and ever as they came they lodged themselfe, and pilled and robbed their hostes, and brake up cofers and cupbordes, and wolde take what they founde. And whan the citezyns sawe their demeanoure, to the entent that there shulde no mo entre, whan these straungers were at their reste they cryed Alarum in the towne. And the Spanyardes were redy for the same all the day before. And so they entred into the lodginges where the straungers were, and as they were founde they were slayne without pytie or mercye, and happy were they that were saved: the same nyght there were slayne mo thanne fyve hundred. The nexte mornyng these tydinges came to the capytayns that were comynge to the same towne warde; than they drewe them togyder to take counsayle, and the capitayns determyned that it was no tyme than to be revenged, for if they

[1] *Sahagun.*

dyde they shulde fynde all other townes and cyties against them, wherof their enemyes wolde be right joyous: but they sayde that whan their voyage shulde have an ende, that in their retourning they wolde thanke them accordynge to their desertes. So they passed forwarde and spake nothynge therof, but they thought the more.

CAP. CIV
Howe therle of Foize receyved honourably the duke of Burbon.

Nowe than so it happed that whan every man returned, except suche as were styll abydinge with the constable, sir Olyver of Clesquyn.[1] And specially those of the Lowe Countreys, whan they came togyder, they sayd eche to other: Nowe lette us paye for our welcome that we had at saynt Phagon; lette us quyte them at our departyng. To this they were all agreed, and so gathered togyder to the somme of a thousande fightynge men, and they aproched saynt Phagon, and entred into the towne, without any mystruste that they of the cytie had to them, for they trusted all thynges had ben forgoten. The straungers cryed Alarum in a hundred places, and cryed, Slee the villayns of the towne, and take all that they have, for they have well deserved it. Thanne these Bretons and other entred into the howses where they thought to wyn moste, and brake up cofers, and slewe the men downe in every place. They slewe the same day mo than foure hundred, and the towne robbed and spoyled, and more than halfe brente, whiche was great domage. Thus these rutters were revenged for the dethe of their companyons, and than they departed fro saynte Phagon.

[1] *Clysson* P.

CAP. CV

Howe the kyng of Castell and his counsayle were yvell contente with sir Willyam of Lignac, and sir Gaultier of Passackes company; and howe the duke of Lancastre departed fro saynt Jaques to Bayon.

TIDYNGES came to the king of Castyle howe these companyons had robbed and pylled the good towne of saynt Phagon, and slayne the cytezyns to the nombre of a four hundred, and nigh brent the towne. And it was sayd that if the Englysshemen had wonne it with assaute, they wolde nat have daulte so cruelly as they dyd. The same tyme the two knyghtes were present with the kynge, and they were greatly reproved by the kyng and his counsayle. They excused them and sayd, as God might be their helpes, they knewe nothynge therof; but they sayd, they had herde howe they were nat contente with them of that towne, bycause whan they entred firste into the realme, and came to saynte Phagon, there were certayne of their company slayne, which grudge by lyklyhode they have borne ever sythe in their hertes. It behoved the kyng of Castyle to let this mater passe, for it wolde have coste hym over moche to have hadde it amended. But he bare nat so good wyll to the capytayns after, as he dyd before, and that was well sene. For whan they departed and toke leave of the kyng to retourne into Fraunce, if he had ben pleased with them, it ought to be supposed they shulde have been better payed of their wages than they were. For the duke of Burbone that came laste, and was firste that departed, he and his company had all the chere, and well rewarded. Thus these people issued out of Castyle by dyverse wayes, some by Bisquay, and some by Aragon. Suche as were noble and honeste knyghtes and squyers, and lyved well and kepte good rule, they departed pore and yvell horsed: and suche as were hardy and adventured to robbe and pylle, they were well horsed, and well furnisshed with gold and

sylver, and their males full of baggage. Thus it falleth in suche adventures: some wyn and some lese. The kyng of Castyle was joyfull whan he sawe he was clene delyvered of suche people.

CAP. CV

Howe the kyng of Castell and his counsayle were yvell contente with sir Willyam of Lignac, and sir Gaultier of Passackes company.

Nowe let us somwhat speke of the duke of Lancastre, who laye sicke in his bed in the towne of saynt James, and the duches his wyfe with hym, and his doughter Katheryn. It is to be thought that the duke day and nyght was nat without anoyaunce, for he sawe his busynes in a harde parte, and many of his good knyghtes deed, suche as he with moche payne had brought with him out of Englande. Nor there was none that wolde treate for any composicyon to be had bytwene hym and the kynge of Castyle, nor that he wolde take the duches his wyfe for enheritour of Castell, nor gyve her any parte thereof. But he herde his men saye, that they were enfourmed by pylgrymes that came to saynt Jaques, oute of Flaunders, Brabant, Heynaulte, and other countreis, as they came throughe the realme of Spaygne, they herde the men of warre saye to them: Sirs, ye shall go to saynt Jaques, and there ye shall fynde the duke of Lancastre, who kepeth his chambre for feare of the lyght of the sonne; recommaunde us to hym, and demaunde of hym in oure behalfe if we have made hym fayre warre, or that he be content with us or nat. The Englisshmen were wont to say that we coude better daunce than make warre. But nowe is the tyme come that they rest and synge, and we kepe the feldes and our fronters in suche wyse that we lese nothing, nor take any domage. Suche tales were tolde to the duke, and he toke all in worthe, for he had none other remedy. And as soone as he myght ryde he departed, and the duches and his doughter, fro saynt Jaques: for the kyng of Portugale had sente for hym by the erle of Noware,[1] his constable, with a fyve hundred speares: and with hym sir John Ferant, the Pouvase[2] of Congue, Ageas Coylle, Venase Martyn de Malo, Galope Ferrant, sir Aulde Perre, Jean Radighes de Sar,[3] Gannes de Salves,[4] all barons. Thus they departed fro Compostella, and so rode tyll they came to the cytie of Porte. There the kynge and the quene of Portugale made them good chere: and anone after, the kyng and the quene departed, and wente to Conymbres, a

[1] *Nuno Alvares.*

[2] *Ponase* P.

[3] *Nedighes de Fay* P.

[4] *Falnes* P.

CAP. CV
Howe the kyng of Castell and his counsayle were yvell contente with sir Willyam of Lignac, and sir Gaultier of Passackes company.

dayes journey fro thens, and the duke taryed there a ii. monethes. In the meane season he ordayned for all his busynesse, and hadde galyes of the kyng, and they were apparelled, and had with hym the mayster patrone of Portugale, named Alphons Brecart. And whan they sawe good tyme to take the see, the duke and all his entred into their vesselles, and disancred and toke the see, and were within a day and a halfe of Bayon, whiche was more than threscore and xii. leages of. And there the duke toke landynge, and founde nat there sir Johan Hollande, nor the other Englysshemen, for they were departed and gone to Burdeux, and there toke shippyng, and so into Englande. The duke taryed at Bayon a longe space, and lyved there of the revenewes of Bayon, and Burdeux, and of the lande of Acquitayne, of all that was under the obeysaunce of kyng Richarde of Englande, for he had commissyon suffycient to receyve the profytes of all those landes, and was called duke and governour of them.

Nowe lette us leave to speke a season of the duke of Lancastre, and of the Englysshmen, and let us treat of other maters.

CAP. CVI

Howe the erle of Armynake toke great payne to treate with the companyons to departe out of the realme of Fraunce.

IN this season the erle of Armynake was in Auvergne, and was intreatyng of the companyons, suche as laye in fortresses in garyson, in Auvergne, Quercy, and Lymosyn. This erle hadde great desyre to cause these capitayns to departe out of the realme of Fraunce, and to leave suche holdes as they were in, for these landes were sore oppressed by them and greatly impoverisshed. And so he was in communycacion with them all, except Geffray Teate Noyre, who helde Wenchadore[1] agaynst the erle of Armynake. These sayd capitayns shulde receyve at one payment two hundred and l. thousande frankes, and to paye this somme the sayde landes were bounde, for they were glad to

[1] *Ventadour.*

CAP. CVI

Howe the erle of Armynake toke great payne to treate with the companyons.

be delyvered of these people: for otherwise they coude nat labour the erthe, nor occupy their feate of marchaundise, nor do any thyng for feare of these pyllers, without they were patesed by them. And the charge of their patesyng drewe well yerely to the somme that they shulde pay to have them delyvered. And thoughe these countreis had warre with the Englysshmen, yet there were amonge them but fewe of the nacyon of Englande. But there were Gascoyns, Bretons, Almayns, Foyzons, and men of dyvers countreis, who were gathered toguyder to do yvell dedes. And whan the composycions of the redempcion was made and agreed, they excepted Geffray Teate Noyre, and his forterers, for he wolde do nothynge for them. Than the erle of Armynake prayed the erle Dolphyn of Auvergne, who was a great capitayne, that he shulde treate with the sayd Geffray, and that he wolde do so moche to go into Fraunce to the kyng and his counsayle, the dukes of Berrey, and of Burgoyn, who as than had the governyng of the realme, to have theyr counsayle and assystence: for without their advyse and agrement, they durst reyse up no tayle in the countrey. The erle Dolphyn of Auvergne, at the request of the erle of Armynake, toke his journey to Paris; as than the kynge was nat there, he was at Roane. Thyder rode the erle, and there shewed all the mater to the kynge and his counsayle, but he was nat shortely dispatched, for they douted the treatie of these people, and said: Sir erle Dolphyn, we knowe well that the erle of Armynake and you wolde right gladlye the honour and profyte of the realme, for your partes lyeth therin, ye have fayre landes there. But we doute greatly that whan these capitayns Gascoyns, Bernoyes, and other, be payed suche sommes of money as the composicyon requyreth, wherby the countre shulde be enpoverisshed, that than within thre or four monethes after they shulde retourne againe and make worse warre than they dyd before, and entre agayne into these fortresses. Than the erle Dolphyn answered and sayd, Sirs, it is our ententes, the tayle cessed and gadered, that the money shall nat passe out of Cleremonde, or Ryon,[1] tyll we be certifyed and in suretie of these people. Well, quod the dukes, we are content that the money be levyed and put in sure kepyng in

[1] *L'Hôpital d'Orion.*

CAP. CVI
Howe the erle of Armynake toke great payne to treate with the companyons.

some place in the same countre, for at the leest it shall serve to make them warre, if they wyll nat come to some amyable treatie; and that the erle of Armynake, and you, the bysshoppe of Cleremonde, and the bisshoppe of Puy, take ye the charge of this mater, and do so as it may be for your honour, and profite to the countre. With right a good wyll sir, quod the erle, and so departed fro the kyng and his uncles fro Roane, and founde the erle of Armynake, his brother, at Cleremont, in Auvergne, with many lordes of the countre, taryenge there upon his commyng. And there he shewed worde for worde that he had with the Frenche kyng and his uncles, and the doutes that were made in the mater: and howe it was their ententes that the tayle shulde be gadered, and the money therof gadered toguyder and putte in suretie in some certayne place, tyll the very entente of these pillars might be knowen, who kepeth castels and garisons agaynst the realme. The same is our entencion, quod the erle of Armynake; and sithe it pleaseth the kynge and his counsayle, we shall go further in the mater: but for the more suretie it must behove us to have a good and a sure truse with them for all the countrey, tyll the tayle be cessed and gadered. Than there were ambassadours assigned by the erle of Armynake, to go and speke with Perot le Bernoys, and Amergot Marcell; these two were as soverayns of the fortresse that they helde on that syde the ryver of Durdone; and also to speke with the Borge of Compaigne,[1] with Bernarde of the Isles, with Olyver Barbe, with Abton[2] Seghewe,[3] the lorde of Laenplayre,[4] and dyvers other. All these capitayns acorded nat togyder, for that the one wolde, the other wolde nat. I shal shewe you the reason why.

[1] *Caupene.*
[2] *Abton with* P.
[3] *Apchon Séguin.*
[4] *Seigneur de Lane-de-Bourg.*

They were of dyvers opinyons, and of dyvers countreis. They of Armynake, suche as were under the obeysaunce of the erle of Armynake, were soone agreed; but all the other wolde nat be ruled by hym. For the chefe company of them, and suche as were most renomed to use grete robbery and pillery were of Bierne, and of the countie of Foiz. Howbeit, I saye nat but that the erle of Foiz wolde the honour of the realme of Fraunce. But whan he herde first howe the erle of Armynake dyde treate with them for suche fortresses as

CAP. CVI

Howe the erle of Armynake toke great payne to treate with the companyons.

they helde in Auvergne, in Quercy, and in Lymosyn, as he that desyred to knowe the hole substaunce of the mater, demaunded of them that enfourmed hym therof, what the erle of Armynake was mynded to do with the men that were in the garysons, whan they were departed out of their holdes, and whyder he wolde set them in any busynesse or nat. Than he was answered, and it was said to hym, Sir, the erle of Armynake wolde kepe them in wages, and occupy them into Lombardy: for as ye knowe well his suster is maryed there, and before she had Gascone your sone; for it is thought there shal be moche ado in Lombardy. Wherunto the erle of Foiz gave none answere, but fell into other talkyng; howbeit, he thought neverthelesse, as it apered after, for he handled the mater covertly: I shall shewe you howe.

The erle of Armynake, for any treatie that he coude do to them that were of the countre of Bierne, or of the teneurs of therle of Foiz, or suche as owed hym any favour, coude never cause any of them to agree to departe out of their garisons. Nor wolde nat go nother to the erle of Armynake, nor to Bernarde, his brother in lawe; for therle of Foiz, who was full of great prudence, consydred that these two lordes of Armynake, and there cosyns, and with the Labriciens, were puissaunt men, and sawe howe they gate them frendes on every parte, he thought they shulde nat be renforsed with them that ought to serve hym. And one thynge that was reasonable the erle of Foiz ymagined, sir Espaygne de Leon shewed it me whan I was at Ortays, and in lykewise so dyde the erle of Compane, capitayne of Carlot, in Auvergne, and also so dyde the Bourge of Englande. They sayd howe the erle of Foiz regarded howe he had had open warre with them of Armynake, thoughe it were peace bytwene them as than, whiche was but a truese, the whiche was dyvers tymes renewed bytwene theym. Therfore he thought that if the erle of Armynake had all those companyons under his governaunce, his warres shulde be the fayrer, so that the Armynakes, and the Labricience, with their alyes, myght do hym a great displeasure.

This was the cause that suche as owed favour to therle of Foiz, wolde nat agre to the erle of Armynake. Howebeit, they made them beleve that they wolde, but they dyd but

CAP. CVI

Howe the erle of Armynake toke great payne to treate with the companyons.

dissemble, for they brake all their apoyntments. Howebeit, they rode nat abrode so moche as they dyde before, wherby alwayes the erle of Armynake thought to have come to his purpose. They that agreed to hym were Perotte de Bernoys, who helde the stronge castell of Salucette, whiche is chefe and soveraygne of all Auvergne and Lymosyne, for their patesyng endured to Rochell; and also Guyllyam of saynt Foye, who helde the castell of Boutevyll, and also Margote Marcell, who helde Loysse,[1] before saynt Flour, in Auvergne, and the Bourge of Compaygne, and the Englysshe Bourge, who helde Carlotte. Margote Marcell sayde he was contente,[2] so that he myght have in lykewise Perotte Bernoys, and Geffray Teate Noyre, who helde Vandachore, who was soverayne above all other. But he dyde but mocke and dissemble the mater, for he disdayned to fall to any treatie to the erle of Armynakes, or of any other: for he thought his castell imprignable, and well provyded for sevyn or eyght yeres, for he had a passage or two that coude nat be taken fro hym, but that he myght issue whan he lyste, to refresshe hymselfe and his company. This Geffray wrote hymselfe in his save-conductes, Geffray Teate Noyre, duke of Vandachore, erle of Lymosyn, lorde and soveraygne of all the capitayns of Auvergne, Rouergue, and Lymosyn.

[1] *Alleuse.*

[2] *Assés tost après aura-il Aymerigot Marcel.*

Now let us leave to speke of these maters of farre countreis, tyll we have cause to returne therto agayne. And nowe I wyll speke of matters nerer home, as of myne owne nacyon, as it hath ben shewed here before, whan I treated of the ende of the warre of Flaunders, and of the charter of peace that the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse dyde gyve and graunt, and sealed to them of Gaunt, in the good towne and noble cytie of Tourney. Therfore nowe to enforce our mater and history, we wyll speke nowe of the warres of Guerles, and of Brabant. And I am quickened so to do, bycause that the Frenche kyng, and the duke of Burgoyne, to whom the mater greatly touched, by the insydentes that gendred therby, were fayne to set to their handes to the same warre, and to come to the bottom therof. And to contynue at length the true hystorie and mater, I saye thus as foloweth.

CAP. CVII

Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles, who had layde all his landes in guage, and wyst nat what to do, came for refuge to the archebysshoppe of Coleygne, his Uncle, who blamed hym. And howe ambassadours wente to Berthaulte of Malygnes.

ALONGE season it was that they of Guerles, and they of Brabant, had grete hatered toguyder, and so dyd the countreis to them adjoyninge, by reason of certayne bondes one agaynst another. And the moost hatered that the Brabanders had to the duke of Guerles, and to his heyres, was for the towne of Grave, whiche the dukes of Guerles had holden perforce a longe season agaynst the Brabansoys. For they sayd, bycause that the towne of Grave stode on that syde of the ryver of Meuse, towardes Brabant, that the duke of Guerles helde it wrongfully. And before that tyme dyvers communycacions had been, and poyntmentes taken; howbeit, alwayes the Guerloys stacke in their hertes. Also the Guerloys hated the Brabansoys, bycause of thre fayre castels that were on that syde the ryver, as Gaulech, Buthe, and Nulle:[1] whiche castelles the duke of Brabant helde also perforce, and by reasone, as in redynge I shall begynne at the duke of Guerles;[2] these hatereddes were often tymes renewed bytwene them of Guerles, and Brabant. And it was supposed by dyvers knightes and squyers that knewe of their dedes of armes, that if sir Edward of Guerles, who was slayne by a marveylous incydent at the batayle of Julyers, by the shote of an archer that was with the duke Vyncelant of Boem, duke of Lusenbourge, or of Brabante, if he had lyved, with that that his men had had the vyctorie, he hadde come to his entente in gettyng agayne the thre castelles: for he was so valiant a man and so hardy, that he wolde have conquered them agayne.

[1] *Gangelt, Vucht, Millen.*

[2] *que le duc de Brabant tient aussi de force et par raison, ainsi que tout en lisant je le vous exposeray, sur le duc de Guerles.*

Nowe I wyll declare, as I have promysed, how and in what maner these foresayd castelles came into the signorie of

CAP. CVII

Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles came for refuge to the archebysshoppe of Coleygne.

the Brabansoys, and first I wyll begyn with the dukes of Guerles.

In the tyme whan I wrote and ordayned this hystorie, there was an erle of Guerles, called Raynolde. And bycause that Guerles is no riche countre, nor so great as the duchy of Brabant, this erle came to his lande a yonge man, and had a fre wyll to dispende largely, and thought full lytell of the ende that myght come after. He cared for nothynge but for to accomplysshe his pleasure, and haunted justes and tourneys to his gret cost, to gette hym renome. And every yere he spended four tymes as moche as the value of the revenewes of his landes. He borowed of the Lombardes in dyvers places. He was so lyberall and so outragious, he ran so in dette, that he coulde nat ayde hymselfe with any thynge that he had, so that his parentes and frendes greatly blamed hym, and speciallye an uncle of his by his mothers syde. He came of the house of Orcle,[1] and was archebysshop of Coleygne, who sayde to hym in maner of gyveng hym counsayle: My fayre nephewe Raynolde, ye have so demeaned youreselfe, that nowe ye are become a poore manne, and your landes lyeth in pledge in dyvers places. And throughe all the worlde there is but lytell accompte made of poore lordes. Thynke you that suche as have hadde these great giftes of you and profite will rendre it agayne. As God ayde me, no; but whan they se you in this poore case, and have no more to gyve them, they wyll flye fro youre company, and mocke you and your foule larges: ye shall fynde them no frendes. Thynke nat though I be bysshoppe of Coleyne, that I ought to breke or mynisshe myne estate to helpe you, nor to gyve you of the patrimony of my churche; surely I wyll nat do it, nor my conscyence shall never agre therto, nor also the Pope nor the Cardynals wyll nat suffre it. Therle of Heynault hath nat behaved hymself, as ye have done, who hath gyven Margarett, his eldest doughter, in maryage to the kynge of Almayne, Loys of Bavyers, and yet he hath thre other; he wyll marry them all highly. Yf ye hadde well borne yourselfe, and nat have layde your herytage to pledge, nor put out of your handes none of your castels nor townes, ye might ryght[2] well have fortuned to have had one of his doughters in maryage: but

[1] *Arckel.*

[2] *ryzt* P.

CAP. CVII

Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles came for refuge to the archebysshoppe of Coleygne.

in the case ye be in now, ye shall never come therto; ye have, as nowe, nother townes nor castels that ye may endowe any woman withall, nat so moche as a poore lordshyppe. This erle of Guerles was sore abasshed with the wordes of the bysshop, his uncle, for he knew well he shewed hym but trouthe; and than for love and kyndred he desyredde his counsayle. Counsayle, fayre nephue, quod the bysshop, it is to late; ye wyll close faste the stable whan the horse is loste; howebeit, I se in all your busynesse but one remedy. What remedy, quod the erle. I shall shewe you, quod the bysshoppe.

Berthaulte of Malygnes, who is as nowe renomed the rychest man of sylver and golde that is knowen in any place, by reason of the course of marchaundise that he useth, bothe by lande and by see, he occupyeth to Dammas, to Cayre, and to Alexandre, his galyes and marchaundyse are worthe an hundred thousande floreyns, hath to pledge parte of your herytage. This Berthault hath a fayre doughter to mary, and he hath no mo chyldren; great and high barons of Almaygne in those marches have desyred her in maryage for themselves and for their sonnes. This I know well, and yet they coude never come to their ententes, for some he refused, and some he thought nat worthy. Wherfore I wolde counsayle you that ye shulde treate with this Berthault, desyring to have his doughter in maryage, so that he wyll redeme all your landes and paye all your dettes, and bring agayne into your handes your townes, castelles, and lordshippes, perteyning unto your herytaunce. And I suppose bycause ye be of an high lynage, and of great signorie, and have many townes, cyties, and castels, bytwene the ryvers of Meuse and Ryne, that he wyll enclyne to your request. Sir, quod therle of Guerles, ye counsayle me truely, and I shall so do. Than after, therle of Guerles assembled togider his counsayle and frendes, suche as loved hym best, and discovered his entent to them, and desyred them to go in his name to the sayd Berthault of Malignes, and to treate honorably with hym for that mater. Whan these knightes and clerkes came to Berthalt, sent fro the erle of Guerles, he made them good chere, and made them a curtesse answere, and said he wolde take advysement. And he was riche beyond measure,

CAP. CVII

Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles came for refuge to the archebysshoppe of Coleygne.

as worthe a v. or sixe hundred M. florens, and desyred the advauncement of his doughter, thynkynge that he wyst nat where to mary her more highly than to therle of Guerles, thought to accepte this maryage. But or he fullye assented therto in hymselfe, he had dyvers ymaginacions, and cast many doutes, and sayd to hymselfe: Yf I mary my doughter to this erle, and he have chyldren by her, and than she happen to dye, as all thynges fall dayly, than he that shal be made riche with my goodes, and put againe into possessyon of his townes and castelles, happe to mary agayne secondly into some high blode, and have children agayne by her, those chyldren than commynge out of noble lynage by their mothers syde, shall be more made of than the chyldren issued of my doughter: yea, and moreover lyke to be dysenheryted. Wherfore without this be artycled, I wyll never consent therto; howbeit, I wyll answere these messangers that their commyng pleaseth me greatlye, and that my doughter shulde be happy if she myght come to so great a perfection, as to be conjoyned in maryage to the erle of Guerles, thoughe it shulde cost me right derely, so that the maters were clere; but as nowe every man knoweth well they be nat clere, but in sore trouble; and also he hath forfayted all his herytage bytwene the ryvers of Meuse and Ryne. Wherfore to be quyte of this, every man maye se clerely, he demaundeth my doughter in maryage. And if I gyve her to hym, I wyll knowe howe it shall be; and also, if case that my doughter have sonne or doughter by hym, I wyll know if they shal be heyres of Guerles or no, for any other maryage that the erle may happe to have after. And of this alyaunce I wyll have good suretie of hym, and of them that be next of his blode, and of suche as have any ryght to demaunde any successyon in the countie of Guerles, and also promyse of the noble men and good townes of the countre. Thus Berthaulte of Malygnes determyned hymselfe to make answere to therle of Guerles commyssyoners.

The next daye at an hour assigned the erles messangers came to Berthaldes lodgynge, and there he shewed well that he was a ryche man. Berthault mette them in his hall, and swetely recyved them, and spake to them merilye, and than ledde them into a fayre chambre apparelled and dressed, and

CAP. CVII

Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles came for refuge to the archebysshoppe of Coleygne.

it had ben for a kyng, and had there about hym some of his frendes. And whan they were all there assembled, and the doore closed, than Berthaulte desyred them to shewe the cause of their commynge, wherupon he wolde make them a fynall answere, and so they dyd. And the deane of Coleygne, a ryght sage clerke, and cosyn to the erle of Guerles, spake, and there shewed theffecte of their ambassade, in suche wyse that it was joye to here hym. Of his wordes, nor of his requestes, I nede nat to speke any more, for they have ben shewed here before, and touched at length. Than Berthaulte answered as he had devysed in hymselfe the day before, and sayd, Fayre lordes, I repute myselfe gretly honored, and my doughter also, if we might come to so hygh an enterprise as the erle of Guerles desyreth: and whan a mater is begon, it wolde nat be prolonged: I saye this bycause that alyaunce by maryage made bytwene the hyghe prince and redouted lorde the erle of Guerles, and Mary my doughter, pleaseth me right well. Ye make me request that his landes, whiche at this presente tyme are so sore charged and layde to pledge in the handes of certayne Lombardes and other, by reason of this maryage shulde be quyt, and that I shulde rydde hym out of dette, and all thynges that are nowe darke, I shulde make them clere. I thanke God of his puissaunce that it lyeth in me thus to do, and I am in good wyll so to do. But first or this covenaunt be fully agreed, written or sealed, that I maye be in suretie without trouble or debate, that the chyldren comyng of my doughter maye be enherytours to the erldome of Guerles, as the lymites therof do stretche; and that if my lorde therle of Guerles fortune to dye before my doughter, without issue bytwene them, that than my doughter may enjoye the herytage of Guerles duryng her lyfe, and after her dyscease to returne to the rightfull heyre. And also I saye, if my doughter have heyre or heyres by my lorde therle, and than she fortune to dye, thoughe the erle than remary againe the seconde tyme, and have issue by the seconde wyfe, yet for all that my doughters heyre or heyres shall nat be disheryted. Howbeit, if it please the erle to remary agayne, I am contente that he make his seconde wyfe a dower of all suche landes as he

CAP. CVII Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles came for refuge to the archebysshoppe of Coleygne.

hath beyond the ryver of Muse, marchyng to the bysshoprike of Liege and to the duchy of Brabant, and nat to charge the princypall signorie of Guerles. And thus if the erles frendes and parentes, and suche as be next of blode, and have any chalenge to the signory of Guerles with the good townes of the countrey, wyll seale to upholde these devyses and covenauntes, than I am content and wyll assent to this maryage. Ye may nowe answere to this, if ye have any charge so to do. Than the knyghtes answered, whan they had a lytell counsayled toguyder. Than one for them all sayd, Sir, we have well herde your answere, but we have none auctorite to confyrme nor to graunt so far forthe as ye demaunde; but we shall retourne to our lorde therle and to his counsaile, and shewe hym your answere and demaunde, and shortely ye shall here fro hym agayne. Than Berthalte said, Sirs, as God wyll, so be it. Thus they departed out of the chambre.

CAP. CVIII

Howe the erle Raynolde of Guerles was maryed to Mary, doughter to Berthault of Malignes, by whom he had a doughter, and after maried agayne in Englande, and had issue two sonnes and a doughter; and howe sir Johan of Bloyes wedded theldest doughter of the erle of Guerles; and howe after the countie of Guerles remayned with therle of Guerles yongest doughter.

YE have well herde all the answers and demaundes bytwene the foresaid parties, wherfore I speke no more therof. But, as ye have herde, whan therle of Guerles messangers were returned home agayn, the erle was hoote in the mater, for he sawe well he coude as than do no better than to mary Berthalt of Malygnes doughter, he was so riche a man. Than the erle and his counsaile made and devysed writynges sufficient, and therle set to his seale, and his next frendes and parentes: in

lykewise so dyd other knightes of Guerles and good townes. And whan all was confyrmed and done as Berthaulte was content, the maryage was made, and the erles dettes payde, and his landes clerely quytte out of daunger. Than the erle toke newe counsayle, and began a new lyfe and state; if he were called good before, he was named better after, for than he had well wherwith; he lacked nothyng of that Berthault of Malygnes myght ayde hym. The erle bare hym to his wyfe ryght honourably, for she was a fayre lady, good, sage, devout, and prudent; but they were nat toguyder past a four yeres but that the lady dyed, and she had a doughter called Isabell. Whan therle of Guerles was a wydower he was but yong. Than he maryed agayne ryght highly: for kynge Edwarde of Englande, father to the good kyng Edwarde, who beseged Tourney and wanne Calis, he gave to this erle Raynolde a doughter of his, named Isabell: and by her this erle had thre chyldren, two sonnes and one doughter, sir Raynolde and sir Edwarde, and Jane, who afterwarde was duches of Guerles. For in lykewise as Bertram of Malignes had ymagined in the begynnyng, whan his doughter maryed the erle of Guerles, evyn so it fell, for there was no trouthe kepte to hym. For whan kynge Edwarde of Englande, who was uncle to the erle of Guerles chyldren, came first into Almayne to the emperour Loyes of Bavyers, whiche emperour instytuted kynge Edwarde to be his vicar general throughe all the marches of the empire, as it is conteyned in the begynnyng of this boke: than the countie of Guerles was made a duchy, and the countie of Julyers was made marques of Julyers, to augment their dignities. And, to come to our mater: the duke Raynolde of Guerles, nephue to kynge Edwarde, dyed without issue; and sir Edwarde of Guerles was maryed in Heynault, and had to wyfe the yongest doughter of duke Aubert; but the lady was so yonge, that this sir Edwarde never touched her carnallye. And so this sir Edwarde also dyed withoute issue, who was a ryght valyaunt knight; he was slayne in the batayle that was bytwene the duke of Brabant and duke Wincelant before Julyers. His suster Jane, who was maryed to duke Guylliam of Julyers, had chyldren; and she, by

CAP. CVIII

Howe the erle Raynolde of Guerles was maryed to Mary, doughter to Berthault of Malignes.

CAP. CVIII

Howe the erle Raynolde of Guerles was maryed to Mary, doughter to Berthault of Malignes.

successyon of her bretherne, said and toke upon her to be heyre to the duchy of Guerles; and in lykewyse so dyde her eldest suster by the firste maryage; for the two bretherne by the seconde maryage were bothe deed, without laufull issue: wherfore she sayde she was enherytoure. Thus fell the difference bytwene the two susters; and some of the countrey wolde have the one, and some the other: and the eldest suster was counsayled to mary into some high lygnage, that myght ayde her chalenge and defende her herytage. Than there was treatie made by the bysshoppe of Coloygne that was than, to the lorde sir Johan of Bloyes, for therle Loyes his brother as than lyved; and the bysshoppe sayd, that he shulde therby be duke of Guerles; for by successyon of the two bretherne deed without issue male, therfore, by right of mariage, the right shuld retourne to her, for none other coude chalenge any right but she. And sir Johan of Bloyes, who alwayes had ben nourisshed and brought up in the parties of Hollande and Zelande, for there he had fayre herytage, and had the language of that countre, and he never had wyll to mary in Fraunce, layde his eare gladlye to this treatie, and sawe well he myght therby have great possessions in the marches that he loved beste; and also the knyghtes of Hollande that were of his counsayle counsayled hym therto. So he accepted that maryage; but first or he wolde conclude, he sayd he wolde ryde into Heynault and Quesnoy, to speke with his cosyn the duke Aubert, to se what counsayle he wolde gyve hym. But to saye trouthe, duke Aubert wyst nat what to counsayle hym; and if he dyd, he made no semblaunt therof, but dissymuled the mater a lytell: so that syr John of Bloyes wolde no lengar tarye to have his counsayle, but toke his horse and retourned as soone as he coude into Guerles, and wedded this lady, and dyd put her in possession of the countre. But some there were that wolde nat receyve hym to their lorde nor her to their lady; for the moost parte of the knyghtes and squiers and good townes of the countre helde with the duchesse of Julyers: for that lady hadde fayre chyldren, wherfore they of Guerles loved her the better.

Thus sir John of Bloys had his wyfe and possessyons,

whiche cost hym moche after, for the erle Loys his brother dyed. And than he was erle of Bloyes and lorde Davenes in Heynault, and had all the landes in Hollande and Zelande, and had in the sayd counties great herytage. And alwayes his counsayle counsayled hym to pursue for his ryght that he ought to have by his wyfe in Guerles, and so he dyde to his power. But the Almayns are so covetous, they wolde make no warre for hym no lengar than his money endured; and the chalenge that he made to the duchy of Guerles dyd him never profyte, but great domage. Than dyed this gentyll knight sir Johan of Bloyes, in the castell and towne of Escone Hove,[1] the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and one, in the moneth of June, and was buryed in the freres at Valencenes, besyde sir Johan of Heynault, his [grandfather].[2] And than was his brother, sir Guy of Bloyes, erle, and helde all the landes by ryght successyon that his two bretherne had helde, as well in Fraunce, Picardy, Heynalt, Hollande, and Zelande, as in the countie of Bloyes.

CAP. CVIII
Howe the erle Raynolde of Guerles was maryed to Mary, doughter to Berthault of Malignes.

[1] *Schoonhove. Eslone Houe* P.

[2] *blank space in* P.

I knowe nat howe many yeres after, the lady dyed, who had ben wyfe to therle John of Bloys: her suster the duches of Juliers abode pesably duches of Guerles. It was ordayned, by thaccorde of the countre, and at the request of the knightes and good townes of the duchy of Guerles, that they shulde take to their lorde sir Willyam of Juliers, eldest son to the duke of Juliers, for the lande came to hym rightfully by succession of his uncles. And by reason therof duke Aubert and the duches his wyfe gave hym there doughter in maryage, who before had ben maried to sir Edward of Guerles. Thus the lady was doughter of Heynault and duches of Guerles: and whan she maried the duke of Guerles, sonne to the duke of Julyers, they were bothe of one age; wherfore the maryage was the more agreable. This yong duke of Guerles held hym in his owne countrey, and thelder he waxed, the more he loved dedes of armes, as justes and tourneys; and alwayes the duke was rather Englysshe than Frenche, and that he shewed well as long as he lyved; and alwayes he bare in his mynde the yvell wyll that his predecessours had to the duchy of Brabant. And alwayes he sought occasion how he might

CAP. CVIII Howe the erle Raynolde of Guerles was maryed to Mary, doughter to Berthault of Malignes.

make warre there for two reasons; the one, bycause he was alyed by faythe and homage to kyng Richarde of Englande; the other was bycause Wyncelant of Boesme, duke of Lusenburge and of Brabant, had bought of therle of Mors,[1] a great lorde in Almayne, the thre foresaid castelles, the whiche I shall name agayne to quicken the mater: Gaulech, Buth, and Nulle, on the other syde of the ryver of Muse, in the lande of Falquemount; whiche castels aunciently parteyned to the duke of Guerles, and he was enherytour to them. And therfore the yong duke Willyam of Juliers, duke of Guerles, was sore displeased that he might nat recover his herytage. As long as duke Wyncelant of Brabant lyved, he spake no worde therof. Nowe shall I shewe you howe it fortuned, to thentent the mater shulde be the clerer to be understanded.

[1] *Meurs.*

CAP. CIX

Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant; and howe the duke of Juliers susteyned the Linfars in his countre, who robbed all maner of people; and of the great assemble that the duke of Brabant made to go to Julyers, and howe he was discomfyted.

SO it was that duke Reynolde of Guerles, cosyn germayne to the prince of Guerles, and his brother had before that enguaged the thre forsaid castels for a somme of florens, to an high baron of Almayn, called therle of Mors. This erle helde these castels a season, and whan he saw that he coude nat get his money that he had lende on them, he was sore displeased, and sent suffycient sommonynge to the duke Raynolde of Guerles. The duke made no compte therof, for he had nat wherwith to redeme them agayne. And when the erle of Mors sawe that, he came to the duke of Brabant, and treated with hym to have agayn his money for the sayde castelles. The duke herde hym well, bycause the castels marched on the lande of

CAP. CIX

Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

Faulquemount, of the whiche lande he was lorde, for the duke was glad to encrese his enheritaunce, as he that thought wel to over lyve the lady Jane, duches of Brabant, his wife: and so he gate into his possession the said thre castelles. And in the first he set the lorde of Kalle[1] to be as chefe soverayne. And whan this duke of Guerles was deed, than sir Edwarde of Guerles toke on hym the herytage, and sent to the duke of Brabant, ambassadors, desyring hym that he might have agayne the thre castelles for the money that was payde for them. The duke wolde make no suche bargayne, but denyed it. With whiche answere sir Edwarde of Guerles was nat content, and dalte hardely with the wydowe, the lady Isabell of Brabant, yonger suster to the duches, whiche lady had wedded the duke Raynolde of Guerles. But thus he troubled her for her dowrie. The lady wente into Brabant, and complayned her to the duke of Brabant her brother and to the duchesse, howe that sir Edwarde of Guerles dyde her great wronge and injury, and bycause there was a grudge bytwene the Brabansoys and the Guerloys for the lande and towne of Grance,[2] which was in Brabant on that syde the ryver of Muese, therfore the duke and the Brabansoys were more enclyned to ayde the lady. And on a day there were assembled togyder at the callyng of the duke of Brabant a great nombre of men of warre, a xii. hundred speares: and sir Edwarde of Guerles made his assemble on the other parte, and were in that case that it was likely to have had a batayle bytwene them. But the duke Aubert, the duke of Mours, and the duke of Jullyers mette togyder by a treatie; and so this assemble departed asondre without any thyng doyng. The same yere the duke Wyncelant of Brabant overthrewe the companyons in the countrey of Lusenburge, who had greatly wasted that lande, and putte many to exyle: and in the towre of the castell of Lusenburge dyed their soverayne capitayne, called the lytell Meslyn.[3] And also in the same yere sir Charles of Boesme who as than raigned and was kynge of Almaygne and emperour of Rome, instytuted duke Wyncelant of Boesme, and made hym soverayne regarder, by an instytucion and ordynaunce called in Almayne, Le Langue Fride;[4] that is to

[1] *Cuyck.*

[2] *Grave.*

[3] *Le Petit Meschin.*

[4] *Landvrede.*

CAP. CIX

Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

saye, holding the covert and sure wayes; so that all maner of people myght go and come, and ryde fro towne to towne surely and in savegarde. And the emperour gave hym a great parte of the lande and countrey of Daussay,[1] on bothe sydes the ryver of Ryne, to defende hym therin agaynst the Lynfars, who were a maner of people ryght peryllous, and great robbers without pytie. And also the emperour gave hym the soverayntie of the good and ryche cytie of Straubourcke, and made him Marques of the holy Empyre, to augment therby his estate. And surely he coulde not gyve hym to moche, for this duke Wyncelant was lyberall, swete, courtesse, amyable, and noble in armes, and was likely to atchyve many thynges if he hadde lyved long: but he dyed in the floure of his youthe; wherof I that have written this hystorie make great complaynt for hym that he lyved no lengar but tyll he was a xxiiii. yere of age.[2] The scisme that was in the Churche greatly displeased hym, and that he shewed me often tymes, for I was prive of his acquayntaunce. In that in my dayes I traveyled a great parte of the worlde, two great princes I knewe, and non more humble nor tretable than they were; that was this noble prince one, and the other my good mayster the lorde Guy of Bloys, who commaunded me to make this hystorie: these two princes were in my dayes, and were full of humilyte, larges, and bountie, without any malyce: they lyved lyberally of their owne, without oppressynge their people, or reysing up of any yvell customes in their landes.

[1] *Alsace. Dauffay* P.

[2] *le plains moult grandement que il n'eust longue vie tant que à IIII^xx ans ou plus.*

Nowe let us retourne to the pythe of the mater that I have begone.

Whan the duke of Julyers and sir Edwarde of Guerles, who called themselfe bretherne and their hertes good Englisshe, for they had ben long alyed with the kyng of Englande, and with love and favour had alwayes ayded them in their warres: whan they sawe that the duke of Brabant hadde so hygh a signory as to be lorde and soverayne regarder by the emperour, and was chiefe correctour of all mysdoers and robbers that he founde lyveng by the highe wayes of Almaygne, they had therat indygnacion and envy. Nat for that he dyde well and helde justyce, and corrected yvell doers; but of that he had the soverayne

CAP. CIX

Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

regarde and signory over Langue Fride, whiche was parte in their lande. Whiche offyce was first instytued that marchauntes might pesably passe fro Brabant to Heynault, to Flaunders, to Fraunce, or fro Liege to Coleyn, and to other cyties, townes, and fortresses of Almayne. And nother marchauntes nor other coulde nat passe nor entre into Almayne [but] by the landes and daungers of the duke of Julyers and the duke of Guerles: and soo it was, that certayne robbers were in the wayes, of Linfars, and it were they that had done the vyolence; and passynge through the landes of the duke of Juliers,[1] it was shewed me that the duke had lente them horse and castels. Great complayntes came to duke Wyncelant of Brabant and of Luzenbourge, who as than was at Bruselles, howe that the Languefryde, wherof he was soverayne regarder and keper, was broken and violated; and howe they that dyde that vyolence, and robbed the countrey, sojourned and ever retourned into the duchy of Julyers. The duke of Brabante, who as than was yonge and lusty, and puyssaunte of lynage and of landes, toke in great dispyte the offences that his people had complayned of, and said how he wolde fynde some remedy, seynge he had in charge to kepe and defende the Languefride; he wolde nat that through his neclygence he shulde take any reproche or blame. And to conclude his dede, and to sette reason in their demaunde, and by the counsayle and advyse that he had, he sente to the duke of Julyers notable persones, as the lorde of Urquon,[2] lorde of Bourgnevall, syr Scelar,[3] archedecon of Heynalt, Geffrey de la Towre, great rowter[4] of Brabante, and other, shewyng to him in wyse and swete maner the offence, whiche greatly toucheth and is prejudyciall to the duke of Brabante, who is keper and soverayne regarder of the Languefride. The duke of Julyers fayntely excused hymselfe, for by that he shewed, he had as lefe have had the warre as the peace; so that the duke of Brabantes messangers were nat well content, and so toke their leave of the duke of Juliers, and retourned and shewed the duke of Brabant all as they had herde and sene. Whan the duke herde that, he demaunded what was best to do. He was aunswered by his counsayle, sayenge, Sir, ye knowe best yourselfe. Well, quod the duke, and I saye

[1] *Et estoient ceux qui avoient fait ceste violence passés parmy la terre du duc de Jullers. Si me fut, etc.*

[2] *Witthem.*

[3] *Serclaes.*

[4] *rentier.*

CAP. CIX
Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

that it is my entensyon that I wyll nat slepe so in this blame, nor that it shall be said that for slouth or faynte hert, that I shulde suffre under my savegarde robbers to do vilanyes and robories unpunysshed. I shewe and wyll shewe to my cosyn of Juliers and to his aydes that this mater toucheth me nere. This duke cooled nat his entent, but incontynent set clerkes awarke, and sent to them that he thought wolde ayde hym. Some he prayed and some he commaunded, and sente sufficyent knoledge of his mynde to the duke of Juliers and to his alies: bothe these lordes made great preparacion. The duke of Julyers had but lytell ayde, but of his brother syr Edwarde of Guerles; he greatly comforted him with men and with frendes. These two lordes sent prively for men farre into Almayne; and bycause that Almayns are covetous, desyring to wynne, and it had bene longe before or they were in any place where they myght get any good adventure, they wolde have come in more habundaunce and they had nat knowen that they shulde have had to do agaynste the duke of Brabante. The duke of Brabante in great aray departed fro Bruselles, and went to Lovayne, and fro thence to Trecte[1] on the ryver of Maese, and there he founde a thousande speares abydinge for hym; and always there came menne to hym fro all partyes, fro Fraunce, fro Flaunders, fro Haynalt, fro Namure, fro Lorayne, and other countreys, so that he had two thousande and fyve hundred speares of good men of warre. And also there came to hym out of Burgoyne the lorde of Geaunt,[2] and with hym a foure hundred speares, but they came to late, for they knewe nat the daye of the busynesse that I shall shewe you, wherwith they were sore dyspleased, whanne they herde that the mater was done without them. The duke of Brabant beinge at Trect, herde but lytell newes of his enemyes. Than he departed fro Trect the Wednysdaye, and wente and lodged in the lande of his enemyes, and there lay all that nyght and the Thursday tyll he herde certayne tydynges. It was shewed hym by his corours that his enemyes were abrode. Than he rode forwarde, and commaunded to burne in the duke of Juliers landes, and the Thursday toke his lodginge betymes: and the vowarde kept the erle Guy of Ligney, erle of saynt

[1] *Maestrecht.*

[2] *Grancey.*

CAP. CIX

Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

Pole, and sir Valeran his sonne, who as than was but yong, of a sixtene yere of age, and there he was made knyght. The duke of Juliers came the same Thursday, and lay nere one to another; and by all lykelyhode the Almaynes knewe the demeanour of the Brabansoys better than they dyd theirs: for on the Fridaye betymes, whan the duke of Brabant had herd masse, and that all were in the felde and thought nat to have fought so soone, than came redy the duke of Juliers and sir Edwarde of Guerles, well mounted with a great batayle. Than one sayd to the duke of Brabante, Syr, beholde yonder your enemys; put your helmes on your heedes, in the name of God and saynt George. Of that worde the duke had great joye. The same day he had by him four squiers of great price, worthy to serve an hyghe prince and to be aboute hym, for they had sene many dedes of armes; they were called Johan de Valcon,[1] Baudwyn of Beauforde, Gyrarde of Byes,[2] and Roulande of Colongne. Aboute the duke were the Bruselloys, some a horsebacke with their varlettes behynde them, with botelles of wyne trussed at their sadelles, and pastyes of samonde, troutes, and elys, wraped in towels: these horsemen greatly combred the place, so that there was such prease that no man coude styrre. Than Gyrarde of Bies said to the duke, Sir, commaunde these horses to avoyde the place; they shall greatly let us; we can nat se aboute us, nor have knoledge of your reregarde nor vowarde, nor of your marshall sir Roberte of Namure. So let it be, quod the duke; I commaunde so. Than Gyrarde toke his glayve in his handes, and so dyd his companyons, and began to stryke on their helmes and on their horses, so that anone the place was voyded of them, for no man was glad to have his horse slaine or hurte. Than the duke of Juliers and syr Edwarde of Guerles and their company came on theym, and founde the erle of saynt Poule and his sonne in the vowarde, and dasshed in so fersely amonge them, that anone they were broken and discomfited, and there were many slayne, taken, and hurte: that was the batayle that had moste to do. There was slayne Guy the erle of saynte Poule, and sir Valeran his sonne taken. The batayle tourned to a herde parte for the duke of Brabante, and for them that were with him; for of men of honour

[1] *Walton.*
[2] *Obies.*

CAP. CIX

Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

there were but a fewe saved, but outher they were slayne or taken. The duke of Brabante was taken, and syr Roberte of Namure, and syr Loyes of Namure his brother, and sir Willyam of Namure, sonne to the erle of Namure, and many other. Also on the duke of Julyers parte there were some slayne and hurte. But ye know well it is a generall rule, the great losse ever resteth on them that be disconfyted; howebeit, for all the domage the duke of Brabante had in that journey, yet they hadde one great poynte of remedy and comforte, for sir Edwarde of Guerles was wounded to dethe. And this I saye, bycause it was the opinyon of dyverse, that if he had lyved he wolde have rydden so forwarde, that with puyssaunce he wolde have come to Bruselles and conquered all the countreye, for none wolde have resysted hym: he was hardy and fierse, and hated the Brabansoys, bycause of the thre castels that they helde agaynst hym. This journey and victory had the duke of Julyers in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred and a leven,[1] on saynt Bartylmewes evyn, on a Fridaye.

[1] 1371 (*Bastweiler*).

The duches of Brabant purchased her frendes, and had counsayle of Charles the Frenche kyng, who was nephue to the duke of Brabant and all his bretherne, for they were chyldren of his suster: she was counsayled by the kynge to go to the kynge of Almayne, emperoure, brother to the duke of Brabante, for whose sake the duke her husbande had taken all that domage. The lady dyd so, and came to Convalence,[2] on the ryver of the Ryne, and there founde the emperoure, and there wysely she made her complaynte. The emperoure herde her well, the whiche he was bounde unto by dyverse reasons: the one, bycause the duke was his brother; and another, bycause he had institude hym to be his vycare and soverayne regarder of the Languefryde. He comforted the lady, and sayd that at the next sommer he wolde fynde some remedy. The lady retourned into Brabante, well comforted; and the emperour, sir Charles of Boesme, slept nat his busynes, but waked the mater, as ye shall here. For as soone as wynter was past, he aproched to the noble cytie of Coloyne, and there made his provysion, in suche wyse as though he wolde go to conquere a realme of defence, and wrote to his dukes and erles that helde of

[2] *Coblentz.*

CAP. CIX

Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

hym, and commaunded them at the thyrde day of June they shulde be with hym at Ayes, with fyfty horse apece, on payne of lesyng of their landes; and specially he commaunded thre, as duke Auberte, erle of Haynalte, that he shulde come to Ayes with fyfty horse, and so he dyd. Whanne these lordes were come, there was moche people. And than syr Charles his sonne sayde, that he wolde go and entre into the landes of duke Julyers, and distroy it, bycause of the great outrage that he had done, as in enteryng into the felde with an army against the emperours vycaire his brother. This sentence was gyven by playne judgement in the emperours chambre. Than to that mater regarded the archebysshoppe of Treves, the archbysshoppe of Coloyne, the bysshop of Marauce,[1] the bysshoppe of Liege, the duke Aubert of Bavier, the duke Oste his brother, and diverse other barons of Almayne, that thought to dystroy the landes of so valyaunt a knyght as the duke of Julyers, shulde be yvell done, and also he was nere of their kynne. They sayde it were better fyrste to sende for hym, that he myght come to obeysaunce: that apoyntment was holden for the best, for the love of bothe partyes. Than duke Auberte and his brother came to Juliers, and founde there the duke, who was abasshed, and wyste nat what counsayle to beleve, for it had ben shewed him that the assemble that the emperour had made was to come on hym, without his frendes dyd stoppe it. Whan these lordes were come to the duke he was gladde, specyally by the comynge of his two cosyns germaynes, the duke Aubert of Baviers and the duke Oste his brother, for he knewe well that they wolde nat his dyshonoure, but rather to gyve hym good counsayle, as they dyd. Their counsayle was to shewe hym brevely that he shulde sende some honorable persones for the duke of Lusenburge and of Brabant, whome he helde in curtoyse prison in his castell of Nideque; and so he dyd. And whan he was come, all those lordes dyd hym great honour, as reason was, and than they all departed togyder, and came to Ayes and toke their lodgynges. Than the duke Aubert and his brother, and the foresayd prelates, who were the meanes of this treatye, they sore entreated the emperour and his counsayle, and shewed the emperoure howe the duke of Juliers

[1] *Mayence.*

CAP. CIX
Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

his cosyn, of his owne free wyll, was come to se hym, and to put hymselfe poorely, without any reservacyon, into his obeysaunce and commaundement, and to knowledge hym for his soveraygne and liege lorde. These swete and amyable wordes molefyed greatly the emperours ire that he had before. Than the emperoure sayde, Lette the duke come to me. And so he dyde, and kneled downe before the emperoure, and sayde, My ryght redoubted soverayne, I beleve well ye are dyspleased with me, bycause of your brother in lawe the duke of Brabante, whome I have helde longe in prison, for the which cause I submytte myselfe to abyde your ordre and your counsayles. To that worde themperour gave none aunswere; but his sonne sir Charles, who was called kynge of Boesme, aunswered and sayde, Duke of Julyers, ye have ben to outragyous to kepe our uncle so longe in prisone; and if it were nat at the desyre of your well beloved cosyns, duke Auberte and duke Oste of Bavyers, this busynesse wolde have ben sorer layd to your charge than it is, for ye have well deserved to be hyghly punysshed; but chaunge your copye, so that we have no cause to renewe our yvell wylles agaynste you, for and ye do, it wyll be costly to you. Than the duke of Julyers beynge on his kne before the emperoure, where as he sate in his chayre imperiall, sayde, My ryght redoughted soverayne lorde, by your puyssaunt hyghnes, I knowledge myselfe to have trespassed youre majeste, in that I with an army came against my cosyn your vycaire of the empyre, and in that I have helde hym as my prisoner; I delyver hym unto you freely and quyte, and I requyre your grace that you nor he beare me any yvell wyll fro henceforthe. Than the prelates and the princes there beynge presente, to helpe forwarde his wordes, sayde, Ryght noble prince, this suffyseth that your cosyn of Julyers hath sayd. Well, quod the emperour, we are content, and so toke hym up by the hande. And as it was shewed me, for the confyrmacion of more love, he kyst the duke on the mouth, and also his sonne the kynge of Boesme. And than the duke of Brabante was delyvered out of prison, and all suche as were prisoners under the duke of Julyers, and were nat raunsomed before, were delyvered quyte, by reason of the composycion of the treatie. And

this done, every manne retourned to their owne. The emperour wente to Prage in Almayne, and the duke of Brabant into Brabante; and whanne the duke of Brabante was retourned, than he reysed a newe tayle in his countrey, to restore to his knightes parte of their domages.

CAP. CIX Howe these castelles of Gaulech, Buth, and Null, came to the duke of Brabant.

CAP. CX

Howe the duke of Brabante dyed, and howe the duke Guylliam of Guerles treated with the duches of Brabante to have agayne the thre castels, and what aunswere he had, and how he made alyaunce with the kynge of Englande.

I AM yet wyllynge to treate of this matter more at lengthe, to renforce this hystorye, and to brynge it to the poynte that I wolde come unto, and to declare the trouthe, why Charles the Frenche kyng came with a great puyssaunce into Almayne. I might have shewed this before, but I have prolonged it, for all thynges, though the date and season be paste, yet they ought to be shewed in this hystory, for whan I knewe that the Frenche kynge and the kynge of Englande began to be besy, than I began to wake, to procede this hystorye more than I dyd before. Therfore I saye thus: Whan duke Wyncelant was returned into the countrey, and clerely delyvered out of prison, as ye have herde before, than he was in wyll to vysyte his landes and castels, as well in the duchy of Luzenbourge as elsewhere, and toke his journey to the good cytie of Strawesbourge, throughe the lande of Fauquemount, and behelde the thre castels whiche were the occasion of the duke of Guerles yvell wyll. He founde theym stronge and fayre; if he loved them before, he loved them moche better than, and caused them to be newly fortyfied, and set workemen aworke, as masons, carpenters, and dyke makers, to amende every place. And at his departynge he set a valyaunt knyght to be soveraygne keper of these thre casteles: this knyght was called sir Johan Grosset, who at the dukes commaundemente

CAP. CX
Howe the duke of Brabante dyed.

toke on hym the charge at his parell. The duke passed further, and vysited his countrey, and at his pleasure retourned agayne into Brabante, for there was his abydynge. In this season sir Johan of Bloys had wedded the olde[1] lady and duches of Guerles, for the herytage by right came to hym, by the deth of sir Edwarde of Guerles his brother, who was slayne, as ye have herde in the batayle of Julyers. But his suster, the duches of Julyers, strove with hym and made chalenge, and the moste parte of the knightes and good townes inclyned most to the ladyes parte, bycause she had a fayre sonne, who was able than to ryde. And that was well sene, for always he was in the warres, so that sir John de Bloyse nor his wyfe coulde never have peasable possessyon, but the chalenge of the ryght of his wyfe and the pursute therof coste hym above a hundred thousande frankes. For the sonne of duke Wyllyam of Juliers shewed well in his youth that he was noble and hardy, and loved dedes of arms, for he came of noble extractyon, and so was duke of Guerles, and had in mariage the eldest doughter of duke Auberte, who had ben wedded before to sir Edwarde of Guerles, but he had never carnally coupyled with her, for she was to yonge. Thus she was maryed to the lorde Willyam of Julyers; and he and she were moche of one age; and soo she was styll duches, as she was before. This yonge duke increased in honour, wytte, and prowes, and in great wyll to haunte dedes of armes, and to augment his herytage. And his herte was rather Englysshe than Frenche, and sayd always, as yong as he was, that he wolde ayde to susteyne the kynge of Englandes quarell, for he was nerer of blode to hym than to the Frenche kyng. It was shewed hym dyverse tymes howe the Brabansoys dyd him great wronge to kepe fro hym the thre castels. Than he aunswered and sayd, Let us suffre a season; every thynge muste have his turne: it is no season as yet for me to awake, for our cosyn of Brabante hathe many great frendes, and he is a sage knight; but a tyme may come that I shall awake. Thus the mater stode a season, tyll God toke oute of this lyfe duke Wyncelante, who dyed duke of Boesme, duke of Lusenbourge, and of Brabante, as it hath ben conteyned before in this hystory. By the dethe of this duke the duches of Brabant loste

[1] *aisnée.*

moche. Than the yonge duke of Guerles, who was ryght valyaunt, and lykely to dysplease his enemyes, and thought than to get and recover agayne his thre castelles, bycause of the debate that was and had ben bytwene Brabante and his uncle the lorde Edwarde of Guerles: than he sente to treate with the duches of Brabant, to delyver his castelles, for the somme of money that they laye in pledge for, alwayes affyrmynge howe they laye but in guage. The lady answered the messangers how she was in possessyon of them, and helde them as her owne ryght and enherytaunce; but bycause she wolde the duke shulde be a good neyghbour to Brabaunte, that he shulde leave and gyve up the towne of Grave, the whiche he helde in the duchy of Brabant. Whan the duke of Guerles had herde this aunswere, he was nothynge well contente, and thought great dispyte therof, and thought and ymagined many thynges: and covertly he treated with the knyght, called sir Johan of Grosselotte, chiefe capitayne of the sayde castelles, to assaye if he coude gette them of hym, by byeng for money or otherwyse. The knyght, who was trewe and sage, wolde in no wyse harken therto, and sente to the duke, desyringe hym to speke no more therof; for to dye therfore, there shuld never faut be founde in hym, nor that he wolde consente to do any trayson to his naturall lady. And whan the duke of Guerles sawe that, as I was enfourmed, he dyde so moche to sir Raynolde of Dysconvorte,[1] that he toke for a small occasyon a displeasure agaynst the knyght. So that on a daye he was mette withall in the feldes, and there slayne, wherwith the duchesse of Brabante was sore displeased, and so was all the countre; and the castelles were putte in other kepynge, by the agrement of the duches and of the counsayle of Brabant.

CAP. CX

Howe the duke of Brabante dyed.

[1] *Schoonvorst.*

Thus the matters stode certayne yeres, and ever there norisshed covert hate, what for the towne of Grave on the one parte, and for the thre castelles on the other parte, bytwene the duke of Guerles and the duches of Brabant and their countreis. And they of the fronter of Guerles bare alwayes yvell wyll covertly against them of Brabant, suche as marched nere to them, and dyd ever to them as moche dyspleasure as they coude do, and specially suche as were in the towne of Grave. And bytwene the dukes woode and

CAP. CX

Howe the duke of Brabante dyed.

the towne of Grave there was but four leages and a playne countrey, and fayre feldes to ryde in; and they of Guerles dyde alwayes there as great dispyte to the Brabansoys as they myght. And the mater went so forwarde, that the duke of Guerles passed the see, and went into Englande to se kyng Rycharde his cosyn, and his other cosins, as the duke of Lancastre, the duke of Yorke, the duke of Glocestre, and other great barons of Englande. He had there good chere, for they desyred to se hym, and to have his acquayntaunce, for the Englysshemen knewe well that this dukes herte, corage, ymaginacion, and affection was rather Englysshe than Frenche. In this vyage he made great alyaunce with the kynge of Englande; and bycause at that tyme he helde nothynge of the kynge of Englande, wherby he shulde beare hym faythe, homage, or servyce, therfore kyng Richarde gave hym in pencyon out of his coffers a thousande marke by yere, and was counsayled to assaye to gette his ryght fro the duches of Brabant, and was promysed to have aide of the Englysshemen, in suche wyse that he shulde take no domage. And by this meanes he sware to be true and faithfull to the kyng and to the realme of Englande. And whan this alyaunce was made, he tooke his leave of the kynge and of his cosyns and other barons of Englande, and retourned into his owne countrey of Guerles, and shewed the duke of Julyers all that he hadde done, and howe he shulde have ayde and helpe of the Englysshemen. And the duke of Julyers, who by experyence of his age knewe farther than the duke his sonne dyde, made no countynaunce of no great joye; but sayd, Sonne Wyllyam, ye have done so moche, that bothe you and I maye fortune to repent youre goyng into Englande. Do ye nat knowe howe puyssaunt the duke of Burgoyne is? No duke more myghtie than he; and he loketh for the herytage of Brabant. Howe maye ye resyst agaynst so puyssaunt a lorde? Howe may I resyst, quod the duke of Guerles to the duke of Julyers his father: the rycher and myghtier that he is, the better it is to make warre agaynst hym. I hadde rather to have ado with a ryche man that hath great possessions and herytage, than with hym that hath nothynge to lese, for there is nothynge to be conquered; for one buffet that I shall

receyve, I wyll gyve sixe. And also the kynge of Almayne is alyed with the kyng of Englande: if nede be, I shalle have ayde of hym. Well, quod the duke of Juliers: Wylliam, my fayre sonne, I feare me ye wyll playe the fole; your wysshes and enterprises are more lyke to be unacomplysshed than atchyved.

CAP. CX

Howe the duke of Brabante dyed.

I shall shewe you why the duke of Julyers spake somwhat agaynste the wyll of his sonne the duke of Guerles, and made dout in his enterprise. Kynge Charles of Fraunce laste discessed, before this season that I speke of, he dyde as moche as he coulde alwayes to gette hym frendes on all partes, for it stode hym in hande so to do; and for all that, he coude nat do so moche as to make resystence against his ennemyes. Howebeit, he dyde as moche as he coude by gyftes and fayre promyses to sytte in rest and to have ayde, so that he gate hymselfe many frendes in the empyre and other places. So that whan the duke of Julyers was quyte delyvered oute of prisone, and was come to the duke of Brabant, the kynge and he were great frendes toguyder: and by the ordynaunce the emperour of Rome dyde sette, the duke of Julyers wente to Parys to se the kynge: and there he was nobly receyved, and great gyftes gyven to hym and to his knyghtes. And than he made relefe to the kynge for the signorie of Vyerson, whiche parteyned to the countie of Bloys, whiche lande laye bytwene Bloys and Berrey, and was worthe by yere a fyve hundred pounde of money curraunt in Fraunce. And there the duke of Julyers sware that he shulde never beare armure agaynst the crowne of Fraunce. And so as longe as the kyng lyved he kept his othe; for surely as long as kyng Charles lyved he dyde hym no maner of domage, nor consented to none to be done to the crowne of Fraunce. But whan kyng Charles was deed, and that Charles his sonne was kynge, by reason of the warres of Flaunders, as it hath been shewed before in this hystorye, and after he tooke his creacyon at Parys, he hadde so moche to do that he coude nat take hede in every place. The duke of Julyers than came nat into Fraunce, nor made no relyefe for the landes of Viersone; wherfore the duke of Berrey, who toke hymselfe as soveraygne, sayde, howe the relefes parteyned to hym; and so ceased the landes and toke

CAP. CX
Howe the duke of Brabante dyed.

the profytes therof, and by puyssaunce putte out fro his ryght the erle of Bloyes; howebeit, the same tyme I sawe them bothe oftentymes togyder, and never debate made bytwene them for any of the sayd landes, nor any yvell wyll shewed. There was good cause for theym to be frendes toguyder, for Loyes, sonne to the erle of Bloyes, had in maryage the lady Mary, doughter to the duke of Berrey. The duke of Juliers wolde gladlye have entred into his herytage, but he regarded his sonne, who shulde be his heyre. Therfore he made but lytell counte of the alyaunce that his sonne the duke of Guerles hadde made in Englande; and by this reason he spake the wordes, that ye have herde here before, to the duke of Guerles whan he was retourned out of Englande. Howebeit, the duke of Guerles, who was yonge and coragyous, toke lytell regarde to his fathers wordes, and sayde: Sir, that I have done I wyll upholde; for I had rather have warre with the Frenche kynge than peace, and rather with hym than with a poore man.

CAP. CXI

Howe the duchesse of Brabante sent messangers to the Frenche kyng, complaynyng of the duke of Guerles; and howe the kynge and his counsayle were sore busyed with insydentes that fell in the realme of Fraunce, as well for the defyances of Guerles as the busynesse of Bretaygne.

THE duchesse of Brabant beynge at Bruselles, was well enformed of all these troubles, and howe the duke of Guerles thretned theym of Brabante to make theym warre. The duchesse feared the same, and sayde, Ah, God assoyle the soule of my lorde and husbande, for if he hadde lyved, the duke of Guerles durst nat have spoken of any suche matters; but nowe, bycause I am a woman and aged, he wyll make warre agaynst me. Than the lady called toguyder her counsaile, to knowe what she were best

CAP. CXI

to do, for she knewe well the duke was hote, hasty, and coragyous.

Howe the duchesse of Brabante sent messangers to the Frenche kyng.

The same seasone whyle this ladye was takynge of counsayle with her frendes, the Frenche kynge was defyed by the duke of Guerles, wherof ranne a great brute throughe all the realme, and in other realmes therto adjoynynng. They had marveyle of these newes, bycause the duke of Guerles was but a small prince to the regarde of other, and but of smalle landes. Men spake therof in dyvers maners, every man after his owne opynion. Thane the duchesse counsayle sayde, Madame, ye have nede of counsayle, and we shall counsayle you to sende to the Frenche kynge and to the duke of Burgoyne betymes, for ye have herde how the duke of Guerles hathe defyed the Frenche kynge and all his alyes. If he be in purpose to make warre to the realme of Fraunce, as the brute ronneth that he wyll, bycause the Englysshemen and the Almaygnes are of his alyaunce, he can have no better entre into the realme of Fraunce than throughe youre countrey; wherfore it is good that the kynge and the duke of Burgoyne be advertysed therof, and that youre castels on the fronters be well fortifyed and garnysshed: for there is nat so small an ennemye but he is to be doubted. We saye nat that ye shulde have great nede to seke for any ayde or conforte, all onely for them of Guerles; but it is good to regarde the alyaunces that he maye lightlye gette, as well of Englysshemen as of Almaygnes, who alwayes are covetous, and desyreth to make warre to the realme of Fraunce on trust of wynnyng. Than the duchesse sayd to her counsayle, Sirs, ye saye trouthe, it shal be as ye have devised. Than suche as shulde go on that message were apoynted out, as the lorde of Bourgnevall, cheife stewarde of her house, sir Johan Opeyn, a gracyous knyght, a clerke, and a squyer of honoure, the clerke called sir Johan Grave, and the squyer Nycholas de la Monoy. All four were of the prevy counsayle with the duchesse of Brabant; they departed fro Bruselles with letters of credence, and rode to Parys. At that tyme nother the kynge, nor the duke of Burgoyne, was natte there; they were at Rohane,[1] in Normandye. Than they went fro Parys to Roane, where the kynge was.

[1] *Rouen.*

Whan these ambassadours came to Rohane, firste they

CAP. CXI

Howe the duchesse of Brabante sent messangers to the Frenche kyng.

treated with the duke of Burgoyne, and he made them good chere, for he knewe them well; they delyvered letters to hym, and he receyved and reed them. Than whan tyme was he brought them to the kynge, who for love of their lady receyved them lovyngly. Than the kyng reed their letters and herde them speke, and aunswered and sayde: Sirs, your wordes and requestes demaundeth counsayle: resorte alwayes to our uncle of Burgoyne, and he shall here you, and dispatche youre busynesse, as shortely as maye be. Those wordes contented greatly these ambassadours, and so went to their lodgynges. The kynge and his uncles, with other of his counsayle, were dayly toguyder in counsaile, for dyvers causes and insydentes newe fallen. The defyance of the duke of Guerles was nothyng pleasaunt to them, nor also they knewe nat what the duke of Bretayne was purposed to do: bycause he had taken the constable of Fraunce prisoner, and set hym to raunsome to a C. M. frankes, and had taken fro him thre castelles, and a good towne, and had greatly fortifyed with men, vitayls, and artyllary, all his garysons and townes, and had sent dyvers tymes letters and messangers into Englande to the kyng, and to his uncles, as for the duke of Lancastre was at that tyme in Galyce.[1] The counsayle of Fraunce had moche ado to provyde for every busynesse, wherby it was the lengar or the duches of Brabantes ambassade had their answere. Finally, the duke of Burgoyn made them an answere, and sayd, Sirs, ye shall retourne to your lady our aunte, and salute her fro us, and delyver her these the kynges letters and ours, and shewe her that her businesse is ours: and let her nat be abasshed for any thyng, for she shal be conforted in suche wyse, that she shall well perceyve that her countre of Brabant shall take no domage nor reproch. This fayre answere contented greatly the ambassadours of Brabant. Thus they departed and returned to Parys, and fro thens to Brusels, and made relacion of their aunswere, as ye have herde before, wherwith the duches was well content.

[1] *a ses deux oncles; car le duc de Lancastre, etc.*

The same season newes were sprede abrode of holy saynt Peter of Lusenbourge, cardynall, whose body dyde myracles in the cytie of Avygnon. This holy cardynall was sonne to the erle Guye of saynt Poule, who dyed in the

batayle of Julyers. This holy cardynall in his tyme was a good man, noble, holy, and devoute of lyfe, and dyde many dedes pleasaunt to God; he was swete, courtesse, meke, and a mayde of body; a great almesse man in gyvynge to poore people; he kept nothynge to hymselfe of the goodes of the Churche, but his bare lyveng; the moost parte of the day and of the nyght he was in his prayers; allwayes he fledde fro the vanyties and superfluyties of the worlde, so that in his yonge dayes God called hym to his company: and anone after his discesse he dyde great myracles, and ordayned to be buryed amonge the poore people; all his dayes he used humylyte, and was buryed in the chapell of saynt Mychaell. The Pope and the Cardynalles, whan they sawe the myracles that his body dyde daylye encrease and multiplye, they wrote to the Frenche kynge, and speciallye to his brother the erle Valeranne of saynt Poule, desyringe hym to come to Avygnon. The erle wolde nat excuse hym but wente thyder, and there gave goodlye lampes of sylver to hange before his aulter, and hadde great marveyle of the great beleve and visytacion that the people made there dayly. And for to se hym I wente thyder fro the countie of Foize, and daylye his workes encreased, and it was sayde, that he shulde be canonised. I can nat tell what fell after.

CAP. CXI

Howe the duchesse of Brabante sent messangers to the Frenche kyng.

Nowe that I have shewed you of his dethe, I shall shewe you of the dethe of another, for I have nat spoken of the dethe of a kyng, of whome great mencyon hath been made of in this hystorie; howebeit, he dyde many dedes unresonable, for by hym and his meanes the realme of Fraunce had moche to do in his tyme. This was by the kyng of Naver.

CAP. CXII

Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Naver dyed in the cytie of Pampilona; and howe Charles his sonne was crowned: and howe Vanchadore was beseged by the duke of Berrey; and howe the duke of Burgoyne sente to the duchesse of Brabant.

IT is sayd, and it is of trouthe, that there is nothyng more certayne than dethe. I saye it bycause the kynge of Naver whan he dyed, thought full lytell that he had been so nere to his ende as he was; if he had knowen therof, paradventure he wolde have taken better hede than he dyde. He was in the cytie of Pampylona, in Naverre: he ymagined howe he wolde reyse a great taylage in his realme, to the somme of two hundred thousande florens, and he sente for his counsayle, and said, howe he wolde have this money reysed. His counsayle durste nat saye nay, for he was a cruell prynce. Than the moste notable persones of other cyties and townes in his realme were sente for, to come to Panpylona: they came thyder, for they durst nat disobey. Whan they were come all togyther into the kynges palays, the kynge hymselfe declared forthe the mater why they were sent for. He was a king ryght subtyle, sage, and well langaged, and at the conclusion sayde, howe towardes his nedes he must have the somme of CC. M. florens, to be reysed of his subjectes, after this maner: the riche to pay x. frankes, the meane to be cessed at fyve frankes, and all other at one franke. This request abasshed greatly the people, for the yere before there had ben a batayle[1] in Naver, by reason wherof a tayle was raysed to the somme of a hundred thousande floreyns; and besyde that, he maryed his doughter the lady Jane to duke Johan of Bretaygne, and a great parte of that money as than nat payde and ungadered. Whan the kynge hadde made his demaunde, he desyred to have an answere. Than they requyred to take counsayle and to speke toguyder: the king gave them respite xv. dayes, than the chefe of them to

[1] *une taille.*

CAP. CXII

Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Naver dyed in the cytie of Pampilona.

make answere. The brute of this taylage spredde abrode through Naverre, and every man was abasshed therof. At the xv. dayes ende the moste notable persones of the good cyties and townes returned to Panpilona, to the nombre of a threscore persones, who had charge to aunswere for all the hole realme. The kynge was present at their answere makyng, whiche was done in a fayre garden, farre of fro any people, and closed aboute with hygh walles. Than they aunswered all with one accorde, and shewed the poverte of the realme, and alleged howe the former tayle was nat as than all levyed nor gadred, wherfore they besought him for Goddes-sake to have pytie of them, for they sayd surely the realme was nat able to beare it. And whan the king sawe that he coude nat easely attayne to his purpose, he was sore dys-pleased, and departed fro them and sayd: Sirs, ye are yvell counsayled, take counsayle agayne, and speke yet agayne togyder. And so he went into his chambre, and his counsayle with hym. Than all these good persones were togyder in this garden faste closed in with hygh walles, and the kynge commaunded in no wyse to suffer them to issue out, and to have but lytell meate nor drinke. Than they were there in great doute of their lyves, and there was none that durste speke for them. And so it was supposed that by constreynt he had his desyre: for he strake of a thre of their heedes, suche as were moste contrary to his entent, to gyve feare and ensample to other. Than there fell a straunge insydence by a marveylous sodayne adventure, the whiche God sent lyke a myracle. I shall shewe you how, as I was enfourmed in the countie of Foize, at Ortays, at the erles house, by men of Panpylona: it past nat a thre or four dayes journey thence. It was shewed me howe this kynge of Naver in his dayes loved well women, and at the same tyme he had a fayre damosell to his lover, for he was a wydower a longe season. On a nyght he laye with her a space, and than retourned to his chambre in a fever, and sayd to his servauntes: Dresse my bedde, for I wyll rest me a season; and so went to his bed, and trymbled for colde, and coulde take no heate. He was an aged man aboute a threscore yere of age: and of usage his bedde was wont to be chafed with a bason with hote coles, to make hym swete,

CAP. CXII

Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Naver dyed in the cytie of Pampilona.

whiche often tymes he used and dyd hym no hurte. At this tyme his servauntes dyd the same, but outher as God wolde, or the Devyll, a burnynge flame toke in the shetes in suche maner that or he coulde be reskewed, he was brente to the bowels, he was so wrapped bytwene the shetes, so that he lyved fyftene dayes after in great payne and mysery, in so moche that physyke nor surgery coulde helpe hym, but that he dyed. This was the ende of the kynge of Naverre. And so the poore men of the countrey were quyte of their taylage, and delyvered fro payenge thereof by Charles his sonne, who was a noble good knyght, and a yonge, and was kynge of Naverre, and crowned kynge the same seasone that I wrote this hystory, anone after the obsequy done of his father, in the cytie of Panpylona.

Ye have well herde here before of the treatyes that hadde ben made in the counties of Armynake and Dolphenry, in Auvergne and Lymozyn, who were enemyes to all their neyghbours.[1] Many of them were well content to departe, for they thought they had warred and travelled the realme of Fraunce longe ynoughe, thynkynge than to goo and robbe and pyll in other places. The duke of Armynake promysed theym to leade them into Lumbardy. But the erle of Foyze, who wolde nat lyghtly be dysceyved, thought the contrary; he helde hymselfe styll to se the ende of that busynesse, and ever dylygentely enquyred howe the treatyes wente forwarde in those parties, and whan these men of warre shulde departe, and whyder they shuld drawe. And the men of his countrey sayde, that the renome was, howe they wolde go and rynne abowte a robbynge and pyllynge. Thanne the erle caste downe his heed, and sayde: Alwayes newes rynne amonge of warre;[2] the erle of Armynake, and Bernarde his brother, are yonge, and I knowe well they love me nat, nor my countrey; these men of warre may happe by his meanes to rynne on me and my countrey; howebeit, I wyll provyde therefore in suche wyse that I truste I shall take no domage; it is sayd, longe provysion before, maketh sure possessyon. Thus the erle of Foyze sayde to his counsayle, and it was no folysshe imagynacyon, as it apered after, if I maye attaygne to the tretynge therof.

[1] *de Nauldon de Bagerant et de Lymosin, lesquels estoient contraires et ennemis à tous leurs voisins.*

[2] *Tousjours viennent nouvelles soubtivetés entre gens d'armes.*

Ye have herde here before rehersed, how Geffrey Tetenoyr,

CAP. CXII

Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Naver dyed in the cytie of Pampilona.

Breton, who hadde longe kepte the garyson of the stronge castell of Vandachor,[1] in Lymosyn, on the fronter of Auvergne and Burbonoys, wolde in no wyse departe out of the castell: for he helde it as his owne propre enherytaunce, and had patysed all the countrey there aboute, and under their patesyng the people labored in pease and reste. Thus this Geffrey kepte the estate of a greate lorde; he was a cruell man in his dyspleasure; he hadde no more pytye to slee a man than a beest. Nowe to come to purpose. Whan the tydinges spred abrode in Auvergne and Lymozyn, of the tayle that was gathered in the countreys to the entente to avoyde out of the countrey these men of warre; than it was brewted that the men of warre in the fortresse of Vandachor shulde departe, and to gyve up the fortresse to the duke of Berrey. By reason of that tydynges the people were contente to pay this tayle. But whan they sawe the contrary, for the most hurte that they had was by them of the garyson of Vandachor, they thought the money that they had payed at the first gatherynge but loste, and sayd howe they wolde paye no more crosse nor mayle, without they of Vandachor were constreyned to departe out of the countrey. These tydynges came to the heryng of the duke of Berrey, who had all the soveraygne charge of the countrey of Auvergne, Lymozyn, and Gelvadan. Than the duke and his counsayle sayde: Surely these poore men have good cause to saye so, and to be lothe to pay their money for nothinge; and moreover sayde, howe he hymselfe and his counsayle were to blame that they layde nat a siege aboute that fortresse, to kepe them of that garyson fro issuyng out. Thanne the duke of Berrey ordeyned at the cost and charge of the countrey foure hundred speares of good men of armes, to besiege Vandachor by bastydes. And soveraigne capytaynes of that company was syr Willyam of Lygnac, and syr Johan Boesme Launce,[2] a valyaunt knyght of Burbonoyse. These men of armes and knyghtes, as nere as they myght, layde siege to Vandachor, and made bastydes in foure places, and by men of the countrey they made great trenches and defence upon the straytes, to stoppe their issuinge out. But the capytayne Geffrey set lytell therby, for he knewe well his garison was well furnysshed with all maner of thynges,

[1] *Ventadour.*

[2] *Bonne-Lance.*

CAP. CXII

Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Naver dyed in the cytie of Pampilona.

thoughe there came no newe vytayle to them in seven yere. Also the castell stode in so strong a place upon a rocke, that it coude take no domage for any assawte. And for all this siege and bastydes, they within wolde oftentymes issue out by a prevy posterne, whiche opened bytwene two rockes, so that they wolde issue out under coverte and ryde abrode in the countrey, and toke prisoners. Other thynge they wolde bringe none to their fortresse; they coulde nat bycause of the strayte wayes, and stronge mountaynes that they must passe by. And this issue coulde nat be stopped fro them, for the aley under covert endured fro their garyson a seven or eight leages,[1] or they came out into the feldes, and whanne they retourned agayne, by that tyme they were entered a thre leages, they were as sure there as within their castell. This maner they used a longe season. The siege laye more than a yere before the castell.

[1] *et se ne leur povoit ceste yssue estre close de nul costé, se a l'aventure sept ou huit lieues ensus de leur fort l'on ne les trouvoit sur les champs.*

Nowe let us leave spekynge of Vandachor tyll another season, and speke of other newe maters.

The duke of Burgoyne forgate nat the promise that he had made to his aunte, the duches of Brabante. He ordayned a foure hundred men of armes, Burgonyons, and other, and made two knyghtes capytayns, the one sir Guylliam of Tremoyle, Burgonyon, the other sir Gervays of Meraude, Almayne. And the duke sayd to them, Sirs, ye shall go to your charge on the fronters of Brabant and Guerles, there as the duches of Brabante wyll apoynt you, and make to her enemyes as good warre as ye canne. The knyghtes sayde they shulde do their beste to fulfyll his commaundemente. They made them redy, and gadred their men, and wente forthe as soone as they myght, and drewe into Brabante, and sente worde of their comynge to the duches of Brabante: and so passed through the lande of Lusenburge: and than by the ordynaunce of the marshall of Brabant they were sente into the thre castels that the duke of Guerles chalenged, and wolde have againe, bycause they had ben layde but to pledge, that is to say Buth, Gaulyth, and Nulle. There they helde them in garyson, and made good fronter warre, and somtyme rode abrode to encountre their enemyes. The duke of Guerles fortefyed hymselfe agaynste them, and furnysshed his townes and castels

agaynst them, for he sawe well the warre was as than open. So it fortuned that syr Willyam of Tremoyle, desyringe to avaunce hymselfe to do some thynge that myght sownde to his honoure, he set his imagynacion on a day on a towne in Guerles, a foure leages fro his fortresse. This towne was called Seaulle,[1] and he shewed secretely his entensyon to syr Gervays of Meraude, his companyon, who lightly accorded to his mynde. So they gathered their company togyder and departed aboute mydnyght, and rode a rounde pase too this towne, and had guydes that brought them to Seaule; by that tyme it was daylight. Than they rested them and apoynted what they wolde do. And as it was shewed me, syr Gervays with xxx. speares went on before for to wyne the gate, and sir Willyam of Tremoyle to folowe after, bycause they feared if they shulde have rydden all togyder to have been spyed. But they thought how they of the towne shulde thynke none other, but that they shulde be a certayne nombre of men of armes, sent thyder by the duke of Guerles to refresshe the garyson. Thus this knyght, sir Gervays, with xxx. speares rode before to the towne of Seaulle. In the mornynge they founde men and women goynge to the towne, for it was markette day; they saluted theym in the langage of Almayne, and rode forthe. The poore men went surely they had been men of the countrey perteynynge to the duke of Guerles that were rydynge to the garyson. Syr Gervays and his company rode forthe tyll they came to the gate, and founde it open with a small warde; it was so erly that the moste parte of the people were in their beddes; they rested there and were lordes of the gate. Than incontynent sir Willyam of Tremoyle and his route came galopynge thyder as faste as they myght, and entred into the towne, and cryed their cryes. Thus the towne was wonne without any defence, for the men of the towne thought full lytle that the Frenchmen wolde have done such an enterprise, and the moste parte of them were in their beddes.

CAP. CXII

Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Naver dyed in the cytie of Pampilona.

[1] *Straelen.*

CAP. CXIII

Howe the Frenchemen after they had brente and ryfeled the towne of Seaulle, retourned to their garyson; and of the joy that the duke of Burgoyne, and the duches of Brabante made for that dede; and howe sir Johan Boesme Launce discomfyted the Englysshmen.

THIS enterprise was done on the nyght of saynt Marten in wynter. And a thre dayes before there came thyder a knyght of Englande, with ten speares, and xxx. archers, sente by the kynge of Englande; this knyght was called syr Guylliam Fykaole.[1] Whan the larum began he was rysinge out of his bed: he herde that the towne was wonne, and demaunded by whome. He was aunswered that it was done by Bretons. Ah, quod the knight, Bretons are yvell people, they wyll burne and pyll the towne, and than departe. What crye do they crye? Syr, quod they, they crye on Tremoyle. Than the Englysshe knyght closed the castell, and helde hymselfe and his company within, to se if any reskewe came: but every man was so abasshed that they fled hyther and thyder. The poore people fledde into the mynster, and some avoyded the towne by another gate. The Frenchmen sette fyre in the towne in dyverse places. Howebeit there were many howses of stone and bricke, that the fyre coulde nat lightly burne them, the moste parte of the towne was brent, pylled, and robbed, so that nothyng was lefte that was good, and the rychest men of the towne taken prisoners. The Englysshe knyght was taken at laste, for whan he sawe that all was lost he opened the howse that he was in, for he douted the fyre, whan he sawe the flames and smoke in every corner of the towne, and so came out with his penon before hym, and his company, archers and other, and there valiauntly defended themselfes a longe season: but fynally he was taken and yelden prisoner to sir Guylliam of Tremoyle, and all his company taken, but fewe slayne. Whan the Frenchemen

[1] *Fitz Raoul.*

had done their wylles with the towne of Seaulle, in Guerles, and their varlettes driving their pyllage before them, they departed: for they thought it foly too abyde there, and went to their garison fro whence as they came. Thus the duke of Guerles had the first buffet and domage, wherwith he was sore dyspleased whan he knewe therof, and so came thyder with a great nombre of menne of warre, and thought well to have founde there the Frenchemen, but they were gone. Than he newe renpayred the towne, and furnisshed it with newe men of warre, who were more dilygent to kepe the towne thanne they that were there before. Thus daily the adventures of warre fell, some loste one daye and some another. The duches of Brabante, and all those of her countrey were gretly rejoysed of this adventure, and sir Gillyam of Tremoyle, and syr Gervais of Meraude, atchyved great grace. Than they of the countrey sayde, that in the nexte sommer folowyng they wolde wynne it agayne. Whan the duke of Burgoyne herde these tydinges, and howe that his men that were in garyson in Brabant dyd well and valyauntly, he was gladde therof, and to incorage theym he wrote pleasaunt letters oftentymes to syr Guylliam his knyght. Thus they taryed there all that wynter, kepinge well their fronters, and defendynge themselfe fro domage. And after, the castelles and forteresses of Guerles were better taken hede unto than they were before. Nowe shall I shewe you of another enterprise, that Perote of Bernois dyde in Auvergne, where he gate gret profite, and by what meanes he dyd it I shall shewe you at length.

CAP. CXIII

Howe the Frenchemen retourned to their garyson.

It fortuned the same yere and season aboute the tyme of the myddes of Maye, a xl. companyons adventurers issued out of Caluset, the whiche Perot of Bernoys helde. This fortresse stode in Lymozyn. These companyons rode forthe at adventure into Auvergne, and a Gascoyne squyer was their capytayne, called Geronet Durante,[1] an experte man of armes. And bycause the countrey was alwayes in doute of the men of warre that were on the fronters of Burbonoys, there was a knyght of the duke of Burgoynes, called syr Johan Boesme Launce, a gracyouse and an amorous knyght, havynge great corage to avaunce hymselfe; whyle these Englysshemen rode abrode he demaunded what nombre

[1] *Madurant.*

CAP. CXIII

Howe the Frenchemen retourned to their garyson.

they were of; and it was shewed hym howe they were aboute a xl. speares. What, quod he, it is lytell to regarde for xl. speares; I wyll set as many against them: and so departed fro thence as he was as than, and went there as his chefe charge was, and that was before Vandachor. He gate togyder a xl. or a fifty speares of Lymozyn, and Auvergne, and Burbonoyse; and with hym there was a knyght called sir Loys Dambier,[1] and also sir Loys Dabton,[2] and the lorde of saynte Obyse.[3] And so toke the feldes without kepyng of any high way: they knewe the countrey, and came to a passage where their enemyes muste nedes passe, by reasone of the mountaynes and ryvers whiche were greate and depe, by occasion of the snowe fallyng fro the mountayns. They had nat ben there halfe an hour, but that thenglysshmen came thyder, and was nat ware of that rencountre. Than Boesme Launce and his company couched their speares, and came agaynst their enemyes, and cryed their cryes. Whan the Englisshmen sawe howe they must nedes fight, they turned their faces to their enemyes, and defended themselfe. There was a sore rencountre, and certayne overthrowen on bothe partyes. But to say the trouth the Frenchmen were better expert men of armes than the aventurers, and that semed well, for there were none of the adventurers that returned agayne without it were the varlettes, who fledde and saved themselfe whyle other dyd fyght. There were xxii. taken, and syxtene slayne on the place, and the capitayne taken prisoner, and thus they departed.

[1] *Aubière.*
[2] *Apchon.*
[3] *Saint Aubin.*

CAP. CXIV

Howe syr Johan Boesme Launce led these prisoners to Mounte Ferante; and howe they of the countrey were glad whan they herde of this enterprise: and howe Geronet and his company were sette to raunsome, and delyvered by the money that Perot of Bierne lente hym.

IN rydyng and ledynge these prysoners Boesme Launce advysed and remembred hymselfe howe that a moneth before he had ben in the towne of Mountferante, in Auvergne, sportyng amonge the ladyes and damosels there, and howe they hadde desyred hym at a tyme, sayeng: Fayre brother Boesme Launce, ye ryde oftentymes abrode into the feldes, may it nat so fortune that at somtyme ye myght rencounter your enemyes? I shall shewe you why, quod one of the damosels, such one as was in great favoure with Boesme Launce. Syr, quod she, I wolde fayne se an Englysshman; a squyer of this countrey, called Gurdines, hathe shewed me oftentymes howe the Englysshmen are experte men of armes, the whiche semeth ryght well to be trewe, for they ryde oftentymes abrode, and do many propre deades of armes, and taketh dyverse of our castels, and kepeth them. At whiche tyme this gentleman, Boesme Launce, answered her and sayd, Dame, if ever it be my fortune to take any, ye shall se hym. Syr, I thanke you, quod the damosell. Thus after the foresayde enterprise, whan this promyse came into his mynde, he forsoke than the way to Cleremonte, whiche was nat farre of, and tourned to the way to Mountferant, nat farre thence. Of his comyng to Mountferant, and of the journey that he had atchyved agaynst the adventurers, who sore troubled the countrey, all the people of Mountferant were right joyfull, and made hym good chere. Than he toke his lodgynge and unarmed hym: the ladyes and damosels came to make hym chere, and receyved him ryght swetly; he was a sage knyght. Than he thanked them, and sayde to her that had desyred hym

CAP. CXIV

Howe syr Johan Boesme Launce led these prisoners to Mounte Ferante.

before to se some Englyssheman: Dame, I wyll acquyte me to you. I made you a promyse nat past a moneth ago, that if it myght be my fortune to take any Englyssheman, to shewe hym to you: and as this day God hath gyven me the grace to mete with some that be ryght valyant, for in armes they have gyven us ynoughe to do, howebeit, we hadde the victory. They be no Englysshemen naturally borne, they be Gascoyns, and make warre for the Englysshmen: they be of Byerne and hyghe Gascoyne; ye shall se them at good leyser, for the love of you I have brought them to this towne, and her they shall remayne tyll their raunsomes be payed. The ladyes and damoselles laughed at him, and tourned the mater to a great sporte, and sayd to hym, Syr, all we thanke you. And so there he taryed a thre dayes amonge them, and he kept good company with his prisoners, and put them to raunsome; for he sawe well they were but poore companyons adventurers, and he thought it were better to hange them, drowne them, or raunsome them,[1] rather thanne to suffre so many of them to abyde styll in the towne. And so whan he departed thence, he sayd to Geronet, Syr, ye shall abyde here with a certayne for all the reste of your company, and the other shall departe and go seche your raunsome: and that ye shall paye I shall apoynte them that shall receyve it, and whanne the money is payed ye shall departe; therfore remembre well nowe what I do for you: if any of ours herafter hap to be in lyke case, do in lykewyse. Syr, quod Geronet, I am bounde so to do, and so we be all. Thus Boesme Launce departed and retourned agayne to the syege of Vandachor. And a twelve of the prysoners taryed styll in Mounteferante, and the other departed and went to Galuset,[2] to Perot of Bernois, to have of hym xxii. hundred frankes. They that taryed styll at Mountferant lay and made good chere, and no great watch layde on them, but they went up and downe in the towne at their plesure, and so were there a fyftene dayes; and in that season they lerned moche of the state of the towne, the whiche cost after a hundred thousande frankes.

[1] *et mieulx voulsist que il les eust tous pendus ou noyés, que mis à raenchon.*

[2] *Chalusset.*

Whan the capytayne of Galuset was infourmed of the adventure of Geronet of Maudurant, how that he and his company were overthrowen by sir Johan Boesme Launce, he

CAP. CXIV

Howe syr Johan Boesme Launce led these prisoners to Mounte Ferante.

made lytell therof, and said to theym that came to hym for the money for their raunsomes, Syrs, ye are come for money for their delyveraunce, howe saye ye it is nat so? Yes, truely sir, quod they, we trust they shall nat be alwayes in this losse, they have no gages. Well sirs, quod he, as for me I nother care for their pledges, nor yet for their losses,[1] they shall have nothynge of me. I made them nat to go forthe, they rode at their owne adventure, therfore ye may shewe them, let adventure delyver them. Thynke you that I wyll enploye my money after that sort? Nay surely, I canne have alwayes companyons ynowe to ryde more sagely than they dyd. As for me I wyll quyte out no man, without he be taken in my company. This was the fynall answere that they coulde gette for Geronet. Than they sayde amonge themselfe, It were best that two or thre of us retourne agayne to Geronet, and shewe him all the case. So thre of them retourned to Mountferante, and as they rode they passed by Cleremount, and sawe well the walles were nat of no great heyght. Than they sayd one to another, This towne is prignable; if we come hyder on a nyght we maye gette it, there is no great watche kepte; we muste one tyme bargayne, and another tyme bye: we can nat both bargayne and bye all in one daye. Thus they rode forthe, and rode to Mountferante, and there founde Geronet and his companyons, and there shewed him all the answere that they had of Perot of Bernoys, wherof they were abasshed, for they wyste nat howe nor where to gette their raunsome. Thus all a daye and a nyght they were in great dyspleasure: the next daye Geronet sayde to them that had brought those newes, Syrs, I requyre you retourne agayne to our capytayne, and shewe hym fro me that I have to my power, whyle I was with hym, served him truely, and wyll do yet if it be his pleasure. And shewe hym if I tourne and become Frenche to delyver myselfe, he shall wyn but lytell therby; and if I do it, God knoweth it shall be full sore agaynst my wyll, and I shall forbeare it as longe as I canne. And shewe hym that if he wyll nowe delyver us fro hence, that within a moneth after I shal bring hym to suche a botye, that he and his company shall wynne a hundred thousande frankes. With that message the thre companyons retourned agayne to Galuset,

[1] *Oyl, respondirent ils, l'on ne gaigne pas tousjours. Je ne sais, dist il, ne de gaigne, ne de perte.*

CAP. CXIV

Howe syr Johan Boesme Launce led these prisoners to Mounte Ferante.

and shewed Perot their message. Thanne he studyed a lytell and sayd, It maye well be as he sayeth, at adventure I shall delyver hym incontynent; and so opened a cofer wherin was more than threscore thousande frankes, nat gathered of his rentes that he hadde in Byerne, but the moste parte of pyllage; for the towne he dwelte in before the warres was but of twelve houses, and the erle of Foiz was chefe lorde therof, and the towne was called Dadam, within thre leages of Ortays. Than he tolde oute xxiii. hundred frankes; At a pynch a frende is knowen, I shall put them in adventure; he is well able to wyn them agayne and mo, and he wyll. Thus they departed fro Galuset, and retourned to Mountferante, it was a xiiii. great leages bytwene, but they had a good saveconduct, wherby they passed in and out without daunger.

Whan Geronet knewe howe he and his company shulde be delyvered, he was right joyfull, and sente for them that shulde receyve the money, and sayde, Syrs, holde, tell your money, here is all that we owe you. So they tolde out xxii. hundred frankes. Than they rekened for their expenses in their lodgynges, and payed every thynge with the largeste, so that every man was contente. And whan all was payed, than Geronet hyred men and horses to bringe theym to Galuset. Whan syr Johan Boesme Launce was certifyed of the receyte of the money, I thynke he dyd sende for it, or els lefte it styll there on trust of the strength of the garyson; for the same season sir Peter of Gyache, as than chauncellour of Fraunce, left ther his treasoure, the whiche he lost the same yere all, or most parte. Whan Geronet was retourned to Galuset, the companyons made hym good chere. And after a thre or foure dayes Perot le Bernoys called hym and sayde, Geronet, the promyse that ye made to my servauntes was cause of your delyveraunce, and nothyng els, for I was nat bounde to paye your raunsome, seynge ye departed without my leave; ye rode forthe but at adventure, therfore nowe holde your promyse, or els there shall be displeasure bytwene you and me, for I wolde ye knowe I have nat lerned to lese, but rather to wynne. Capytayne, quod Geronet, ye have reason to say as ye do; and sir, I saye thus to you, that if ye lyste I shall set you in the towne of Mountferant

within xv. dayes, in the whiche towne is great treasure and pyllage, for it is ryche of marchaundyse, and ryche villaynes be ther in great plenty. The chauncellour of Fraunce, syr Peter of Giache, as it is infourmed me, hathe great ryches within the same towne, and I knowe well it is the towne most symplest kept, and leste taken hede to of any towne in the realme. Syr, this is that I can saye, and this is the promyse that I have made. In the name of God, quod Perot le Bernoys, it is well sayd, and I consente therto; ye knowe well the maner of the towne, and howe it is kepte and fortifyed. This enterprise, dothe it requyre any great nombre? Syr, quod Geronette, a thre or four hundred speares shall well accomplysshe our feate, for within the towne there be no men of great defence. Well, quod Perot, I am contente, and I shall singnyfye other capytayns of the fortresses here aboute of the mater, and we shall assemble togyder and go thyder.

Howe syr Johan Boesme Launce led these prisoners to Mounte Ferante.

CAP. CXV

Howe Geronet of Maudurante, with twelve of his company, retourned to Mountferant; and howe Perot of Bernoys, with foure hundred speares, went to Mountferant, and wolde nat entre into the towne by none other waye but in at the gate.

ON this determynacion Perot sent to the capytaynes nexte aboute hym, and apoynted every man to mete at Ousac, a castell in the bysshopriche of Cleremount, nat farre thence, wherof somtyme Barbe, a great pyller, a Gascoyne, was capytayne. The companyons of seven fortresses assembled togyder at Ousac, Englysshemen, and they were a four hundred speares well mounted, and than they had but sixe leages to ryde. The first that came to Ousac was Perote of Bernoys, to shewe that it was his enterprise, and to take counsayle with the other capytayns, by the advyse of Geronet, and accordyng to the informacyon that he had gyven hym. Than Geronet, and a twelve other with hym, arayed theym lyke rude vyllayne marchauntes in cotes of fryse, and ledde horses tyed one to

CAP. CXV

How Geronet of Maudurante, with twelve of his company, retourned to Mountferant.

another, with baggage on them, acordynge to the custome of the countrey. And thus they departed fro Ousac in the brekynge of the daye, and so rode towardes Mountferant, and lyke marchauntes they entred into the towne about noone. There were none that toke any hede what men they were, they thought full lytell they hadde ben men of warre: they of the towne demed surely they had ben marchauntes, come thyder to the fayre to have bought cloth and dyaper, for they said they came fro Mounte Pellier to bye marchaundyse: for against the fayre there was come thyder moche marchaundyse fro other cyties and townes of the realme. Than Geronet and his company wente to their lodgynge to the syne of the Crowne, and sette up their horses, and toke up a fayre chambre for them, and kepte theym styll therin without goynge aboute in the towne for feare of spyenge, and so sate and made mery, and thought well they wolde pay nothynge for their expenses.

At nyght they were besy to dresse their horses, and said to their host and ostes, that their horses hadde sore travayled all that day, wherfore they had nede of rest. They provyded them of plenty of candels, and so went into their chambre, and dranke and made mery, but they wolde nat go to bed. So the host and the hostes wente to their beddes, and lette them alone, and had no suspecte of them. Now shall I shewe you what Perot and his company dyd. The sayd day he and with hym seven other capytayns, firste Perot le Bernoys as chefe, than the bourge of Compaygne called Arnaldon, the bourge Anglois, the bourge of Carlat, Apthon Seguyn, Olyve Barbe, and Bernadon of the Isles, and with them there was a great routter of Byerne, the lorde of Launceplayne;[1] by hym, and by the bourge of Compayne, I was afterwarde enfourmed of this enterprise, whiche was done aboute Candelmas, whan the nightes be long and colde. And all the same nyght it rayned, and the wynde blewe so that it was a stormy season, wherfore the capytayne of the watche of Mountferant issued nat out that nyght of his lodgynge, but he sent his sonne forthe, who was but yonge, of a syxtene yere of age. And as he wente fro the one gate to the other, he founde four poore men nygh deed for colde, and they sayd to the yonge man: Syr,

[1] *Laneplane.*

CAP. CXV

How Geronet of Maudurante, with twelve of his company, retourned to Mountferant.

take of eche of us a blanke, and let us go home and warme us, it is paste aleven of the clocke. The yonge man coveted the money and toke it, and they departed fro their watche and wente to their owne houses. Than Geronet and his company watched at their hostes dore, to se whan the watchmen shulde retourne; than they sawe whan the yonge man came fro the watche, and the watchemen with hym. Than Geronet sayde, The mater goeth well, this is lyke to be a good nyght for us, every manne in the towne is as nowe gone to bedde, the watche is paste, we nede to take no care for that; and on the other parte, I am sure Perotte le Bernoys and his company are rydynge hyderwarde as fast as they may. And indede the same tyme they were comynge, and came nere to Cleremounte, and mette with Aymergotte Marcell, with a hundred speres, capytayne of the fortresse of Alose, besyde saint Floure. Whan eche of them knewe other they made good chere, and demaunded eche other whyder they wolde, and what they sought in that countrey: Amergot aunswered and said, I come fro my fortresse of Alose, and ame goynge to Carlate. In the name of God, sayd two of the capytaynes, the bourge Angloys, and the bourge Compaigne: Sir, we be here, wolde ye any thynge speke wyth us? Yea, quod Amerigot, ye have certayne prysoners of the countie of Dolphyn of Auvergne, and ye knowe well we be in treatynge togyther by the meanes of the erle of Armynake, wherfore we wolde gladly make an exchaunge with certayne prisoners that I have in my garyson; I am sore desyred thus to do by the countes of Dolphyn, who is a right good lady, and is well worthy to be done pleasure unto. Than the bourge of Compaigne sayd, Aymergotte, ye are greatly bounde to do some pleasure to that lady, for within this thre yere ye hadde of her sylver thre hundred frankes, for the redemynge of the castell of Mercyer; but, syr, I pray you where is therle Dolphyn at this season? Syr, quod the other, it is shewed me that he is in Fraunce, comunynge upon the treatie that ye know that we be in hande with the erle of Armynake, and with erle Dolphyn. Than Perot le Bernoys sayde, Sir, leave this comunynge and come on with us, and it shall be for your profyte, and ye shall have parte of our

CAP. CXV

HoweGeronet of Maudurante, with twelve of his company, retourned to Mountferant.

botye. Sir, quod Aymergot, and whyder go you than? By my fayth, sir, quod Perot, we go streyght to Mountferante, for this nyght the towne shall be yelden to me. Than Aymerygot sayd, Syr, this is yvell done that ye go aboute, for ye knowe well we be in treatie with the erle of Armynake, and with this countrey, wherfore all townes and castels rekeneth themselfe halfe assured, wherfore we shall be greatly blamed thus to do, and ye shall breke our treatye. By my faythe, quod Perot, as for me I wyll agre to no treatye as longe as I maye kepe the feldes: it behoveth companyons to lyve; come on your way with us, for ye shall have nothynge to do at Carlat. For here be the companyons of that fortresse, and suche as be left behynde wyll nat suffre you to entre till their company come home. Well sir, quod Aymerigot, with you wyll I nat go, but I wyll returne agayne into my fortresse syth the mater is thus. Thus they departed one fro another. Perot helde the waye to Mountferant. And whan they were under Cleremount there they rested them, and imagyned on a newe enterprise, specially certayne of the Gascoyns, who knewe nat of the enterprise of Geronet. Than they sayd to the capytayns, Sirs, beholde here this cytie of Cleremonte, the whiche is a ryche cytie, and rather more prignable than Mountferant; we have ladders here, let us scale it, we shall have more profyte here than at Mountferante. To this poynte they were nere agreed, but thanne the chefe capytayns sayd, Sirs, Cleremonte is a puissant towne and well peopled, and the men well harnessed; if they be ones moved they wyl assemble togyther and put theymselfe to defence; it is no doute but we shulde have no great advauntage by them. And if we shulde be reculed perforce, and our horse taken or loste, we shulde yvell escape, for we be farre fro home: and if the countrey than shulde ryse and pursue us, we shulde be in great daunger. We thynke it were better to go on forthe and folowe our fyrst enterprise, for the sekynge of a newe enterprise peradventure myght cost us dere.

This counsayle was taken, and so rode forthe without makynge of any noyse, so that aboute xi. of the clocke they were nere to Mountferant. Whan they sawe the towne they stode styll a thre bowe shot of fro the towne. Than

CAP. CXV
How Geronet of Maudurante, with twelve of his company, returned to Mountferant.

Perotte sayde, Beholde here is Mountferant, our company that went before are within the towne. Kepe you all styll here close togyder, and I wyll go downe this valaye to se if I may se or here any newes of Geronet, who hathe brought us to this enterpryse; and departe nat tyll I come to you agayne. Sir, quod they, go your waye, we shall abyde you here. Therwith Perot departed, and four with hym. The wether was so darke that no man coulde se an acre brede fro hym, and also it rayned, blewe, and snewe, that it was a mervaylouse yvell wether. Geronet was as than on the walles and taryed to here some newes; he loked downe[1] over the walles, and as he thought he sawe the shadowe of some men goynge along by the dyke syde; than he began a lytle to whystell softely. And whan they without herde that they came nerer to the wall, for the dykes on that syde hadde no water. Than Geronet demaunded who was there without. Perot knew his voyce, and sayd, I am Perot le Bernoys; Geronet, art thou there? Yea sir, quod he, I am here. Make you redy and aproche your men, for I shall lette you in here into the towne, for all those within the towne be aslepe in their beddes. What, quod Perot, shulde we entre here where as ye stande; God kepe me fro that, I wyll nat entre there; if I entre I wyll entre in at the gate, and at none other place. No wyll, quod Geronette, and I assure you that lyeth nat in my power to do; but, syr, bring your ladders hyder and spare nat sckale, for I assure you there is none shall let you. Well, quod Perot, thou haste promysed to lette me into the towne, but surely I wyll nat entre without it be by the gate. Well, quod Geronet, and I can nat amende it, for I can nat lette you in at the gate: it is faste shytte, and the kepers be within, but they be aslepe. Whyle they were at this stryfe, certayne of Geronettes company within went up and downe upon the walles to se if they myght here any noyse. A lytell there by there was a poore house at the foote of the wall; this howse stode alone farre of fro any other house, and a poore man dwelte therin, a taylour, who had watched all the nyght tyll the same tyme, and thanne was goynge to bedde. And as the wynde caryeth noyse farre of, he herde as he thought men spekynge on the walles, for by nyght tyme a

[1] *dowe* P.

CAP. CXV
HoweGeronet of Maudurante, with twelve of his company, retourned to Mountferant.

man shall here farre of. Therwith he wente out of his howse and wente upon the walles, and so met with the men; and as soone as he sawe them he began to crye. Than one of them stept forthe and toke him by the throte, and sayd, Vyllayne, thou arte but deed and thou speke one worde; and soo he helde his peace, for he feared dethe. Than Geronet, who had herde the noyse, sayde, Sirs, slee hym nat, for he shall do us good servyce; God hath sent him to us, for by hym we shall furnysshe all our enterprise. Than Geronet sayde to Perotte le Bernoys, Syr, retourne to your company, and whan ye here the fyrst gate open come forthe, and with youre axes breke downe the gate next you; and shewed him the adventure of the man that they had taken on the walles. Thanne Perot departed and wente to his company, and shewed them all the mater, as ye have herde before.

CAP. CXVI

Howe Geronet lette in Perote le Bernoys and his company into the towne of Mountferant, wherof the countrey was afraide; and howe the kynge and his uncles beynge at Parys were therwith sore dyspleased, and also the erle dolphyn of Auvergne.

THAN Geronet sayd to the man that they had taken: Without thou fulfyll oure desyre, thou arte but deed incontynente. What wolde you that I shulde do, quod he. I wyll, quod Geronet, that thou go to the gate and awake the porters, and say howe the capytayne wolde have the gate opened, or els let them delyver to the the keys, to lette in a certayne marchauntes of Mounte Pellyer, who be without with fardelles of marchandyse to come into the fayre. Sirs, quod the man, what and they wyll nat byleve me? Yes, I warante the, quod Geronet; tell theym by the token that he was nat at the watche this last night, but sent his sonne. And without thou do this message well and wysely, I shall slee the with my dagger: and do so that

CAP. CXVI

HoweGeronet lette in Perote le Bernoys and his company into the towne of Mountferant.

through thy faute I lese nat myne enterprise. Whan the poore man sawe howe he was manassed, and perceyved howe they were redy to slee him, he was sore abasshed, and sayd, Sir, I shall do that ye commaunde to the uttermest of my power. And so he came to the gate, and knocked so longe tyll he awoke the porters. Than they sayd, What arte thou, that wakest us this tyme of the nyght? I am suche a one, quod he, and named his name: I have ben all this nyght busy in makyng of certayne geare of the capytayns, and so have borne it home; and whyle I was there worde came to hym howe certayne marchauntes of Mount Pellier are without the gate with their marchandyse, and are sore travayled and weate with the fowle wether; wherfore the capitayne commaundes you by me to opyn the gates and let them come in, or els gyve me the keyes, and I shall let them in, by the same token that he was nat at the watche himselfe this nyght, but sent his sonne. That is trewe, quod the porters; abyde a lytell, thou shalt have the keyes incontynent. Than one of them rose, and toke the keys hanginge on a pyn, and opened a lytell wyndowe, and delyvered out the keyes. The man toke them, and than incontynente Geronet toke them, and at adventure put in the right key into the locke and opened the gate, and than went to the utter gate, but in no wyse he coulde open it. Perot and his company were without, taryenge for openynge of the gate. Than Geronet sayde, Sirs, helpe yourselfe; avaunce forth, for I can in no wyse open this seconde gate; breke it up with your axes, otherwyse ye can nat entre into the towne. Than they without had redy axes and wedges, and hewed the gate lyke carpenters; and as soone as they coulde gette in a hole, they put in axes and wedges to Geronet, that he and his company shuld hewe asonder the barres of the gate. Than dyverse men herynge that noyse, arose out of their beddes, and had mervayle what it myght be, for they thought full lytell that the Englysshemen shulde have reysed them out of their beddes at that tyme of the night. Than the kepers of the gate, who had yvell kept their warde, herynge men speke and horses braye and crye, knewe well they were dysceyved, and rose and came to the wyndowes of the gate, and beganne to cry with an hygh voyce, Trayson,

CAP. CXVI

HoweGeronet lette in Perote le Bernoys and his company into the towne of Mountferant.

Trayson. Than all the towne began to ryse in great feare, and many thought to save their goodes and themselfe, and fledde to the castell, but ther were but a fewe that entred. For the chatelyn within the castell, whanne he understode that the Englysshemen had wonne the towne, for feare of lesynge of more, he wolde nat lette downe his bridges. Some of his frendes that came first, he lette them come in by meanes of a planke; and whanne he herde the great brewte in the towne, than he drewe in agayne the planke, and after that he wolde no more put it forthe, but wente aboute to se what defence he shulde make if the castell were assayled. Thus I have shewed you howe the fyrste gate was opened, and the seconde broken with axes and wedges, and than they entred fayre and easely. These capytayns and their companyons, or they entred into any house, they rode all the streates in the towne togyther, to se if there were any assemble to make any defence. And whan they had sertched every place, and founde no man to make any resistence, but a certayne suche as were gone to have entred into the castell made a lytell defence, but soone they were taken and slayne; what shulde I make longe processe; thus the towne of Mounte Ferante in Auvergne was taken on a Thursday at nyght, the thyrtenth day of February, by Perot le Bernoys and his company. And whan they sawe howe they were lordes of the towne, they toke up their lodgynges at their ease, without settynge of any house a fyre, or doynge of any other vyolence. For Perot le Bernois had charged, on payne of dethe, no man to vyolate any maner of woman or mayden, nor to sette any house a fyre, nor to take no good nor prisoner, lytell nor greate, tyll he had fyrste knowledge therof; and also, that no man shulde be so hardy to hurte any churche or trouble any man of the churche, nor to take any thynge out therof. This maner ever Perot used whansoever he wanne any towne or fortresse; but Geffary Tete Noyre dyd always the contrarye, for he never cared for churche nor for nothynge els: so that he myght have it and get good, he cared nat howe.

The same mornynge, whanne tydinges of this dede came to the knowledge of them of Cleremounte, whiche was but a small leage thens, they were sore abasshed, and good cause

CAP. CXVI

Howe Geronet lette in Perote le Bernoys and his company into the towne of Mountferant.

why, for their enemyes were nere them. They wyste nat what to saye or do, but toke good hede to defende their towne. These newes spredde abrode to the castell Neuffe,[1] to Thyon,[2] to Vyc,[3] to Issoire,[4] to Ryon, and fro thence to Auige Perse,[5] and to castell of Mounte Pencyer. And all these townes and countreys that I have named, the moste parte pertayned to the duke of Berrey. In farre countreys these tydynges spred abrode, howe these Englysshemen and Gascoyns had wonne and taken the good towne of Mountferante in Auvergne: as many as herde therof mervayled greatly and were in doute, and the countreys adjoyning were halfe afrayde, as Auvergne, Burbonoys, Forestes, and to Berrey. Whan these newes came to Parys, the kyng and his uncles were sore displeased, whiche was good reasone, for the same tyme the erle dolphyn was at Parys for the orderynge of that countrey, for he hadde the soveraygne charge of kepynge therof with the erle of Armynake. Therfore this dede was greatly to their displeasure, for they thought they shulde beare some blame for that dede, bycause it was under their rule: but their excuse was reasonable, for it was well knowen howe they were in treatie with all the companions; wherfore they thought the countre at that tyme hadde ben in good suretie. Than incontynent the erle dolphyn departed fro Parys to go into Auvergne, to sette an order in the countre, and lefte all his trayne behynde hym, and so rode but alonely with his page, and toke his waye by Moulyns in Burbonoyes, to go to Auvergne, and chaunged every daye fresshe horses. And as he rode in this haste at saynt Pier the Mynster, he herde other tidynges, that he hadde nat herde before, as I shall shewe you.

[1] *Villeneuve d'Allier.*
[2] *Thiers.*
[3] *Vichy.*
[4] *Cusset.*
[5] *Aigue Perse.*

CAP. CXVII

Howe Perot le Bernoys and his company toke their counsaile, and determyned nat to kepe the towne of Mountferante; and howe the sayd Perot and his company departed thens by night with all their pyllage and prisoners, and went and refresshed them in the towne of Ousac.

WHAN it was Fridaye mornynge after the towne was wonne on the Thursdaye at nyght, as ye have herde here before, and that these capitayns were lordes of the towne, they bounde faste all the men, so that they coude do them no dommage. Than they sertched all aboute, and trussed into fardelles clothe, naprye, gownes, furres, and other thynges, suche as they thought to have any profite by. And than they toke counsayle whether they shulde kepe styll the towne or no. Some were of the opynion to kepe it styll and to fortifye it. But the moost parte sayde, that to abyde there it were great follye, for so they shulde be enclosed rounde about, and shulde be farre of fro their socours and forteresses: so that if they shulde be there besieged, they shulde nat be able to withstande their ennemyes, and lykely to have no socours: so that by longe siege they shulde be famysshedde, for thereaboute were many great gentylmen, cyties, and good townes. And also whan the duke of Berrey shulde knowe of this enterprice, he wyll sende hyther the mareshall of Fraunce, sir Loyes Sanxere; and also the erle dolphyn of Auvergne and the erle of Armynake wyll come or sende and besiege us, with many great lordes, as the lorde of the Towre, the lorde Dapchon, the lorde Dapchyer, the lorde of Revell, the lorde de la Palayes, and dyvers other; yea, and specially hyther shall come sir Johan Boesme Launce, with a great nombre. All these doutes the sage Perot le Bernoyes and Olyve Barbe dyde cast and conjecte, and sayde: If they were there taken, they shulde lese all they have, and fayne to delyver up all their fortresses. So these capitayns concluded the same

nyght to departe, and to take with them all their botye and prisoners, of whom they had mo thane two hundred. Than they set a sure garde at the gates, to thentent that none shulde issue out to bewray their entreprice. CAP. CXVII Howe Perot le Bernoys and his company toke their counsaile.

Nowe shall I shewe you of a scrymysshe that they of Cleremount made with them.

CAP. CXVIII

Howe they of the towne of Cleremont made a scrimysshe with these pyllers, that had taken and robbed the towne of Mountferante, at the gates of the towne.

WHANNE these tydynges were knowen at Cleremont that the Englysshemenne had takenne Mountferant, they were soore abasshed, for they were nere neyghbours. So they of Cleremont toke counsayle toguyder. And without the towne of Cleremounte, on the waye towardes Mountferant, there was a churche of Friers, as fayre, as stronge, and as well buylded as any was in the realme of Fraunce, wherunto parteyned a great close, envyroned with stronge hyghe walles, and within the close full of vynes; for, one yere with another, the friers had therof a sixscore vesselles of wyne. Than some sayde within the towne, that it shulde be best to beate downe the Friers, bycause it joyned so nere to the gate, or elles it might be to their distruction. Some other sayde naye: affyrmynge howe it shulde be great pytie and dommage to distroye so goodly a house, and sayde: Sirs, lette us go to Mountferant, and scrimysshe there with our ennemyes, and let us besiege them there: they shall never scape us, for the knyghtes and squyers of this countrey of Burbonoys and of Forestes wyll drawe hyther, so that within these foure dayes surelye they shal be besieged. Whyle they were thus debatynge of the matter, there were a threscore compaygnions made themselfe redy to departe out of the towne, to go se their ennemyes, and to scrimysshe with theym. There was no man dyde lette theym, for of the best of the towne were in that com-

CAP. CXVIII

Howe they of the towne of Cleremont made a scrimysshe with these pyllers at the gates of the towne.

pany, desyringe to wynne honoure, and toke with them a xxx. crosbowes, and so rode towardes Mountferaunt. Thanne after them issued out of Cleremounte mo than two hundred men afote, and folowed after: thanne horsemen rode streyght to the barryers of Mountferaunte. Tidynges came into the towne to the capitaynes, howe that they of Cleremount were come to vysette them, and were before the barryers, of whiche tidynges they were greatlye rejoysed; and a hundred armed them and mounted on their horses, and opyned the gate and issued out on a fronte, and cryed Saynt George. And whan the Cleremontoys sawe them comyng so fiersely, they were afrayed, and vanquysshed within themselfe, and beganne to recule without shewynge of any face of defence, and so fledde hyther and thyder. They that were best horsed at the commynge out of Cleremount, and were the formast, sayeng, howe they wolde be the fyrste that shulde make assaute, were than the fyrst that retourned agayne to the towne, and the Gascoyns after them: so that if the Gascons horses had been as good as the Cleremontoys, there hadde but a fewe of them entred agayn into their towne; howebeit, they were chased tyll they mette with the fote men, who in lykewise than fledde and kepte none order, and lepte into the vynes and into the dykes to save themselfe. The crosbowes that came out of Cleremount kepte better array than their company dyde: for they, close toguyder, toke a vine yarde, and bent their bowes, and made vysage of defence, and kepte themselfe there tyll all the Englysshemenne were withdrawen backe agayne to Mountferant. They of Cleremont lost twentie of their men, sixe slayne and fourtene taken. Thus it fell of that enterprice; and all that day every man trussed and made redy to departe the same nyght after. And by sixe of the clocke every man hadde trussed up their baggage, and laded their horses, and sette themselfe a foote: they past nat a threscore on horsebacke, and so sette forwarde in the stretes their somers and caryages; they hadde well a foure hundred horse charged with clothes, naprie, and furres, and other thynges necessary. They founde in the towne cofers and presses full of stuffe, but they lafte them clene voyde. They bounde their prisoners two and two toguyder, and whan they were all redy and that it was nyght, they

opyned the gate and issued out: they had tarye in Mountferaunt no more but eyghtene houres. They sette their cariage before them, and than their prisoners and foote men, and the capitayns on horsebacke came after them. The nyght was darke, and the countrey nat advysed of their departynge, wherfore they were nat pursued, and about mydnight they came to Ousacke,[1] fro whens they came the seconde day before: there they rested them.

CAP. CXVIII

Howe they of the towne of Cleremont made a scrimysshe with these pyllers at the gates of the towne.

It was shewed me that they wanne by the same voyage a hundred thousande frankes, besyde their prisoners. Sir Peter of Gyache, chauncelloure of Fraunce, loste for his parte in redy money thyrtie thousande frankes or above.

[1] *Douzac.*

The companyons were well counsayled to leave Mountferaunt in Auvergne so soone as they dyde, for if they had taryed there two dayes lengar than they dyde, they hadde nat departed without great daunger, and paradventure with losse of their lyves. For all the knyghtes and squiers of the countrey gathered toguyder and came thyder with puyssaunce to have layde siege to the towne, and the lordes of the countrey, as ye have herde before named, none taryed behynde. And the erle dolphyn was come within two dayes journey; but than he herde tidynges howe the Englysshmen and Gascoyns were departed to their owne forteresses, and there the trouthe of the hole mater was showed hym. Whane he knewe the trouthe, he rode than more at his ease, and came to saynt Pursayne, and fro thens to Moulyns in Burbonoyes. And there he founde the duches of Burbone his doughter, who was sore afrayde of that adventure; howebeit, whan she knewe that the adventurers were gone she was gladde therof, for thanne she thought her countrey more surer than it was before. By my faythe, quod the erle, I wolde it had coste me greatly, that they had taryed styll at Mountferant tyll I had come thyder: for if they were there nowe, they shulde have an yvell ende: we coulde nat have had a better enterprise in all Auvergne, wherby to have recovered all the fortresses that they holde. It semeth well they are skylfull men of warre, that they taryed there no lengar; they are gone to their owne holdes with all their pyllage and prisoners. Thus the erle and the duchesse his doughter communed toguyder; and Perot le Bernoys and

CAP. CXVIII

Howe they of the towne of Cleremont made a scrimysshe with these pyllers at the gates of the towne.

Olyve Barbe, the bourge of Compayne, the bourg Angloys, Apthon Seguyn, and the other capitayns of the fortresses, whan they were come to Ousacke, they departed their botye, pyllage, and prisoners; and some they raunsomed, and the other they ledde to their fortresses, some to Carlat and some to Gaslucet.[1] All the countre of Auvergne toke better hede to they holdes than they hadde done before; howebeit, the erle of Armynake and the erle dolphyn sent to Perotte le Bernoys, sayeng, howe falsely and traytourously he had taken and stollen the towne of Mountferant and robbed it, and ledde away the prisoners, counsaylynge hym to make therof amendes, consydringe howe they were in treatie toguyder for a peace. Perotte aunswered and sayde, Savyng their graces, as for myselfe and seven other capitayns that were with me at the takynge of Mountferant, were never at no maner of treatie with these erles; nor we toke nat this towne fraudulently nor stale it, but I entred in at the gate, whiche was opyned redy to receyve me. If I and my company hadde been sworne to any treatie, we wolde have kepte it surely; but we were never of that entencyon, nor wyll be. In this case the mater stoode, and the lordes coude have none other answere. Sir Peter of Gyache was sore displeased for the losse that he hadde; and as for them of Mounteferant, they recovered themselfe as well as they myght. Thus this adventure fell.

[1] *Chalusset.*

CAP. CXIX

Howe the duke of Berrey maryed the lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloys sonne; and howe the same yere the sonne of the duke of Berrey marryed the lady Mary of Fraunce, suster to the yong kyng Charles of Fraunce.

IN the yere of our Lorde God, a thousande thre hundred fourscore and sixe, in the moneth of August, Guye the erle of Bloyes and the Lady Mary his wyfe departed fro the towne of Bloyes, well acompanyed with knightes and squyers, ladyes and damoselles, to go into Berrey. And

CAP. CXIX

Howe the duke of Berrey maryed the lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloys sonne.

they had with theym their yonge sonne, who hadde fyaunced the yere before Mary, doughter to the duke of Berrey: and the entencyon of the erle of Bloyes and of the countesse his wyfe was, that whan they shulde come to Burgus[1] in Berrey to procede to the sayd maryage; in lykewise it was the entencyon of the duke of Berrey and of the duches his wyfe. Thus whan all these parties were come togyder, than these two chyldren were joyned togider in mariage in the churche of saynt Stephyn in Burgus by a cardynall: the chauncellour of Berrey and the bysshoppe of Poyters had the yere before ensured theym toguyder. At this maryage of Loyes of Bloyes and of the lady Mary of Berrey, in the cytie of Burgus, was made great feest and tryumphes with justes and turneyes: this feest endured eight dayes. Whan this was accomplysshed, the erle of Bloyes and the countesse tooke leave of the duke of Berrey and of the duchesse, and so returned to Bloyes, and hadde with them their yonge doughter. Also in the same yere John of Berrey, sonne to the duke of Berrey, called erle of Mountpensier, maryed the lady Mary of Fraunce, suster to the yonge kynge of Fraunce. In the same yere that these maryages were thus made, in the tyme of Lente, the duchesse of Berrey, and Mary of Fraunce her doughter, and her sonne, rode to the towne of Bloyes, to se the erle Bloyes and the countesse and their chyldren. They were receyved into the castell of Bloyes with great joye. At all these maters I, sir Johan Froissarte, was present. And whan they had been there in great feest thre dayes, they departed and toke their way to Poyters; but they went by water by the ryver of Loyre to Amboyse, and fro thens in chares and on horsebacke tyll they came to Poytou. There the duchesse helde her house moost commonly in a good castell and good towne called Chynon. In this yere dyed Mary of Fraunce, beyng yonge, who was wyfe to the erle of Mountpensier: in lykewise soone after dyed, the lady Jane of Armynake, duchesse of Berrey. Thus the duke of Berey and his sonne were to marry agayne, as they dyd, but nat over soone; of the whiche maryages, and specyallye of the dukes, I shall shewe you hereafter, whan the mater shall requyre to have it declared.

[1] *Bourges.*

CAP. CXIX

Howe the duke of Berrey maryed the lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloys sonne.

Ye have well herde here before, howe the duke of Guerles had defyed the French kyng dispytefully, whiche was spoken of far and nere. For as the brute was, it was nat done in no curtesse maner, but out of the style and usage of all other defyances. Trouthe it is, I sawe myselfe certayne writynges in paper, the whiche was sayde to be the true copy; but bycause I sawe it nat under seale, nor aproved as such maters ought to be that touche great princes, suche as is the Frenche kyng, therfore I gave no great credence therto. Howebeit, it semed well that this defyaunce was displeasaunt to the realme, and wolde have it amended; and that the duke of Guerles shulde excuse hym of the spytefull wordes that were in the defyaunce. The kynges counsayle wolde in no wyse that the mater shulde rest so, for the great lordes of Fraunce sayde, Without the kyng founde some remedy, they and all the realme shulde be greatly to blame. And they sayd howe the kynge was yonge and forwarde, and that was well sene in his journey in Flaunders, And if he go nat forwarde nowe to revenge this dede, men wolde speke dyverslye of the nobles of the realme of Fraunce, who shulde counsayle the kynge, and are sworne to kepe and defende his honour, and to refourme all that is mysordred. And to the entent that the kynge nor the realme shulde beare no blame, the lorde of Coucy toke payne in the mater, and shewed well howe the mater touchedde hym nere. He knewe the Almayns better than he dyde any other, for he hadde been often in their companyes, as well for the chalenge that he made to the duchy of Austryche, as for other insydentes that he hadde amonge them.

The kynges uncles sawe well howe all the nobles of the realme were well enclyned to have the mater redressed, and specially the duke of Burgoyne hadde great affectyon therto, for the duke of Guerles haryed and pylled the duchesse of Brabantes countrey; the whiche enherytaunce shulde retourne to hym after the dethe of the two ladyes, who were right aged, both the duches and her sustre. Wherfore he wolde that outher by warre or other meanes that the duke of Guerles were apeased. Howebeit, fyrst of all it was requisyte to make all the membres of Fraunce one, and of one opinyon:

CAP. CXIX

Howe the duke of Berrey maryed the lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloys sonne.

for it shulde be a farre journey for the kynge to go out of Fraunce to Almaygne to conquere landes and countreis, the whiche the kynge coulde nat do, without he had all his hole puyssaunce with hym: for it was nat knowen whyder the Almaygnes, who be covetous people, wolde helpe and assyst the duke of Guerles or nat. Also furthermore, the duke of Burgoyne and the other noble men of Fraunce sawe well howe the duke of Bretayne was in great difference with the realme of Fraunce, and began marveylously, and shewed by his dedes that he had as lyve have warre with the realme of Fraunce as peace. And the lordes knewe well howe he provyded his townes, castels, and cyties with great provysion of men, vitayls, and artillary, to defende any siege. And besydes that, often tymes he wrote into Englande with lovynge treatable wordes to make alyaunce for ever: and the Englysshmen were wyllyng therto, to the entent that their warre with Fraunce myght be the better for them after. Thanne the counsayle of Fraunce wolde nat that there shulde be lefte behynde them suche a myst in Bretaygne, but that first it myght be putte awaye by good meanes and condute: they thought they wolde nat putte the realme in that doute. If the kynge shulde go into Almaygne, and leave the realme destytute, as this the kynges uncles ymagined, they wyste nat howe to stoppe the duke of Bretayne; for as than suche as they had sent thyder were retourned, as the bysshoppe of Langers, sir Johan of Vyen, and sir Johan de Beull. They shewed the kyng and his uncles howe they had done nothyng to purpose. Than the duke of Berry advysed to sende to Bretayne, to entreat with the duke his cosyn, the erle of Stampes,[1] who was a sage persone and a treatable. Than the duke desyred hym, and sayde, Fayre cosyn, it behoveth that ye go into Bretaygne, to speke with our cosyn the duke there. If ye fynde hym harde and highe of wordes, chafe nat with hym, treate hym swetely and after a good maner, and speke sagely to hym, and bring hym into good reason and it may be: and shewe hym howe the kynge and I and my brother of Burgoyne wolde nothing to hym but good love and peace; and if he wyll abyde and holde with us, we shall alwayes be redy to do hym pleasure. And also shewe hym, that as for the castels that he holdeth

[1] *Étampes.*

CAP. CXIX

Howe the duke of Berreymaryed the lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloys sonne.

of the constables, how that for a small occasion he hath ceased them; but and it wolde please hym to rendre them agayne, it shulde be greatly to his honour; and howe that the kynge shall gyve hym as fayre and as good as they be, in any other place where he wyll chose in the realme. Good cosyn, do so moche as to bringe us some good tydinges; and for any tarieng there departe nat fro hym tyll ye bring some mater to passe; and have well in your remembraunce all this busynesse and all his answere, and the order of his estate. The erle of Stampes aunswered and sayde, Sir, all this shal be done right gladly.

After that the erle of Stampes had this charge fro the duke of Berey to go into Bretayne to the duke his cosyn, he taried nat long, but made hymselfe redy and passed by Chartres and through the good countre of Mayne, and so came to Angers, and there founde the quene of Naples, who hadde ben wyfe to the duke of Anjou, who was called kyng of Naples, of Cicyle, of Hierusalem, and duke of Pole,[1] of Calabre, and erle of Provence; and in her company her two fayre sonnes, Loyes and Charles. The lady receyved her cosyn the erle of Stampes joyfully. And there was John of Bretayne, who loved nat the duke of Bretayne, but he was nat in power to shewe forthe his yvell wyll, nor to amende it. Whan therle of Stampes had ben there a daye and a night, he tooke his leave and departed and rode to Chasteaulx,[2] and journeyed so long that he came to the cyte of Nauntes, and there refresshed hym. And than he demaunded where the duke was; and it was shewed hym howe he was in the marches of Wennes: and there founde the duke, who receyved him joyously, for they were nere cosyns togider. The erle of Stampes, who right well coude acquyte hymselfe amonge great princes and ladyes, for he had been brought up amonge theym in his youthe, acquytedde hymselfe right sagely with the duke, and shewed nat the princypall affectyon of his corage at his firste commynge, but dissymuled two or thre dayes. And whan he sawe his tyme, he humyled hymselfe greatlye to the duke, the rather therby to drawe hym to his entent, and than sayd, Sir and my right dere cosyn, ye ought nat to marveyle thoughe I am come so farre of to se you, for greatlye I have desyred it; and than notably

[1] *Apulia.*

[2] *Champtoceaux.*

CAP. CXIX

Howe the duke of Berrey maryed the lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloys sonne.

he shewed hym the charge that he hadde to saye to hym, on the behalfe of the duke of Berrey: of the whiche wordes the duke made light. And for resolucion of answere at that tyme the duke sayde, Cosyn, we knowe well this that ye have sayde is trewe. I shall remembre me, and ye shall abyde here with us as long as it shall please you, for your comyng dothe us great pleasure. Other aunswere the erle coulde nat have as at that tyme. The erle taryed there a fyftene dayes, and the duke shewed hym gret love, and shewed hym the fayre castell of Ermyn, whiche was nere to Wannes, the whiche the duke had newely made, and there he toke parte of his pastaunce. And alwayes whanne he sawe a convenyente tyme, he shewed swetely and sagely the cause of his comyng: and ever the duke aunswered hym so covertly, that the erle coulde have no suretie in any aunswere to make any restytucion of a hundred thousande frankes, nor of the castels that he helde of the constables; the whiche yet at the ende he dyd, and that was without request of any persone, whan it was leste loked for, as I shall shewe you hereafter as I was enfourmed. Whan the erle Stampes sawe that he laye there in vayne, than he thought to take his leave, and to retourne into Fraunce; and so he dyd. The duke gave hym leave, and at his departynge gave hym a fayre whyte palfrey, aparelled and it had ben for a kynge, and gave hym a fayre rynge with a stone, well worthe a thousande frankes. Thus the erle departed and retourned by Angers, and there founde the quene of Napoles and Johan of Bretayne, who greatly desyred to here tydynges, and sayd, Fayre cosyn, I thynke ye have sped well, for ye have taryed longe out. Than the erle shewed parte of his busynesse, but fynally howe he had spedde nothynge. Whan he had taryed there a day, he departed and went to Towrs, and at last came in to Berrey, and founde the duke at Mehyn,[1] a castell of his, whiche he had newly made, and had workemen dayly theron. Whan the duke of Berrey sawe the erle of Stampes, he made hym good chere, and demaunded tydinges of Bretayne. There he declared fro poynt to poynte all that he had sene and herde, and sayde, howe in no wyse he coulde breke the duke of Bretayne fro his purpose. The duke of Berrey passed the mater lyghtly, whan he sawe it wolde be none

[1] *Mehun-sur-Yèvre.*

CAP. CXIX
Howe the duke of Berrey maryed the lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloys sonne.

otherwyse, and so retourned into Fraunce to the king and to the duke of Burgoyne his brother, and shewed theym howe he had sente into Bretaygne to the duke his cosyn the erle of Stampes, and declared in every poynt howe he had spedde. Thus the mater rested, whan they sawe none other remedy.

CAP. CXX

Howe after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre, all that ever he had wonne in Galyce the Frenchmen recovered it in lesse than fyftene dayes; and howe the Englisshmen that had ben there in that warre defamed and spake yvell of the countrey of Galyce; and howe the Frenche kynge sent for the duke of Irelande.

IT hath been resyted here before in this hystory, howe the Englisshmen dyd in Galyce, and howe the duke, and the duchesse, and his doughter, came to the Porte of Portyngale, and there taryed a season with kynge Johan of Portugale and with the yonge quene, doughter to the duke of Lancastre, as ye have herde here before. It anoyed greatly the duke, and nat without a cause, in that he had done nothynge for his profyte all that season in Castyle, but that he hadde done was to his great domage; his men deed of sykenes, of the best of his company, knyghtes and squyers. And suche conquest as he hadde made with great payne and cost, he sawe well it shulde be soone recovered agayne by the kynge of Castell. And indede so it was. For as sone as he was departed and entred into Portugale, and that the Spanyardes and knyghtes of Fraunce, suche as were taryed there with syr Olyver of Clesquyn, constable of Castyle, sawe that the duke of Lancastre was departed, and that in maner all his Englysshemen were departed fro hym, than they sette forwarde to reconquere agayne all that had ben loste of the realme of Castyle; the whiche was sone done, for they of the townes, castels, and cyties in Galyce had rather to have ben under the obeysaunce of the kynge

of Castyle than under the duke of Lancastre, without he had been able to have kepte the felde, to have defended the countrey. For they of Castyle, Lombardy, and of Italy, of usage ever they saye Lyve he that is strongest, and he that wynneth. All that ever the duke of Lancastre had wonne fro the feast of Easter to the begynnynge of July, all was wonne agayne, and refresshed with newe Frenchmen and men of Castyle; and the Englysshmen that were left there by the duke in garysons, who thought to have taryed there peasably all the wynter, were sone put out, outher by fayre meanes or perforce, and some slayne, suche as wolde nat yeld up, and some returned by saveconducte to passe by Portugale, and so to Bayon or to Burdeaux. And of all this the duke of Lancastre was well advertysed, he beynge in the cytie of Porte in Portugale; but he coude nat remedy it, whiche was ryght sore dyspleasaunte, to his herte. It is nat to be beleved the contrary; for the more noble, valyaunt, and sage that a man is, displeasures to hym be the more bytter and paynefull. Howebeit, the duke wolde say often tymes, and bare out a good face, If we have lost this yere, by the grace of God another season shall be for us: the fortunes of this worlde are mervaylous; they can nat be always permanente. Also the kynge of Portugale gave hym alwayes good comforte, and sayde, Syr, ye may abyde here and kepe your astate, and wryte to youre bretherne and frendes in Englande, that they maye sende you this nexte Marche a fyve or syxe hundred speares, and two thousande archers: and I shall gather togyder my power and people, who have good myndes to make warre into Castyle; and so we shall make a good warre: somtyme one countrey wynneth and another leseth. The duke of Lancastre thanked the kynge of Portugale of his good comforte and offre. Howebeit, for all that the kyng was the dukes sonne in lawe, and had maryed his doughter, and that he sayde was of a good wyll, yet for all that the duke dyscovered nat all his corage: for he knewe well Englande was in trouble and great debate amonge the lordes, and howe the lordes hadde maters ynowe to attende unto, as well for the kepynge of the fronters agaynst Scotlande, as for to treate with the duke of Bretaygne. And the kyng knewe well, that whan

CAP. CXX

Howe after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre, all that ever he had wonne in Galyce the Frenchmen recovered it.

CAP. CXX

Howe after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre, all that ever he had wonne in Galyce the Frenchmen recovered it.

the duke came out of Englande, there was ado to sette forwarde his armye; wherfore he thought it shulde be harde to get any newe ayde thence, seinge the realme at so many great charges allredy; and also he thought well that suche Englysshmen as were retourned wolde no more come thyder agayne, but thought rather that they shulde dyscorage other to come. The duke considered all these maters in his mynde; and whan he had ben a season at the cytie of Porte with the kynge of Portugale, than on a daye he sayd, Syr, it shulde be for my profyte to retourne to Bayon and to the marches of Burdeaulx, for dyverse reasons. He sawe well his beynge in Portugale coulde do him lytell advauntage, for there he was nat on his herytage that he desyred; but he sayde his goynge into the archebysshoppriche of Burdeaux and of Aulose,[1] and so to retourne by Bygore, and so by the lande of Lombrisience, of the countie of Foyze, and countie of Armynake, and so by Garonne, Dordone, and entrynge into Piergourte and Querchyn, Rochelloys, Xayntone, Cristynge, Poictou,[2] Auvergne, and Lymosyn, wherin were many garysons and castels holden of the Englisshe parte, who wolde all make warre for his sake; wherfore he sayd it were better for hym to be amonge theym to counsaile and encorage them, than to be in any other place. And also he sayde howe Portugale was farre of to here any newes out of Englande; and also he knewe well that the Englysshmen wolde be lothe to come thyder, bycause of the long voyage by see; and also he knewe well that shyppes of Spaygne, of Galyce, and of Castyle were goynge and comynge on the see in and out to Flaunders with their marchandyses, whiche was also great daunger for encountrynge of them. All these thynges consydred, the duke of Lancastre prepared for his departynge, and had shyppes apoynted hym by the kynge, and a patrone, called Alphons Bretat. Whan these galyes were redy, and the wynde good, the duke and the duches and her doughter toke leave of the kynge of Portugale and of the quene, and so toke shyppynge and entred on the see, abydynge Goddes pleasure and wyndes. They had wynde and wether at pleasure, so that they aryved at Bayon, of whose comynge they of the countrey were joyfull, desyringe sore to se them.

[1] *Auch.*

[2] *en costoiant Poithou.*

CAP. CXX

Howe after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre, all that ever he had wonne in Galyce the Frenchmen recovered it.

Whan the duke and the duches and their doughter were aryved at Bayon, tydynges therof spredde abrode, and they of Burdeloys were ryght joyfull therof. Than sir Johan of Harpdame,[1] senesshall of Burdeaux, and the senesshall of the Landes, came thyder to se the duke, and so dyd other gentlemen of the countrey, as the lorde of Mucydente, the lorde of Duras, the lorde of Rosem,[2] the lorde of Landuras, the lorde Lespare, the lorde of Newechasteaux,[3] and other knyghtes and squyers of the countrey. Thus they came dayly, some at one tyme, some at another; all they offred hym their servyce, as they ought to do to their lorde. Thus the duke taryed at Bayon, and often tymes sente into Englande to the kynge his nephewe, and to his other bretherne; but for all his writynge he was nothynge comforted nother with men of armes nor archers: for as the worlde wente than, the dukes busynesse was lytell taken hede unto, nor lorde, knyght, nor squyer, to make any haste to avaunce forwarde to the ayde of the duke of Lancastre. For suche as had ben in Portugale made suche reporte through the realme of Englande, that no man had corage to avaunce thyder, but every man said, The voyage into Castyle is to farre of fro us: it is more profytable for us to have warre with Fraunce, for that is a good swete countrey and temperate, and good lodgynges and fayre swete ryvers. And in Castyle there is nothynge but harde rockes and mountaynes, whiche are nat good to eate, and an untemperate ayre, and troubled ryvers, and dyverse meates, and stronge wynes and hote, and poore people, rude and yvell arayed, farre of fro our maner. Wherfore it were folly to go thyder, for if we entre into any great cytie or towne there, wenynge to fynde marvayles, we shall fynde nothynge but wyne, larde, and empty cofers. This is contrarye to the realme of Fraunce; for there, whan it is fortune to wyn any towne or cytie, we fynde suche rychesse that we be abasshed therof; and it is good to make warre where we may have profyte. Let us adventure there, and leave the unhappy warre of Castyle and Portugale, where is nothynge but povertye and domage. Thus the Englysshemen sayde in Englande, suche as had been in Castyle, so that the lordes perceyved well howe that voyage was out of the favoure of the Englysshemen. Also the

[1] *Harpendon.*
[2] *Rauzan.*
[3] *Castelnau.*

CAP. CXX

Howe after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre, all that ever he had wonne in Galyce the Frenchmen recovered it.

realme was in trouble, and the justyce on Trivylyen and outher but newly done, and the duke of Irelande departed out of the realme, and kynge Rycharde came to the guydynge of newe counsayle, the whiche he hadde nat well lerned. So by reason of suche insydentes the matters abode in harde case for the duke of Lancastre, beynge in the cytie of Bayon, where he helde all that season.

All these busynesses, as well in Castyle and Portugale as in Englande, and of the departynge of the duke of Irelande, was well knowen with the Frenche kynge and his counsayle. Than to have more parfyte knowledge, it was ordayned by the Frenche kynge and by his uncles to sende to Trecte[1] to the duke of Irelande, where as he was, and to gyve hym a sure saveconduct to come into Fraunce, and to tarye there as longe as bothe partyes were pleased. It was behovable to sende for hym by specyall messangers and sure wrytyng fro the kyng, or els the duke of Irelande wolde nat have come there, for he knewe well that he was out of the love and favoure of the lorde Coucy, who was a great baron in the realme of Fraunce, and was of a great lynage. He had no cause to love hym, as ye have herde before; for acordynge to the trouthe the duke had nat well acquyted hymselfe to his wyfe, who was doughter to the lorde Coucy. And certaynly it was the principall thing that toke awaye the good renome of his honour, bothe in Fraunce and in other places: and in lykewyse he was blamed, defamed, and hated in Englande, as well as in Fraunce. Whan the Frenche kynge had concluded to sende for the duke of Irelande, the lorde of Coucy spake as moche agaynst it as he myght; but there were so many reasons layde to hym, and also bycause the kyng wolde have it, that he was contente to suffre it. The Frenche kynge, who was but yong, desyred greatly to se the duke of Irelande, bycause he was reputed to be a good knyght, and also bycause it was sayd howe he was so well beloved with the kynge of Englande. Thanne he was sente for by a knyght and a clerke, a notary of the kynges. Whan the duke of Irelande herde fyrste howe the Frenche kynge had sente for hym, he had marvayle therof, and hadde dyverse imagynacyons for what entente he shulde be sente for into Fraunce; howebeit, fynally he thought he

[1] *Utrecht.*

myght go surely into Fraunce to se the kynge, by reason of his saveconducte, and to returne agayne at his pleasure. Than he departed fro Trect, and rode forthe with theym that the kynge had sent to hym, and rode so longe that they came to Paris, for as than the kyng was there in his castell of Lowre.[1] There the duke was well receyved of the kynge and of his uncles. The Frenche kynge desyred him to abyde there styll, and apoynted hym a place to kepe his house and astate in, for the duke had ynough so to do, for he had conveyed out of Englande good ynough; and also the constable of Fraunce ought hym certayne money for the raunsome of Johan of Bretayne, the whiche was nat all payed as than. Thus the duke wente whan it pleased hym to se the kynge, and hadde good chere; and at all feastes, justes, and triumphes, the duke was alwayes sente for.

CAP. CXX
Howe after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre, all that ever he had wonne in Galyce the Frenchmen recovered it.

[1] *Louvre.*

CAP. CXXI

Howe the constable of Fraunce wolde nat acorde that the king shulde go into Almayne, bycause of the insydentes of the realme: and howe the duke of Bretaygne fournysshed his garysons and made alyaunce with the kyng of Englande, and with the kynge of Naverre: and of the army made by the Englysshemen.

YE have herde before howe the erle de Stampes was sent into Bretayne by the duke of Berrey, thynkynge to have brought the duke of Bretayne with fayre wordes to his mynde and entensyon. But he coulde nat brynge it aboute, but retourned agayne without atteynynge any thynge of his purpose, wherof they in Fraunce were greatly abasshed, and specially suche as were of the kinges counsayle: for they knewe well the kyng had great desyre to go into Almayne, to se the landes of his cosyns the duke of Julyers, and to be revenged of the hygh wordes and cruell defyaunces of the duke of Guerles. The wyse men of the counsayle of Fraunce, suche as conceyved well the mater,

CAP. CXXI

Howe the constable of Fraunce wolde nat acorde that the king shulde go into Almayne.

imagyned therin great parell to the realme, for they clerely perceyved howe the duke of Bretayne wolde in no wyse condyscende to reason, but helde styll his purpose. They thought it was greatly prejudycyall to the honoure of the realme of Fraunce, for hym to take the constable of Fraunce, and to sette hym at raunsome at a hundred thousande frankes, and to kepe thre of his castelles, and a good towne. And also they sawe howe the duke of Bretayne was makynge of great alyaunces with the kynge of Englande, and knewe well howe the duke fortifyed greatly his townes and castels in Bretayne, and went aboute to get hym frendes in dyvers partyes; in so moche that many of the noble menne of Bretayne wyste nat what to do, outher to go into Fraunce, or to abyde there styll with the duke, and to take his parte agaynst the kynge or the realme of Fraunce, the whiche they never thought to do, for the moste parte of the knyghtes and squyers of Bretaygne were alwayes good Frenche. But the counsayle of Fraunce doubted that if the kynge wente out of the realme with his puyssaunce, the whiche he muste nedes do if he shulde goo into Almaygne, that than the duke of Bretayne to bring into his countrey the Englysshmen, outher at saynte Malowe, at saynt Mathewes, or at Lamballe, or Camperle, or Lantriguier,[1] at Guerrande, or Bownte,[2] or at Wennes, or on the see coste: for the Englysshemen coulde nat have a better entre into Fraunce than by Bretayne. So that they knewe nat, the kynges honour saved, howe to breke the duke of Bretayne fro his purpose. Some of the kynges counsayle sayde, It shall be to the kynges dyshonour if he breke nat the dukes purpose, for the duke is nat lorde peasably over his owne countrey: for we thynke the lordes, knyghtes, and squyers, of Bretayne, wyll nat be agaynst us to mayntayne the dukes opynion; therfore in the name of God, lette the kynge kepe on his voyage, and lette the constable and other lordes abyde in their countreys and defende the realme. This opynyon was well upholde with many of the kynges counsayle; but than some other sayde naye therto: and sayde, howe the kyng coulde nat well go out of his realme without he had his constable with hym, for he is more wyser, and hathe more experyence in warre than a great

[1] *Tréguier.*
[2] *Bouteville.*

CAP. CXXI

Howe the constable of Fraunce wolde nat acorde that the king shulde go into Almayne

nombre of other. Thus they argued. Than some other sayd, Lette two of the kynges uncles go, or one of them at the lest: and layde it to the duke of Burgoyne that he shulde go with two thousande speares, and syxe or seven thousande of other men of warre, and sayde, it was moste metest for hym to go, for that warre touched hym nere, bycause it moved by reasone of the duchy of Brabante: and that he shulde have with him them of Brabante, of whome he shulde fynde in nombre to the some of seven hundred speares, and xx. or thurty thousande of other comons of the countrey of Brabante. Than another sorte sayde, Sirs, your opynyons be nat good, for the kyng wyll go; he nameth hymselfe the chyefe of this warre, for he is defyed, wherfore he muste go; consydrynge the charge is his, it is good that he go, for he is yonge, and the more he contynueth the warre, the better he shall love it. Than some other sayd, Who is he that is so hardy to counsayle the kynge to go into Almayne, into so farre a countrey, amonge theym that be hyghe and prowde people, and great parell it is to entre upon them. And if the kynge were entred, yet it were great daunger the retournynge agayne: for whan they shall knowe the kynge and all the nobles of Fraunce to be entred into their countrey, they wyll than assemble all togyder, and kepe suche a countrey as they knowe, and we nat, and so they maye do us great domage, for they are covetous people above all other. And they have no pytie if they have the upper hande, and are harde and yvell handelers of their prisoners, and putteth them to sondry paynes to compell theym to make their raunsomes the greater; and if they have a lorde or a great man to their prisoner, they make great joye therof, and wyll convey hym into Boesme, or into Austryche, or into Xasenne,[1] and kepe hym in some castell inhabytable. They are people worse than Sarazins or Paynyms, for their excessyve covetousnesse quencheth the knowledge of honoure. Lette us go and put the kynge in daunger amonge these people, and if any thynge happen to fall amysse, as the chaunces of fortune are marvaylous, what shall be sayde than? Howe we have brought the kynge thyder to betray him, and to the dystructyon of the realme, and nat for the augmentynge therof. God defende the

[1] *Saxony.*

CAP. CXXI
Howe the constable of Fraunce wolde nat acorde that the king shulde go into Almayne.

realme fro all domage and parell; if the kyng go he muste have parte of his noblemen with hym; and if myssefortune fall, the realme of Fraunce is loste without recovery. Therfore loke wysely if it be good to counsayle the kyng to go that voyage into Almayne. Than some other, suche as had wysely conjected all parelles in their imagynacyons, sayd: In the name of God lette nother the kynge go, nor yet sende thyder no puyssaunce. For though the duke of Guerles, who is but yonge, and that youthe of wytte have made hym to defye the kynge, whiche was nat done by no greate wysdome, nor good counsayle, but rather done by folissh pride of yonge people, who wolde flye or they have wynges; and sythe he hathe thus defyed the kynge, lette hym alone and suffre hym to pursewe his defyaunce; the realme of Fraunce is great: if he entre into the realme in any maner of wyse, the kinge shall sone be enfourmed therof, and than he shall have a juste cause to styrre up his people, and to go and fyght agaynste hym where so ever he fynde hym, or els to make hym flye, or yelde hym in the felde; and therby the kynge shall have more honour, and lesse charge than to go into Guerles: for suche as knowe the countrey saye, that or we can come to the duke, if he lyste, we must passe a foure great ryvers, the leste of them as great as the ryver of Loyre, at Namurs or Charite: also they say it is a fowle countrey, and yvell lodgynges.

The noble men and counsaylours of Fraunce were thus in dyvers imagynacyons on this voyage that the kynge wolde make into Almayne, and surely it had ben avaunsed the soner forwarde, and they had nat douted the venym that myght growe by the occasyon of Bretayne, and of the duke there. That mater drewe theym abacke; and indede they had good cause to doute it, for the duke of Bretayne was well infourmed of the defyaunce that the duke of Guerles hadde made to the Frenche kynge, and howe that the yonge kinge Charles wolde go into Almayne. The duke loked for nothyng els, but that the kynge shulde be ones departed out of his realme of Fraunce, he hadde ordeyned and concluded bytwene hym and the Englysshemen, to suffre the Englisshe army to entre into his countrey. And also he had by subtyle meanes drawen to his acorde the moste parte of the

CAP. CXXI

Howe the constable of Fraunce wolde nat acorde that the king shulde go into Almayne.

good townes of Bretaygne, and specyally Nauntes, Wennes, Rennes, Lentriguier, Guerrand, Lambale, saynte Malo, and saynte Mathewe de Fyn Poterne: but the noble men he coulde nat gette to his opynyon. Than the duke imagyned if the lordes shulde go with the constable of Fraunce into Almayne, thanne his warre and entente shulde the soner come to passe. He caused his townes and castels to be well provyded for with vytayles and artyllary, and he shewed well howe he inclyned rather to the warre than to have pease. Also he had great alyaunce with Charles, the yonge kyng of Naverre; and the duke promysed hym, that if he might come to his entent, to have puyssaunce of men of armes and archers out of Englande, he wolde bringe them streight into Normandy, and recover fyrst the good townes and castels that kynge Charles of Fraunce, uncle to the kynge of Naverre, had taken fro hym by his men, as the lorde of Coucy, and outher. Of this the kynge of Naver had great trust, and by reason therof he helde in humble love the duke of Lancastre, who was at Bayon, for bytwene theym was great alyaunces. And of all this I sawe great apparence, as I shall shewe after.

In the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and eyght, the seventh daye of Aprell, it was concluded by the kynge of Englande, and his counsayle, and by his uncles, the duke of Yorke, and the duke of Glocestre, that the erle Rycharde of Arundell shulde be heed and chefe of an army on the see: with hym a thousande men of armes, and thre thousande archers, and to be at Hamton the fyftene day of May, and there to fynde his navy redy apparelled, and every man that was apoynted to go, to be there redy at that daye. And the kynge of Englande, on saynte Georges daye nexte after, helde a great feast at his castell of Wyndesore. And there were the chefe lordes that shulde go with therle of Arundell, and there they toke their leaves of the kynge, and of the quene, and of all other ladyes, and so came to Hampton at their daye apoynted, and entred into their shyppes the twenty day of May, whiche was a fayre clere day. There was the erle of Arundell, the erle of Notyngham, the erle of Devonshyre, syr Thomas Percy, the lorde Clifforde, sir John of Warewyke, sir Willyam de la Selle, the lorde Cameux, syr Stephyn de Libery, syr Willyam

CAP. CXXI
Howe the constable of Fraunce wolde nat acorde that the king shulde go into Almayne.

Helman,[1] syr Thomas Moreaux, syr Johan Dambreticourt, syr Roberte Sere,[2] sir Peter Mountbery, sir Loys Clombo,[3] sir Thomas Coq, syr Willyam Pulle, and dyvers other. They were of good men of armes a thousande speares, and aboute a thre thousande archers. They had with theym no horses, for they trusted if they might come to their ententes to entre into Bretayne, and there to refresshe them where as they shulde fynde horses ynowe at a good price to serve them. The daye that they departed fro Hampton was so fayre and peasable that it was mervayle. They drewe towardes Normandy, nat purposyng to lande in any parte, but to passe by the fronters of Normandy and Bretayne, tyll they herde other newes. They had in their navy certayne vessels called ballengers, who sayled on before to se if they myght fynde any adventure, in lyke maner as knyghtes do by lande go before the bataylles, to dyscover the countrey and enbusshes.

[1] *Elmham.*
[2] *Scot.*
[3] *Clanvowe.*

Nowe we shall leave a season of spekynge of this army, and speke somwhat of the busynesse of Guerles, and Brabant, and shewe howe the siege was layde to Grave.

CAP. CXXII

Howe the Brabansoys layde siege to the towne of Grave. And howe the constable of Fraunce toke saynte Malo, and saynte Mathewes, and set there men in garyson: and howe the duke of Lancastre was at Bayon greatly dyscomforted, in that he coulde gette no maner of ayde.

AS it hath been shewed here before of the auncyent dukes of Guerles, and howe the eldest sonne of the duke of Guerles, of whome I treat at this present tyme, was maryed to the doughter of Berthalte of Malynes, therby to bringe him out of daunger, and to redeme againe his herytage, the whiche was in sore trouble before. And the duke of Guerles, sonne to the duke of Julyers, to entertayne and to kepe the towne of Grave agaynst the Barban-

CAP. CXXII

Howe the Brabansoys layde siege to the towne of Grave.

soys, as he had cause and juste tytle, whan he sawe howe he coulde nat gette agayne his thre castels, Gauleth, Buth, and Nulle,[1] on the ryver of Muse, pertaynynge to his herytage, and to the countrey of Guerles, thought than to attrybute the towne of Grave to his herytage for ever. This duke had a bastarde doughter, maryed to the sonne of the lorde Bruke,[2] who was enherytour to the towne of Grave. So there was an amyable treatye bytwene them, as bytwene the fader and the sonne; and there the lorde of Bruke gave the towne and sygnory of Grave to the duke of Guerles, in presence of the knyghtes of Guerles, and Juliers. And for that cause the duke of Guerles dyd recompence the lorde of Bruke with the landes of Bresde,[3] on the ryver of Lighen,[4] in the duchy of Guerles, marchyng on the countrey of Holande, above Brabaunte. At this towne of Bresde there was a fayre castell, and the towne great and profytable; howbeit, the towne of Grave was better. This the duke of Guerles dyd, to the entent to have a juste tytle to kepe the towne of Grave agaynst the Brabansoys. The duches of Brabant, and the Brabansoys, said howe the lorde of Bruke had it but to pledge, and that they myght quyte it out whan they wolde: but the duke of Guerles sayd naye therto. By reason wherof the warre moved; so that in the moneth of May, the Brabansoys came and layde syege to the towne of Grave, with many lordes, knyghtes, and squyers, and with the puyssaunce of other good townes in Brabante. And thyder they brought engyns, springals, and other habylimentes of warre; they were a xl. thousande, one and other; there was skrymysshynge dayly. The towne of Grave standeth on the ryver of Muese, on the syde of Brabante, and there is a bridge over the ryver to go into the countrey of Guerles. At this siege every thynge was plenty, and as good chepe of every thynge, as though they had been before Brusels. Every day there was skrymysshynge at the barryers of Grave, of suche as wolde adventure themselfe; sometyme they were put abacke, and sometyme they drove their enemyes into their towne, as chaunce of adventure fell. The duke of Guerles was well infourmed of this siege. He laye a foure leages fro Nymarse,[5] and wrote oftentymes into Englande, where he trusted to have socoure by reason of the Englysshe army,

[1] *Gangelt Vucht and Millen.*

[2] *Cuyck.*

[3] *Bommel.*

[4] *Licque.*

[5] *Nimeguen.*

CAP. CXXII wherof the erle of Arundell was capytayne on the see, as sone as wynde and wether wyll serve them to come to Guerles, to reyse the syege before Grave. The duke of Guerles knewe well that the towne of Grave was strong and well fortyfyed, so that he thought it coulde nat be wonne by none assaute, but outher by trayson or by treatye. He trusted theym of Grave to be sure and faythfull to hym. Thus the siege endured longe before Grave, and the erle of Arundels army was on the see, and tooke no lande, but styll kepte on the fronters of Normandy, so that the Normans fro agaynst Mounte saynte Mychell, and downe alonge to Depe, to saynt Valery, and to Croty, were nat well assured wherto they shulde take hede. The portes and havens of Normandy were refresshed by the Frenche kynge, with good men of armes and crosebowes, to resyste agaynste all parelles. And by the marshall of Blankewyll[1] was sette in the towne of Carentyne, standynge on the see, whiche before of olde tyme pertayned to the herytage of kynge Charles of Naverre, the lorde of Ambre, and the lorde Coucy, two gret lordes of Normandy. And the constable of Fraunce toke the towne of saynte Malo, and the towne of saynte Mathewes. And as soone as they knewe that the Englysshemen were on the see, they sette men into those townes in the name of the Frenche kyng. In this season they thought surely to have open warre with the duke of Bretayne; for the knyghtes and squyers sayde that the armye on the see of the Englysshmen were sente thyder for none other purpose, but sente for by the duke of Bretayne to lande in his countrey. They sayd it was none other lykely, for alwayes the shyppes kepte on the coste of Bretaygne, without force of wether sometyme caused them to departe: yet alwayes brevely they retourned agayne to the same coste.

Howe the Brabansoys layde siege to the towne of Grave.

[1] *Blainville.*

Ye have herde here before howe the duke of Lancastre was departed out of the realmes of Castyle, and Portugale. The imagynacyons that he had, turned hym to great dyspleasure, for he sawe well his busynesse was sore troubled and darked, as fortune oftentymes falleth in sondrie persons, somtyme good, somtyme yvell, whan it is lest thought on. For whan the duke of Lancastre departed out of the realme of Englande, acompanyed with good men of armes and

CAP. CXXII

Howe the Brabansoys layde siege to the towne of Grave.

archers, he thought than to have sped otherwise than he dyde. He sawe and herde howe that in xv. dayes he had loste all Galyce, whiche was a long season or he had won it, the space of xvi. wekes; and besyde that his men deed and sparcled abrode, some here and some there, and hoped of no conforte out of Englande, for the Englysshmen were wery of the warre of Spaygne: they thought it over long and farre of fro them. So the duke of Lancastre thought his busynesse in a harde case, seyng no comforte: he spake lytell but he thought moche more. In his ymaginacyon he lyconed his journey to the voiage that the duke of Anjou made into the realme of Naples. For whan he departed out of the realme of Fraunce, he was well furnysshed of all maner of thyng, and wente with great richesse, puissaunce, and a great nombre of noble men of armes, knightes and squiers; and at the ende all were slayne and lost. Thus the duke of Lancastre reckoned his voyage to come to nothynge, by reason of suche disconforte as he had. The erle of Foiz, who was in his countre of Bierne, and was right sage and ymaginatyve, sayd and accompted the duke of Lancastres vyage but lost, as in recoveryng of the realme of Castyle, whiche he chalenged. The duke of Lancastre, who was a sage and a wise prince, and valyaunt amonge all his disconfytures, yet somtyme he toke conforte to hymselfe. I shall shewe you howe, and by what meanes.

He sawe well he had a fayre doughter by the lady Custaunce his wyfe, doughter to done Peter, kyng of Castyle, in whose right and clayme he made his warre in Castyle. He thought, thoughe fortune were agaynst hym at that tyme, yet it myght tourne good to his doughter, who was fayre and yonge, for she had ryght to the heritage of Castyle, by reason of her mother, and thought that some valyaunt man of Fraunce wolde be gladde to covet to have her in maryage, as well for the right that she hadde to the realme of Castyle, as for her hyghe lynage. For it myght well be sayde, that her extraction was of the hyghest lynage of Christendome. Wherfore the duke of Lancastre wolde gladly have had some treatie of mariage with some nobleman of Fraunce. He knewe well the Frenche kyng had a yong brother called the duke of Towrayne, who he thought shulde

CAP. CXXII
Howe the Brabansoys layde siege to the towne of Grave.

be able to recover his doughters ryght in Castyle, for he knewe well that the puyssaunce of Fraunce helde in his adversaries in the herytage of Castile. Wherfore he thought, that if they wolde take his parte, they myght lightly putte his doughter in possessyon of the realme of Castyle, if he myght marry her to the Frenche kynges brother.

CAP. CXXIII

Howe the duke of Berrey sent letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon, and howe the duke sent the copye of the same letters into Foiz, and into Naver, to thentent to have them publysshed in Spayne. And howe the duke of Bretayn demaunded counsayle of his men in all his busynesse.

ON this ymaginacyon rested the duke of Lancastre, nat all onely on the duke of Towrayne, but also on the duke of Berrey. For, as ye have herde here before, the duke of Berrey and his sonne were widowers, bothe their wyves deed. This mater, I, the auctour of this boke, knewe of suretie; for the same tyme I was on the fronters of Berrey, and Poitou, in the countie of Bloys, with the right honorable lorde Guy erle of Bloys, by whom and at his desyre I folowed the contynuaunce of this historie. The duke of Berrey set all his entencion and pleasure to be agayne maryed, and oftentymes he wolde say among his men, howe that a lorde was lytell worthe without a lady, nor another man without a wyfe. Than some of his counsayle sayd to hym, Sir, marry agayne your son, therby your house shal be the more joyfull. A, sirs, quod the duke, my sonne is yong. Why, sir, quod they, have ye nat sene howe the erle of Bloyes hath maryed his sonne, who is as yonge as he, to your doughter? That is trouthe, quod the duke, let se, name a wyfe for him. Sir, quod they, we shall name the duke of Lancasters doughter. With that worde the duke studyed a season, and gave none answere, and ymagined sore; and than to suche as were of his secrete counsayle, he

sayd, Ye speke to mary Johan my sonne to my cosyn, the duke of Lancasters doughter; by saynt Denyce ye have well devysed, but she shulde be a good wyfe for ourselfe, and shortely I shall write to our cosyn the duke of Lancastre; he is at Bayone, as I am enformed, I wolde sende hym worde howe I shall sende shortely to hym some of my counsayle to treate of this maryage; but I saye, nat for my sonne, I shall marry hym in some other place. Whan his counsayle herde hym saye so, they smyled. Than the duke demaunded wherat they smiled. Sir, quod they, we laught at that ye had rather have a good tourne yourselfe than your sonne shulde. By my faythe, quod the duke, and good reason why: for my fayre cosyn of Lancastre wyll nat so soone agre to my sonne as to myselfe. Than incontynent letters were written into highe Gascoyne, to Bayon, to the duke of Lancastre, and sente by honourable messangers. Whan they came to the duke they delyvered their letters. The duke toke and reed them; and whan he had well parceyved theffecte of the mater, he was right joyfull and made good chere to the messangers, and shewed that he was well content therwith, and wrote agayne by them other letters ryght amiably, certifyeng the duke of Berrey howe he was right joyfull of his letters. These messangers returned, and founde their lorde in Poitou, preparyng hymselfe to go into Fraunce: for the Frenche kyng and the duke of Burgoyne had sent for hym, for to commune of the state of Bretayne. Than he opyned the letters that his cosyn the duke of Lancastre had sente hym, and had joye of the answere, and thought surely to pursue the matter to effecte, but he myght nat leave his voyage into Fraunce, and so went thyder as shortely as he coulde. Thanne he wrote to a knyght of his, called sir Helyon of Lignacke, who as than was seneschall of Rochell, and of the countre of Rocheloys, commaundyng hym that incontynent on the sight of his letters, he to sette all thyng there in good order, and than to come to hym to Parys withoute fayle. Whan sir Helyon of Lignac, who was at Rochell, understode those tidynges, and parceyved by the duke of Berreys letters, howe he was sent for in all hast, he made hym redy, and in his absence he made two capitaynes at Rochell, two valyaunt men to be governers of

CAP. CXXIII

Howe the duke of Berrey sent letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon.

CAP. CXXIII

Howe the duke of Berrey sent letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon.

all Rocheloys; they were of the countre of Beaulse, the one called sir Peter of Yon, and the other sir Peter of Tayllepy. This done, sir Helyon tooke his waye into Fraunce the shortest way he coude, for he knewe nat what the duke wolde do with hym, that he sente for hym so hastely.

Nowe let us somwhat speke of the duke of Lancastre, who was at Bayon, and had great ymaginacions of the busynesse that his cosyn the duke of Berrey had written to hym of. First, he wolde nat that it shulde be hydden, but rather publysshed abrode, to the entent that his ennemyes shulde knowe it, and specially in the house of kynge Johan of Castyle. And so the duke of Lancastre wrote to dyvers, and sent them the copye of the duke of Berreys letters, shewynge by his writyng that he had great affectyon to treate of the maryage bytwene his doughter and the duke of Berry. First, he sent his letters to the erle of Foiz, bycause he knewe well that to the erles house repared[1] all maner of gentylmen, knightes and squyers, as well commyng and goynge to the kyng of Spayne, as on pylgrimage to saynt James. Also he wrote to the kyng of Naver, who had to his wyfe the kyng of Castels suster, and had by her many chyldren, to thentent that the brute therof shulde the better be certifyed in the kyng of Castels court, rather than by flyeng wordes. Also the duke wrote of this mater to the kyng of Portugale; but he wrote no worde therof into England, to the kyng, nor to his bretherne, for he knewe well he shulde have no thanke for his enterprice, as they were nat content indede, as ye shall here after, whan the mater requyreth it. In the meane season we shall speke of other maters, as of the duke of Bretayne, the mater lyeth there after.

[1] *prepared* P.

Whan the duke of Berrey was come into Fraunce to the kyng, and to the duke of Burgoyne, his brother, and to other of his counsayle, as the bysshoppe of Langers, the bysshoppe of Laon, the lorde of Coucy, and other barons of Fraunce, than beyng there of the kynges secrete counsayle, they had many metynges to commune toguyder, as well of the state of Guerles, whyder the kyng had great affection to go, as of the duke of Bretaygne, whom they coude bring to no reason, nor wolde nat obey, nor wyste nat whom to

CAP. CXXIII

Howe the duke of Berrey sent letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon.

sende to hym that he wolde beleve; for there hadde ben many valyant men and sage with hym, but all that aveyled nothyng, for they coude bring nothyng to passe as they desyred, wherof the kyng and his counsaile was sore troubled. For they understode well that the duke of Bretaygne had all that wynter provyded and fortifyed his townes and castelles, and shewed howe by lykelyhode he hadde rather have warre than peace. And the wysest of the counsayle sayd, We speke of goynge into Almayne, but we ought rather to speke of goynge into Bretaygne, and to putte downe the duke there, who is so highe mynded that he wyll here no reasone, and is alwayes agaynst the crowne of Fraunce, and disdayneth to be obedyent therunto: we shal have no reasone of hym without we force him therto; for and if he be suffred he wyll be to presumptuous: he feareth no man, nor he loveth nor prayseth no man but hymselfe; this is a clere case, if the kynge go into Almaygne, and leave his realme bare of men, as he muste do if he go thyder, the duke of Bretaigne than wyll suffre the Englisshemen to come into his countrey, and so entre into Fraunce. The apparaunce herof is great, for there is allredy a great army of archers on the see, and they kepe styll on the coste of Bretaygne, for if wynde and wether putte theym of, yet ever they drawe thyder agayne, and lyeth there at ancre, be semyng taryeng tyll the warre be opyn: wherfore we thynke it were good yet to sende agayne to the duke, the bisshoppe of Langers and the erle of saynt Poule, for the duke and the erle have maryed two susters. Naye, sirs, nat so, quod maister Yves, who was a very Breton: if ye wyll sende to the duke agayne, ye can nat sende one more agreable to hym than the lorde of Coucy, for in lykewyse they have maryed two susters, and have loved marveylously togyder, and have ever written eche to other, Fayre brother; and with the lorde of Coucy sende whom ye wyll. Well, quod the duke of Burgoyne, maister Yves,[1] sithe ye have begon, name you the rest. Syr, with right a good wyll, sithe it pleaseth you; with the lorde of Coucy sende sir Johan of Vyen, and the lorde de la Ryver; these be suche thre lordes as shall bring hym to reason, if he wyll ever come to any. Thus let it be, quod the dukes of Berrey, and of Burgoyne; than

[1] *Yves Derian.*

CAP. CXXIII

Howe the duke of Berrey sent letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon.

they were apoynted and charged what they shulde saye, and wherupon they shulde grounde their mater, and to handell hym by fayre wordes. Thus they taryed a certayne space or they departed fro Parys. The duke of Bretayne knewe well of their commyng or they departed fro Parys, but he coude nat tell whan: and he sawe well the mater touched highlye in that the lorde of Coucy came. The duke had many ymaginacyons on that mater, and discovered his mynde to certayne of his counsayle, as the lorde of Mountbouchier; and demaunded counsayle of hym and of other, and sayd: Sirs, I here as the brute ronneth, that the duke of Lancastre shulde mary his doughter into Fraunce, to the duke of Berrey, and the mater is so forwarde, that sir Helyon of Lignacke is goyng to the duke to Bayon, and the duke greatly enclyneth to this maryage, wherof I have great marveyle, for my fayre brother of Lancastre hath nat written to me therof, so that I knowe nothyng of the mater but by heryng saye; he was nat accustomed so to do, for in all his maters touchyng Fraunce, he was wont to write to me. Than his counsayle answered and said, Sir, if it be thus, it must behove you to chaunge your purpose, or els it shal be greatly to your losse and daunger, and bring your countre into warre, whiche were good to eschewe: for ye nede nat to make warre sythe ye maye be in peace, yea, and desyred therto. Also my lady your wyfe is great with chylde, the whiche ye ought to regarde. The kynge of Naver can but lytell ayde you, for he hath ynoughe to do for hymselfe. Also the duke of Lancastre, who is a sage and a valyant prince, as it is sayd, shall mary his doughter to the duke of Berrey. This shal be a gret begynnyng to entre into a treatie of peace bytwene Englande and Fraunce, or elles a long truse; and by reason therof ye shall se at the ende the kyng of Castell putte out of his realme, as they have kepte hym in, and the rather if the duke of Lancastre and the Englysshemen be agreed with hym. And also it is of trouthe, that the lorde Coucy, [the] admyrall of Fraunce, and the lorde de la Ryver, are commyng hyder. Ye maye well knowe that is for some great cause touchynge the kyng, who busyeth hymselfe for his constable, and for his realme. And by lykelyhode the kynge and his uncles wyll knowe presisely

what ye wyll do, and wheder ye wyll kepe styll your opinyon or nat; and if ye kepe styll your purpose, it is to be ymagined that the great armye that is prepared for to go into Guerles shall tourne agaynst you. Nowe remembre well what conforte ye are likely to have yf ye have warre with Fraunce, whiche ye are moost lykely to have, if the duke of Lancastre marry his doughter into Fraunce, as be semyng he wyll, for he can nat bestowe her better to recover her herytage. Also ye knowe well that the moost parte of the prelates, barons, knyghtes, and squyers, and cyties and good townes, are in maner agaynst you. Therfore sir, sithe ye demaunde counsayle of us, we saye that ye had never so moche cause to advyse you, as ye have nowe; therfore putte to your hande to kepe well your herytage, whiche hath cost the shedyng of so moche blode, sweate, and traveyle, and refrayne somwhat your yre and hatered. We knowe well ye beare great dyspleasure to sir Olyver Clysson; he hath done you many displeasures, and ye hym, and paradventure may do, though he be nat lyke unto you. The Frenche kynge and his uncles wyll maynteygne hym agaynst you, for he shall be constable; and if kynge Charles that laste dyed, who loved hym so well, hadde lyved, and ye done as ye have done, we knowe well it shulde rather have cost the kynge halfe his realme, thanne he wolde have suffred it. But kynge Charles his sonne is yonge: he taketh nat so good hede to all maters nowe, as he wolde do tenne yeres here after: he cometh on, and ye shall go. If ye entre into a newe warre agaynst the Frenchemen, besyde all that we have shewed you, ye shall do it without our counsayle, and without the counsayle of any man that loveth you. It behoveth you to dissymule whatsoever ye purpose to do here after. What nede you to kepe the thre castelles parteynyng to sir Olyver of Clyssons herytage, after the maner ye toke them? Wheder it be so ye have peace or warre, they shall coste you more the kepynge of theym in thre yeres, than they shall profyte you in twelve yeres. Sir, delyver them agayne out of your handes without any desyre, and whan the renome therof spredeth abrode, as there is nothynge done but it wyll be knowen, that without constreynt ye have delyvered them of your owne mynde, ye shall therby attemper

CAP. CXXIII

Howe the duke of Berrey sent letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon.

CAP. CXXIII and molifye every mannes displeasure. And it shall greatlye please the duke of Burgoyne, who ye knowe well hath nat done so moche agaynst you as he myght, in all your busynesse, and that is by the meanes of the good lady his wyfe, your cosyn; she hath many fayre chyldren, who are nexte of blode to you. Therfore sir, consyder fro whens ye came and are issued: departe nat farre of fro thens, that ye ought to approche nere, it were follye; in Englande ye hadde never thyng to do. Also the Englysshmen have ynoughe to do amonge themselfe. They shewe you fayre semblaunt of love, and promyse to do for you all that they maye, but they do it for their owne advauntage and for nothynge elles: ye have proved them or this; ye were norisshed amonge them in your youthe.

Howe the duke of Berrey sent letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon.

CAP. CXXIV

Howe the duke of Bretayne delyvered up the thre castelles of sir Olyver Clissons: and howe he receyved joyously the lorde of Coucy and his company, ambassadours fro the Frenche kyng: and howe the duke of Lancastre made grete chere to sir Helyon of Lignacke, seneschall of Xaynton, ambassadoure fro the duke of Berrey.

WHAN the duke of Bretayne had herde his counsayle speke, and cast so many reasonable doubtes, he was abasshed, and stoode styll a season without spekynge of any worde: leanyng in a wyndowe lokyng downe into the courte, his counsayle beyng aboute hym, he stode in a great study. At last he tourned and said, Sirs, I se well that ye have highly counsayled me, and I se well I have nede of nothynge so moche as of good counsayle, but howe may any love be norisshed, where is nothyng but hate? Howe maye I love Olyver of Clysson, that hath done me so many dyspleasures? Wherfore of all the thynges that ever I dyde in this worlde, I moost repente me of that I dyd nat put hym to dethe whan I had hym in my castell of Ermyne.

CAP. CXXIV

Howe the duke of Bretayne delyvered up the thre castelles of sir Olyver Clissons.

In the name of God, sir, quod they of his counsayle, if he had ben slayne; but ye ought nat to have raunsomed hym, nor taken his herytage. For Johan of Bretayne, and the vycount of Rohers[1] sonne, be his heyres, and herytours to all his landes, for his doughters are their wyves. Wherfore they wolde have entred into the heritage as their owne, for their resort is into the Parlyament chambre at Parys, for ye have receyved allredy great blame in Fraunce for that ye have done, and kepynge of the thre castelles. The constable hath entred his quarell and plee agaynst you in the parlyament house of Parys, and there sentence wyll be gyven agaynst you, for there is none to answere for you agaynst any artycle that the constable hath layde agaynst you: than sir Olyver of Clysson and his heyres shall have juste cause and quarell to make warre agaynst you in his owne tytell. And if the kynge with other of your owne countrey of Bretayne wyll make you warre, and ayde your ennemyes, ye have nede thane to have more puyssaunce to defende you, thane we can se that ye are lyke to have; wherfore, sir, while the plee hangeth, ye were best to delyver agayne the thre castelles and have thanke, than to abyde the sentence to be gyven agaynst you. Sir, agre for suche dommages as ye have done as well as ye canne, therby shall you wade out of all sclaundre, the whiche a prince ought to dout for his dishonour; and sir, conferme you to peace, and contynue in love with them that ye ought to do, that is the Frenche kynge, your soveraygne and naturall lorde, and my lorde the duke of Burgoyne, and your cosyns his chyldren. Ye may take ensample by that ye have sene in youre dayes; your cosyn germayne therle of Flaunders, who was a myghtie prince and a sage, yet by insydentes in thende of his dayes there fell to hym suche marveylous adventures, that without he had humyled hymselfe to the Frenche kynge, to his uncles, and to the nobles of the realme, he had loste his herytage, and by their ayde and helpe he recovered it. Well, sirs, quod the duke, sithe I have demaunded counsayle it behoveth me to take it, and I accepte your wordes that ye have spoken.

[1] *Rohan.*

This mater wente so forwarde, that the duke of Bretaygne, who was in possessyon of the thre castelles of the constables,

CAP. CXXIV

Howe the duke of Bretayne delyvered upthe thre castelles of sir Olyver Clissons.

as ye have herde here before, he sent for his men that was in them, and rydde his handes clene of them; and there were stablysshed men in them for the constable. But this restytuicion was nat suffycient in the opynion of the Frenche kynges counsayle, without the duke restored agayne the money that he hadde taken of the constable; and besyde that, the duke to come personally to the kyng to Parys, to make his excuse before all the peres of the realme, and to abyde on the mendes makynge, suche as the kyng and his counsayle shulde judge by good delyberacion. And whan the knowledge of the restytucion of these castels was come to the lorde of Coucye and to the other lordes that were apoynted to go into Bretaygne to the duke, than the lorde of Coucy sayde to his company, Sirs, we have the lesse to do; I beleve the duke wyll gyve credence to us whan he heareth us speke. I was enfourmed that before these thre barons departed fro Parys, the dukes of Berrey and of Bourgoyne had them in counsayle, and sayde, Sirs, ye muste entreate the duke of Bretaygne with fayre and swete wordes, and nat rigorously, and shewe hym howe the duke of Bourgoyne wolde that he shulde come to Parys to the kyng: but at leest shewe hym howe he muste come to the halfe way to the towne of Bloyes, and there we shall mete with hym and speke toguyder. These thre lordes said they wolde do as they were commaunded. They rode forthe and came to the cytie of Rennes in Bretayne, and there demaunded tidinges of the duke; and it was shewed them howe he was at Wannes, and than they rode thyder. Their commynge was anon knowen in the dukes court, for they had sent before their herbyngers to take up their lodgynges. The duke had about hym his counsayle and great lordes, suche as he trusted most, the more honourably to receyve these lordes. Whan they entred into the towne of Wannes they had good chere, and lordes and knyghtes of the dukes mette them, and specially the lorde de la Wall. There they alyghted at their lodgynges and refresshed themselfe, and after mounted on their horses and rode to the dukes castell called la Mote, where they founde the duke, who came agaynst them and receyved them right joyously: and sayd howe they were all right hertely welcome: and toke

CAP. CXXIV

Howe the duke of Bretayne delyvered up the thre castelles of sir Olyver Clissons.

the lorde of Coucy by the hande, and made hym good chere, and sayde, Fayre brother, ye be welcome; I am gladde to se you in Bretayne; I shall shewe you sporte of huntyng at hartes and flyeng with haukes or we departe asondre. Sir, quod the lorde of Coucy, I thanke you; I and my company shall be gladde to se it. There was shewed bytwene them great lykelyhode of love; and the duke brought hym to his chambre, sportyng and talkyng of many ydell matters, as lordes do often tymes whan they mete, and have nat sene toguyder longe before, they wyll fynde many sondrie pastymes. And specially I knewe four lordes, the best entertayners of all other that ever I knewe: that was the duke of Brabant, the erle of Foiz, the erle of Savoy, and in especiall the lorde of Coucy; for accordynge to myne advyse, in all goodly pastymes he was a soverayne maister, whiche brute he bare amonge all lordes and ladyes in Fraunce, in Englande, in Almaygne, in Lombardy, and in all places where as he had ben conversant; and in his tyme he had been sore traveyled and sene moche in the worlde, and also he was naturally enclyned to be gentyll. And thus whyle these lordes were mery talkynge toguyder, there was brought spyces and wyne, and so they dranke, and than toke their leaves and retourned to their lodgynges. Thus the mater went forthe the fyrst day, without makyng of any mencyon of any thyng that they were come for.

Nowe let us somwhat speke of sir Helyon of Lygnacke, whom the duke of Berrey hadde sent to the duke of Lancastre. The knyght came to Bayon, and alyghted at his lodgynge, and apparelled hymselfe to go and speke with the duke of Lancastre, who knewe well of his commyng, and sent right honourably two of his knyghtes to mete with hym, and they brought hym to the duke. And whan sir Helyon was in the dukes presens he kneled downe, and saluted hym as it aperteyned. The duke receyved hym ryght honourably, and tooke hym up in his armes, and toke hym by the hande, and ledde hym into his chambre, for he mette hym in the hall. Thanne the knyght delyvered his letters fro the duke of Berrey. The duke reed them, and thanne he drewe to sir Helyon, and the knight declared to him the cause of his commyng. Than the duke answered

CAP. CXXIV

Howe the duke of Bretayne delyvered up the thre castelles of sir Olyver Clissons.

right courtesly, and sayd, Sir, ye be right welcome, and sayd howe the mater was weyghtie that he was come for, wherfore it requyred counsaile and delyberacion. Thus sir Helyon taryed at Bayon with the duke of Lancastre more than a moneth, and alwayes he was served with fayre wordes. And the duke alwayes foded hym forthe and made semblant that he had great affection to treate for this mariage with the duke of Berrey: howebeit, the trouthe was contrary, for all that he shewed was but dissymulacion. And the cause that he was helde there so long with hym was for none other thing but that the brute therof myght ronne abrode, and specially into the realme of Castyle, for there lay all his affection. The duke sayde to sir Helyon, Sir, if I treat with the duke of Berrey to have my doughter in maryage, thane he must joyne with me with all his puysaunce to encounter myne adversaries of Spayne, if he wyll recover the heritage of my doughter, whom he shulde have to wyfe. Than sir Helyon sayd, Sir, I have no charge to confyrme any thynge so forwarde; but, sir, if it please you or I departe, ye maye write all your pleasure by me, and I shall returne and shewe my lorde the duke of Berrey all your entent, and I am sure, he hath suche affection to the mater, he wyll agree to every thynge that he may do by reason. I desyre no more, quod the duke of Lancastre. Thus sir Helyon of Lygnacke taryed a season at Bayon, and had good chere made hym by the dukes commaundement.

CAP. CXXV

Howe the kynge of Castyle sente his ambassadours to the duke of Lancastre to treate for a maryage, to be had bytwene his sonne and the dukes doughter; and howe, at the requeste of the duke of Berrey a truse was made by the duke of Lancastre in the countreys of Tholousyn and Rouergue.

TIDINGES came into the realme of Castyle into dyverse places, and specyally to kyng Johan of Castyle, and it was sayde to hym, Sir, ye knowe nothyng of the treatye that is bytwene the duke of Berrey and the duke of Lancastre. The duke of Berrey wolde have in maryage the lady Katheryne, doughter to the duke of Lancastre and to the lady Constance his wyfe. And if this maryage take effecte, as it is lyke to do, it shal be a great alyaunce, for the duke of Berrey is nowe as one of the chiefe rulers in the realme of Fraunce, and is uncle to the kyng: he shal be beleved whatsoever he saye or purpose to do, as it is reason, wheder it be by meanes of peace or longe truse. On the other parte, the duke of Lancastre is eldest of all his bretherne, that be uncles to the kyng: he shall also be beleved, for he is sage and puyssaunt, and by that it semeth the Englysshmen are wery of the warre. This maryage bytwene the duke of Lancastres doughter and the duke of Berrey is lykely to be a great meane to make a good peace bytwene Fraunce and Englande, and than shal we here sticke styll in the warre: for the duke of Lancastre wyll folowe and pursue his chalenge of the realme of Castyle, and the right that he hath by his wyfe he shall gyve it to his doughter, and so than shall we have warre bothe with Fraunce and Englande. These doutes were layde to the kynge of Castyle. And at that tyme all the Frenchmen that had served long in the realme of Castyle were retourned into Fraunce; and the chiefe of the kynge of Castyls counsayle sayd to hym, Sir, take hede to us, ye never had so great nede

CAP. CXXV
Howe the kynge of Castyle sente his ambassadours to the duke of Lancastre.

of good counsayle as ye have at this presente tyme; for, sir, a peryllous myst is lyke to be engendred bytwene you and the duke of Lancastre, and that shall come by the meanes of Fraunce. Howe so, quod the kyng, howe may that be? In the name of God, sir, quod they, the brute and renome spredeth throughe all this countrey and elsewhere howe the duke of Berrey shall mary the duke of Lancasters doughter; and, sir, ye maye be sure that shall nat be, but by the meanes of a great alyaunce, so that therby here after ye maye be as farre cast behynde by them as ye have ben avaunced. Whan the kyng of Castyle knewe those tidynges, he was right pensyve, and sawe well howe his counsayle shewed hym the trouthe. Than he demaunded counsayle of them that he trusted best, howe he shulde percever and deale in all his busynesse; and they counsayled hym well and truely, as the mater requyred, as I shall shewe you.

Ye knowe well, as ye have herde before in this hystorie howe kynge Henry of Spaygne made a peace with Peter kynge of Arragone, on the full poyntment that the kyng of Arragon shulde gyve his doughter in maryage to the kynge of Castyle. This was Johan, who is nowe kyng; and by this conjunction of maryage they were in peace and their realmes. Of this Johan, sonne to Henry, and of the doughter of Arragon, there came a sonne. Than dyed the lady; and after the dethe of kynge Henry of Castyle, this kyng Johan, by the counsaile of his men, maryed agayne the lady Beatrice, doughter to Fernando kynge of Portugale; and they hadde a sonne called Henry, he was but yonge. Than the counsayle of Castyle sayd to the kyng, Sir, we se in all these doutes but one remedy. What is that, quod kyng Johan. Sir, we shall shewe you, quod they; your yong sonne Henry may well breke this maryage bytwene the duke of Berrey and the duke of Lancasters doughter: for it is to be beleved that the duke of Lancastre and the duches his wyfe had rather marchant with you and with your sonne than with the duke of Berrey. In the name of God, quod the kynge, ye saye well; I shall herken to this mater; I thynke our people wyll lightly enclyne therunto: by that mariage we shulde have peace with Englande, bothe by lande and by water; therfore, sirs, chose out them that were mete to go

CAP. CXXV

Howe the kynge of Castyle sente his ambassadours to the duke of Lancastre.

in our name, to treate on this mater with the duke of Lancastre. Sir, quod they, it is requisyte that they be discrete persones, and that the matter be wisely handeled, and in the secretest maner that maye be, to the entente that ye ronne nat in the indignacyon of the Frenche kynge. For nowe a dayes envy rayneth greatly, and sooner reporte is made of yvell than of good, and the yvell sooner reysed up than the good. For if they of Fraunce knowe that ye treate with the duke of Lancastre, the Frenche kynge and his counsayle wyll demaunde wherupon ye treate with the duke, by reasone of the great alyaunce made in tyme past bytwene your father and Fraunce; and also the Frenchemen have alwayes susteyned your warre. Wherfore, sir, your treaties must be done secretely; and sende to the duke sage men and secrete, and well enstructed of your busynesse; and sende nat forthe with boost and pride tyll every thynge be in a sure case. It is true, quod the kynge; name them that be mete to go on that voyage. Sir, quod they, sende your confessour frere Fernando of Farre[1] and the bysshoppe of Geghene,[2] who was sometyme confessour to the kynge your father, and Peter Gardelopes, who is well languaged. I am content, quod the kynge, lette them be sente for, and well enfourmed what they shall say: they wolde or this tyme have treated for a peace, but we wolde natte here them; for the duke of Lancastre wolde none otherwyse, but that I shulde have forsaken the crowne of Castyle, the whiche I wyll never do. Than these thre were sent for to Burgus in Spayne, where the kyng was. Than it was sayd to them by the kynge and his privye counsayle: Sirs, ye muste go to Bayon to the duke of Lancastre: and shewed them all their instructions. They sayde, they were redy to accomplysshe the kynges commaundement: and so sette forthe on their journey, nat in no gret estate, but symply, for they wolde nat be knowen that they wente to the duke of Lancastre as ambassadours to treate for any alyaunce, for they knewe nat howe to spede. Thus they entred into Naverre and came to Pampylona, and there founde the kynge and the quene. First, they came thyder bycause the quene was suster to the kynge of Castyle. There they hadde good chere, but they nouther shewed the kyng nor the quene where about

[1] *Soria.*
[2] *Segovia.*

CAP. CXXV

Howe the kynge of Castyle sente his ambassadours to the duke of Lancastre.

they wente, and so passed thorough the countrey by the mountayns of Roseaulx[1] and entred into Bisquay, and so rode tyll they came to Bayon.

Whane they were come to the towne of Bayon, sir Helyon of Lignacke was styll there, who was sente fro the duke of Berrey, as ye have herde here before. But after the commynge of the Castilyans they taryed nat longe after, for frere don Fernando, the kynge of Castyls confessour, came to the duke of Lancastre, for he knewe hym better than any of the other. He began somwhat to breke the mater, and to shewe the cause of their commynge. The duke opyned his eares to his wordes, and was gladde to here those tidynges, and sayde, Frere Fernando, ye be welcome. And the same day sir Helyon of Lignacke was delyvered. And, as I understode, the duke accorded the same tyme to a truse on all partes, for suche as made warre for hym in Acquitayne, Bygore, Thoulous, and other place, to endure unto the firste day of Maye, in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and nyne; this truse to contynue all the countrey to the ryver of Loyre and no further. This truese was concluded at the request of the duke of Berrey, to the entent that he myght sende in and out to the duke of Lancastre: for before they of the fortresses of Mortaygne on the see, of Boutevyll, of Rouergue, of Quercyn, of Pyergourt, and they on the ryver of Garon, were people without mercy; they wolde knowe no manne; wherfore these two dukes accorded to this truese, the whiche was well kepte. Whan sir Helyon of Lignacke departed fro the duke there was grete love shewed, for the duke said howe the mater pleased him right well. Howebeit, the duke sayd playnlye he wolde never marry his doughter into Fraunce, without the consent and accorde of the kyng of Englande his nephue, and also by the agrement of the counsayle of Englande; but he sayd, he trusted so to order the mater, that all shulde do well. Thus sir Helyon of Lignacke departed and returned into Fraunce, and shewed the duke of Berrey his letters that the duke of Lancastre had sent him, and shewed hym by mouthe all the maner howe every thyng wente; and so the duke was well content.

Nowe lette us speke of the kynge of Castyls ambassadours,

[1] *Roncevaux.*

to whome the duke of Lancastre gave good eare, and so dyd the duches, for all their hertes and ymaginacions lay ever on their chalenge of Spayn.

CAP. CXXV

Howe the kynge of Castyle sente his ambassadours to the duke of Lancastre.

The duke made these ambassadours good chere; they came before the duke and the duchesse, and there shewed their message. First they treted for peace, and there the frere preached in the dukes chambre, the duchesse present, and she shewed the duke the entent of all his wordes, for the duke understode hym nat parfitely: the lady understode hym well, for in her youthe she was brought up in Spaygne. The duke, for all that the mater of their commyng was pleasaunt to him, yet he discovered nat to hastely his entente, but sayd, Sirs, it wyll be very harde to make peace in that place, where as great hatered and warre is resydent, and specially with them that be disheryted and kepte from their herytage: sayeng, howe he wolde nat leave the warre withoute he myght have the crowne of Castyle, the whiche he sayde was his right. The frere and the bisshoppe sayd, Sir, bytwene your right and the ryght of the kynge our lorde there is but one meane, and we have founde it, if it may please you. What waye is that, quod the duke. Sir, quod they, it is this: ye have by my lady youre wyfe a feyre yonge lady to marry, and the kynge of Castile, our soverayne lorde, hath a feyre yong sonne; if they two myght mary toguyder, the realme of Castyle shulde be in peace, and all that is your right shulde retourne to you. And, sir, better can ye nat bestowe your heyre, who is discended of the right lyne of Castyle: the entent ye arme you, fyght, adventure yourselfe, and traveyle youre body, is all onely for the right of your heyre. That is trewe, quod the duke; but than I wyll that the costes that I have susteyned in the pursute there be recompensed; for I wyll ye knowe it hath cost me and the realme of Englande fyve hundred thousande frankes; wherof I wolde gladly se som recoveraunce. Sir, quod the frere, if our treatie be agreable to you, we trust to fynde such a meane that the mater shall take good effect. Well, quod the duke, ye be welcome; and howsoever it be, or howesoever it shal be, or I retourne into Englande, outher into Castyle or into Fraunce, I shall mary my doughter, for I have dyvers offres moved unto me; but maters of so great

CAP. CXXV

Howe the kynge of Castyle sente his ambassadours to the duke of Lancastre.

a weyght are nat lightly concluded at the first tyme: for my doughter whome I repute as rightfull enheritour to Spayne, I wyll knowe him well that shall have her in maryage. That is but reason, quod the frere. Thus as I have shewed you this treatie began bytwene the duke of Lancastre and these parties, as well of Castyle as of Fraunce. He made every partie good chere, and made no full answere; but in his ymaginacion the treatie of Spayne, the kynges sonne to mary his doughter, semed best to his purpose, bicause in tyme to come his doughter shulde be quene of Castyle; also the duches his wyfe enclyned moost to that treatie.

Nowe let us leave to speke of the duke of Lancastre and of all these treatyse, and retourne to speke of the duke of Bretaygne.

CAP. CXXVI

Howe the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne departed to go to Bloys; and howe the duke of Bretayne came thyder; and howe the dukes dyde so moche that they had hym to Parys in maner agaynst his wyll.

AS I have shewed you here before, the duke of Bretayne made good chere to the French ambassadours, and specially to the lorde of Coucy. For as I was enformed, he was the chiefe that brake the duke fro his purpose, by reason of his fayre and swete wordes: howebeit, the lorde Johan of Vyen and the lorde de la Ryver dyde ryght well their devoyre. But often tymes great princes and lordes wyll soner be entreated by one man rather than by another. Moche payne it was to cause the duke of Bretayne to agre to go to the towne of Bloys, to mete there the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne: but he was brought thyder by fayre wordes; and he sayde, surely he wolde go no further thanne to the towne of Bloys; and the lorde of Coucy sayd he desyred nothynge elles. These thre lordes were with the duke of Bretaygne certayne dayes, and than

toke their leaves and retourned into Fraunce, and shewed the dukes of Berry and of Burgoyne howe they hadde spedde. Therupon these two dukes made them redy to go to Bloyes, to mete there with the duke of Bretaygne, and sente thyder before to make provisyon as apertayned. Firste thyder came the duke of Berrey, and he was lodged in the castell, and there he founde the countesse, her sonne, and her doughter: they receyved hym honourably. The erle Guye of Bloys was as than in his owne countrey at the castell Reygnaulte, and made no greate counte of the commynge of the duke of Bretaygne; he thought it sufficyent that his wife and chyldren were there. Than thyder came the duke of Burgoyne with a goodly trayne, and in his company came sir Wylliam of Heynaulte and his sonne, erle of Ostrevante, and Johan of Burgoyne, sonne to the duke called erle of Nevers: the duke lodged also in the castell, and there helde his estate. Than after came the duke of Bretaygne, with no great trayne other than of his house: he passed nat a thre hundred horses, for his entencyon was, that whan he had ones sene the two dukes and spoken with them, to retourne into his owne countrey, without goynge into Fraunce. But the entente of the other two dukes was otherwise, for they said whyder he wolde or nat he shulde go to Parys.

CAP. CXXVI

Howe the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne departed to go to Bloys.

The duke of Bretaygne hymselfe lodged in the castell of Bloyes, in a chanons house of Saynt Savyour; and his men lodged downe in the towne, and so dyd the other of all the dukes servauntes; but the lordes laye in the castell, the whiche was fayre, great, and stronge, one of the fayrest castelles in all the realme of Fraunce. There these dukes made good chere togyder, and shewed great love, and they thanked the duke of Bretayne of his commyng to the towne of Bloyes. And the duke answered and sayde, howe he was come thyder for the love of them with great payne, for he fayned hymselfe nat well at ease. Than these two dukes fell in communynge with the duke of Bretayne, shewyng hym sithe he was come so farr forwarde, that he had done nothyng without he went to Parys to se the kynge, who greatly desyred to se hym. The duke of Bretaygne began greatlye to excuse hymselfe of that voyage, and layde

CAP. CXXVI

Howe the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne departed to go to Bloys.

many reasons, and sayd howe he was nat well at his ease to make so longe a journey, nor also he was nat accompanyed therafter. Than he was swetely answered, that savyng his displeasure, he shulde nede no great trayne to go se his soveraygne lorde; and as for his rydinge, he shulde lacke nouther chayre nor lytter to labour at his ease, for they said he was bounde to do homage to the kynge, for as than he had nat done it before. The duke sayd, excusynge hymselfe, that whan the kynge were come to his laufull age, and had the hole realme in his owne governaunce, than he wolde come to Parys, or whyder it shulde please the kynge, and than do his homage acordyng to reason. The other dukes sayd, that the kynge was of age and wysdome suffycient to receyve homage, and howe that all other lordes of the realme, excepte he, had done their homage and made reliefe, affyrmynge howe the kynge was xxi. yere of age. Whan the duke of Bretaygne sawe howe his excuses coude nat be taken nor herde, sayde, Well, sirs, if I go to Parys it shal be greatlye agaynst my wyll and to my prejudyce. For whan I come there, I shall fynde and se daylye before me sir Olyver of Clyssone, whom I can nat love nor never dyde, nor he me, who shall attempte me with rygorous wordes. My lordes, regarde well what inconvenyentes shall ensue of my goynge thyder. Sir, quod the duke of Burgoyne, fayre cosyn, have ye no dout therin, for we shall swere solempnely to you, that withoute it shall be your owne pleasure ye shall nouther se nor speke with the constable, nor with Johan of Mountforde, as longe as ye shall be there. Of this, sir, ye shall be sure: but ye shall se the kynge, who desyreth to se you and other lordes, knyghtes, and squyers of Fraunce, who shall make you good chere; and whanne ye have done that ye loke for, ye shall retourne agayne without peryll or dommage. Wherto shulde I make longe processe; so moche the duke of Bretayne was desyred with faire wordes, that he consented to go to Parys, on the promyse that the constable nor Johan of Mountforde shulde nat come in his presence; the whiche the dukes sware faithfully to upholde, and therupon he promysed to go to Parys. A fyve dayes these dukes were at Bloyes, and eche of them feested other ryght nobly, and the countesse and her chyldren in lyke maner.

And whan every thyng was accomplysshed the two dukes toke leave of the duke of Bretaygne and retourned to Parys. But sir Wylliam of Heynaulte retourned nat to Parys with the duke of Burgoyne with his faire father,[1] but rode first with the countesse of Bloyes, who made hym right good chere, and taryed there a thre dayes, and than toke his leave and retourned into Fraunce by the Castell Dune[2] and Bonyvall.

CAP. CXXVI

Howe the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne departed to go to Bloys.

[1] *beau-père.*

[2] *Châteaudun.*

CAP. CXXVII

Howe Lewes, kyng of Cycyle, entred into Parys in estate royall, and howe the duke of Bretayne entred on the nyght of saynt Johan the Baptyst, the yere of grace a thousande thre hundred fourscore and sevyn. And of a dede of armes doone before the kyng at Mountereau faulte Yon, bytwene a knyght of Englande, called sir Thomas Harpingham, and a Frenche knyght, named sir Johan de Barres.

THE duke of Bretaygne rode to Boygency on the ryver of Loyre, and there he ordered his businesse to go to Parys. The same tyme before the duke of Bretaygne entered into Parys there entred the quene of Cycyll and of Hierusalem, somtyme wyfe to the Duke of Anjou, who was called kynge of those countreis and also of Naples. And with her was her yonge sonne Lewes, who was thanne, in all Fraunce, named kynge of all the said landes. And in their company was Johan of Bretaygne, brother to the lady. She sente worde before of her commynge to the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne, advertysyng them howe she brought in her company her yonge son Lewes their nephue, desyring to knowe whether he shulde entre into Parys as a kynge, or elles symply as Lewes of Anjou. The two dukes sente her worde, advisynge and counsayling her that he shulde entre as kyng of Naples, of Cycyle, and of Hierusalem: and sente her worde, that

CAP. CXXVII

Howe Lewes, kyng of Cycyle, entred into Parys in estate royall.

thoughe he were nat as thanne in possessyon of the realmes, yet they wolde entyse the Frenche kyng that he shulde ayde hym to conquere them, for so they sware to do to their brother kyng Lois. After this maner the lady prepared for herselfe, and came and entred into Parys, and made her sonne to ryde throughe the hyghe stretes by Saynt Jaques, so to his lodgynge in Greve, in estate royall, accompanyed with dukes, erles, and prelates a great nombre. There the lady taryed with her sonne, and thanne wente to se the kynge at his castell of Loure, abydinge there the commynge of the duke of Bretaygne.

CAP. CXXVIII

Howe the duke of Bretaygne entred into Parys, and came to the castell of Loure to the Frenche kynge.

WHAN the duke of Bretayne aproched nere to Parys, he rested one nyght at the quenes Bourge, and the nexte daye he entred into Paris. Great lokyng for hym was in Paris, bycause he had before putte in daunger the constable of Fraunce, and had ben sente for dyvers tymes, and wolde never come tyll than. Men spake therof dyversly; and on a Sondaye, beynge Mydsomer daye, at tenne of the clocke aforenoone, the duke of Bretaygne entred, the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and eight, into Parys, at Hell Gate, and passed along the strete of the Harpe, and over the bridge Saynt Michell, and so before the palais, well accompanyed with lordes and knyghtes. There was sir Wyllyam of Heynaulte, erle of Ostrevaunt, and his faire brother[1] Johan of Burgoyne, and before him roode sir Wyllyam of Namure. Thus he came to the castelle of Loure, and there alyghted: as he rode throughe the stretes he was greatlye regarded of the common people. And whan the duke was alyghted and entred in at the gate, he remembred what he shulde do and saye. And before hym was the lorde of Coucy, the erle of Savoy, sir John of Vyen, sir Guye de la Tremoyle, sir John

[1] *beau-frère.*

CAP. CXXVIII

Howe the duke of Bretaygne entred into Parys.

of Vernayle,[1] the erle of Meaulx, sir Johan of Voye,[2] sir Johan of Barres. And nere to hym was sir Wyllyam of Namure, Johan of Burgoyne, and the erle of Ostrevaunte. And behynde hym the lorde Mountforde of Bretayne and the lorde of Malestroyt; they were of his kynne and privy counsayle. There was great preace to se hym, and the halle but lytell; and the boordes were covered for the kynge to go to dyner. And the kynge stoode there redy before the table, and his iii. uncles besyde hym, dukes of Berrey, of Burgoyne, and of Burbone. As soone as the duke was entred, every man made place, so that the duke myght se the kynge. Firste he made one curtesy, and so passed forthe a tenne or xii. paces; than he made the seconde curtesy, and rose agayne, and so passed forthe tyll he came before the kynge; than the thirde tyme he kneled downe bare heeded, and saluted the kyng, and sayd, Sir, I am come to se your grace; God maynteyne youre prosperyte. I thanke you, sir, quod the kyng, and we have great desyre to se you; we shall se and speke with you at more leysar: and therwith toke hym up by the armes. Than the duke enclyned hymself to all the other princes eche after other; than he stode styll before the kynge without spekynge of any worde. The kyng sore behelde hym. Thanne the stewardes and offycers came forthe with water, and the kyng wasshed, and the duke of Bretaygne putte his hande to the bason and to the towell. And whan the kyng was sette, the duke toke his leave of the kyng and of his uncles, and the lorde of Coucy and the erle of saynt Poule with other lordes conveyed hym into the court where his horses were, and there mounted, and so returned to his lodgynge in the strete of the Harpe. And none taryed with hym of them that conveyed hym but suche as came with hym out of Bretaygne to Parys.

[1] *Bueil.*
[2] *Roye.*

After all this the duke of Bretaygne spake at leysar with the kynge and his uncles, so that every man was well contente with hym; and he tooke well every thynge that had ben promysed to hym, for he sawe nouther the constable nor John of Bretayne. Whan the lordes sawe that every thyng was in good state, and that they neded nat to doute the duke of Bretaygne, seynge they had hym at Paris, for

CAP. CXXVIII

Howe the duke of Bretaygne entred into Parys.

they thought he shulde nat departe thens tyll he had done in maner every thyng as the kynge wolde, than it was thought good tyme to ordeyne forth for the voyage into Guerles, whyder the kyng had great affection to go, to subdue the duke of Guerles, who had so shamfully defied the kyng, the whiche consydred was nat thoght good to be suffred. Than it was ordayned that the lorde of Coucy shulde drawe to the marches of Rennes[1] and Chalons in Champayn, and to regarde for the kynges passage that waye, and to move the knyghtes and squyers in Bare and in Lorayne to go with him whyder he wolde lede them, nat spekynge of the kyng, but bearyng them in hande that he wolde go to recover his ryght in Austryche. The lorde of Coucy thus departed fro Parys, and wente to Chalons in Champayne, and there taryed a moneth, and retaygned on all partes knyghtes and squyers in Bare and in Lorayne, in Champaygne, and in Retheloys. And the Frenche kyng departed fro Parys whan he had communed with the duke of Bretaygne of dyvers maters, and nat fully accomplysshed, for the sute in the courte of Fraunce is longe whan they lyste, and right well they canne foode forthe the people to make theym spende moche, and bringe lytell to effecte. The kynge came to Moustreau ou faulte Yon,[2] in the marchesse of Brie and Gastenoys, and there he helde his courte, and oftentymes chased hartes and other wylde beestes in the forest of Brie. The same seasone there was a dede of armes done there, bitwene an Englisshe knight who was there with the duke of Irelande, called sir Thomas Harpyngham, and sir Johan of Barres, wherof great brute was made in Fraunce and other places. Their chalenge was, fyve courses with a speare, fyve strokes with the sworde, fyve with a daggar, and fyve with the axe; and if any of their weapons brake, than they to gette newe, tyll their chalenge were accomplysshed. These two knyghtes on a day lept on their horses well armed, as appertayned, the kynge and all other lordes beyng present and moche people, and ranne toguyder foure courses ryght valiauntly, and as me thought the usage was thane, their helmes were tyed but with a lace, to the entente the speare shulde take no holde. The fyrst course sir Johan of Barres strake the Englysshe knyght on the targe,

[1] *Rheims.*

[2] *Montereau fault-Yonne.*

in suche wyse that he bare hym over the horse crope, so that he laye stonyed on the grounde, and moche payne to releve. Than they perfourmed forthe all the reste of their chalenge in so goodly maner, that the kyng and all the other were well content with them.

CAP. CXXVIII
Howe the duke of Bretaygne entred into Parys.

CAP. CXXIX

Howe the erle of Arundell, beyng on the see more than a moneth, came to the havyn of Marante, a lytell fro Rochell; and howe he sent a messangere to Perotte le Bernoys, that he and other capitayns shulde kepe the feldes.

IT is long sythe I made any mencyon of the Englysshe armye on the see, wherof Rycharde, erle of Arundell, was capitayne, and with hym many knyghtes, squyers, and archers of Englande. I shall nowe somwhat speke of hym, for the mater requyreth it.

Ye have herde here before of the treatie that the kyng of Englande made with the duke of Bretaygne. This navy on the see all this season laye ever coostynge the fronters of Bretaygne and Normandy; if wynde and wether drave them thens, they ever came thyder agayne. And they had in their flete some small vesselles called balyngers, who wente ever and scoured the see. The flete had layne at ancre more than a moneth agaynst the ysle of Breshatte[1] in Bretayne. And there they herde tidynges howe the duke of Bretaygne was gone to Bloyes to speke with the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne, and howe they were so agreed that the duke was gone to Parys. And the renome ranne throughe Bretaygne howe the duke hadde good chere of the Frenche kynge, and was welcome to hym and to all his counsayle at Parys, and shulde nat departe thens tyll the maters were in good estate. Whanne the erle of Arundell herde those tidynges, he was pensyve, and wente to counsayle what was best to do, and whyder they were best to drawe to enploye their season. Than they determyned to drawe to Rochel-

[1] *Brêhat.*

CAP. CXXIX

Howe the erle of Arundell came to the havyn of Marante.

lois: though they had no castelles there, yet they hadde men ynowe there to kepe the felde, and to abyde all the puyssaunce of Xaynton and of Poyctou, so that they shulde signify their estate into Auvergne and into Lymosynne, so that they myght sende to passe throughe Bretaygne. As than the treuse was nat confyrmed on the ryver of Loyre, but they were a treatynge to begynne the fyrste daye of Auguste. And sir Helyon of Lignacke was goyng or commyng, as the erle of Arundell ymagined, outher to the duke of Lancastre to Bayone, or elles retournynge into Fraunce. They hadde in their navye a Breton Bretonaunt of the nacyon of Wannes, servaunt to sir Wyllyam Helmon, who coude speke well foure maner of languages, that is to saye, Bretysshe, Englysshe, Spaynysshe, and Frenche; and gave hym in commaundement to go a lande, and sayde to hym, Go thou the moost prevyest wayes thou canste, thou knowest all the prevy wayes of the countrey, and gette the to the garyson of Chaluset, and have us all recommaunded to Perotte le Bernoys, and shewe hym fro us that he sette forthe a company of men of armes, suche as be in garysons for the kynge of Englande, and make warre in his tytell; thou shalte beare no letters for feare of takynge. Thou mayest go lyke a marchaunt of Rochell to by wynes, and saye to Perot, that he reyse up these men of warre and kepe the countreys of Berrey, Auvergne, and Lymosyn in doute, and kepe the feldes, for we shall lande in Rochelloyes, and shall make there suche warre, that it shal be herde of and well knowen. The Breton sayde he shulde do his message, if he hadde no great lette by the waye. He was set a lande on the sandes, and, as he that knewe all the countrey of Bretayne, went of from all the great townes, and passed by the countrey of Poyctou and entred into Lymosyn, and so came to Chalucet, wherof Perot le Bernoys was capitayne. The messangere came to the barryers, and gave knowledge of his commynge to them of the garyson. After he had ben examyned at the gate, he was lette in, and so brought before Perotte, and dyde well his message, wherof Perot had great joye, for he greatly desyred to here tidynges of the army on the see. Than he sayd to the Breton, Thou arte welcome: bothe I and all my companions have great desyre

to ryde forthe abrode, and so shall we do, and accomplysshe that thou hast shewed us. CAP. CXXIX

Howe the erle of Arundell came to the havyn of Marante.

Thus Perotte le Bernoys made hym prest, and sente to Carlate to the bourge of Champaygne,[1] to the capitayne of Ousacke,[2] Olyve Barbe, and to the capitayn of Aloyse besyde saynt Floure, Aymergotte Marcell, and to other capitayns alonge the countrey in Auvergne and Lymosyn, desyryng all these to make them redy, for he wolde ryde oute abrode: for he sawe it than a good season for them, commaundynge them to leave sure men in their garisons tyll their returne. These companyons, who hadde as great desyre to ryde abrode as Perot, for they coulde nat waxe ryche withoute some other loste, made them redy and came to Chalucet, where they assembled. They were well to the nombre of foure hundred speares; they thought themselfe suffycient to do a great feate; they knewe no lorde in the countrey as than able to resyste them, nor to breke their enterprice; for the siege of Vandachore of sir Wyllyam of Lignacke nor of Boesme Launce was nat defeated as than.[3] Thus they rode forthe, and were lordes of the feldes, and passed Auvergne on the ryght hande, and tooke the ryght waye to Berrey, for they knewe well the duke was nat as than there, but was in Fraunce with the kyng at Mountereau ou[4] faulte Yon.

[1] *Caupene.*
[2] *Douzac.*
[3] *ne se defferoit pas pour euls.*
[4] *or* P.

Nowe lette us leave to speke of Perot le Bernoys and of his enterprice, and speke of the erle of Arundell and of his armye on the see, and shewe howe he percevered after he was departed fro the cost of Bretayne.

Whan the erle of Arundell and suche lordes as were with hym were departed fro the cost of Bretayne, they sayled with good wynd and wether, for the tyme was fayre and pleasaunt, and goodly to beholde the shippes on the see. They were a sixscore, one and other, with baners and stremers wavynge in the wynde, glytrynge with the lordes armes agaynst the sonne. Thus they went saylyng by the see fresshly, like a horse newe commyng out of the stable brayeng and cryeng, and fomyng at the mouth. The see was so prompe and so agreable to them, as thoughe by fygure the see shulde have said to them: Be mery, sirs, I am for you, and I shall bring you to good porte and haven without

CAP. CXXIX

Howe the erle of Arundell came to the havyn of Marante.

peryll. Thus these lordes sayled frontyng Poyctou and Xaynton, and cast ancre before Rochell, in the haven towarde Marant.[1] Than some of their company seyng the fludde commyng, entred or it were full water into bottes mo than two hundred one and other, and arryved nere to the towne of Marant. The watche of Marant had spied the Englysshe flete, and sawe howe the bottes were commyng to lande warde with the fludde: than he blewe his trumpe and made great noyse, to awake the men of the towne to save themselfe, so that many men and women toke their goodes and wente and saved them in the castell, the whiche came well to passe for them, or els they had lost all. Whan they sawe the Englysshmen come at their helys, they toke that they had and lefte the rest, and saved their bodyes. The Englysshe archers and other entred into the towne and fell to pyllage, therfore they came thyder, but lytell they founde there, savyng coffers voyde and emptye; all their goodes was withdrawen into the castell. As for corne, wyne, salte bacone, and other provision, they founde ynoughe, for there was more than four hundred tonne of wyne in the towne; wherfore they determyned to abyde there a certayne space to kepe that provisyon. It came well to passe for them, for they sayde if they shulde departe thens, all shulde be withdrawen into the fortresses, and caryed awaye by the ryver to Fountney as moche as they myght, and the reste distroyed. They taryed all that night in the towne; they came thyder in the evenyng, and sente worde to them on the see what case they were in, and the cause why they taryed. The erle of Arundell and the other lordes sayde howe they had done well. This nyght passed; the nexte mornynge, whan the tyde began to retourne, they disancred all their small vesselles, and every man wente into them, and putte all their harnesse into bottes and barges, and lafte their great shippes styll at ancre, for they coude nat cum nere to the lande for lacke of water. And they lafte an hundred men of armes and two hundred archers styll there to kepe their shippes, whiche laye at the mouthe of the havyn. Than with their smalle vesselles they arryved at Marant, and toke lande at their leysar, and so lodged all bytwene Marant and the towne of Rochell, the whiche was

[1] *Marans.*

but four leages fro thens. Tidynges spredde abrode in the countrey, howe the Englysshemen were arryved at Marante, a four hundred fightyng men: the playne countrey, the good townes and castelles were afrayde, and made good watche. Than they of the vyllages fledde awaye, and caryed their goodes into forestes and into other places as shortely as they myght.

CAP. CXXIX
Howe the erle of Arundell came to the havyn of Marante.

CAP. CXXX

Howe they of Marroys and Rochellois were sore afrayed of the Englysshmen that were a lande, and how they of Rochell made a scrimysshe with them; and howe after the Englysshmen had pylled the countrey about Marant, they drewe agayne to the see with their pyllage whiche was great.

IF the Englysshmen had ben furnysshed with horses it had been greatly to their profyte, for the countrey as than was unprovided of men of warre; namely, of suche as were able to have mette with them. True it was, the lord of Parteney, the lorde of Pons, the lorde of Lyniers, the lorde of Tanyboton, sir Geffray of Argenton, the lorde of Montendre, sir Aymery of Rochchouart, the vycont of Towars, and dyvers other knyghtes and squyers of Poictou and of Xaynton were as than in the countrey, but they were nat toguyder, for every man was in his owne fortresse, for they were nat ware of the Englysshemens commynge thyder. If they hadde knowen a moneth before that the Englysshemenne wolde have ryved there, they wolde have provyded therfore: but they knewe it nat. This fell sodaynly, wherfore they were the more afrayde, and every man toke hede to kepe his owne, and the men of the countrey to gette in their cornes, for it was about the begynnynge of Auguste. Also there was no heed capitaygne in the countrey to bringe menne toguyder. The duke of Berrey, who was cheife soveraygne of Poictou, was but newely gone to Parys. The seneschall of Xaynton was nat in the countrey, and the seneschall of Rochell, sir Helyon

CAP. CXXX

Howe they of Marroys and Rochellois were sore afrayed of the Englysshmen that were a lande.

of Lignacke, was nat at Rochell, nor in the countrey; he was in great busynesse to ryde in and out bytwene the duke of Berrey, and the duke of Lancastre. By these reasons the countrey was the more feble, for where there is defaulte of good heedes, there must nedes be defaulte in the body and in the fote: and he that hath no foote can do nothynge that is worthe. Thus these lordes were in feare two wayes. They had the Englysshmen armed before them that came fro the see; and on the other syde they herde newes fro Berrey, and fro Limosyn, that Perot le Bernoys rode abrode with fyve or sixe hundred fyghtynge men with hym, and was entred into Berrey. So they wyst nat wherto they shulde take hede, but every man to kepe his owne: for the renome wente howe these two hoostes shulde mete toguyder, outher in the countrey of Poictou, or Xaynton. This was the opinyon of dyvers.

True it was that in the towne of Rochell, the same season that the Englysshemen were landed at Marant, there was two valyant knyghtes, the one called sir Peter of Jouy, and the other sir Taylle Pie, whome sir Helyon of Lignacke had lefte at Rochell, to kepe the towne and countre therabout. Whan tidynges came to Rochell, how the erle of Arundell and the armye that had ben so longe on the see were a lande, and lodged besyde Marant, than these two knightes sayd to them that were under their charge, and to the mayre of Rochell, and men of the towne, Sirs, it must behove us to go and loke on these Englysshemenne; it is shewed us howe they be arryved in these parties: I and my companion wyll go and gyve them their welcome, for the whiche they shall paye us, or els we them, for we shal be blamed if we suffre them to rest in peace, sythe we have the charge of the kepynge of this countre; there is one poynte good for us, they have no horses; they are men of the see, and we be well mounted; we shall sende our crosbowes before, they shall wake them, and shote and hurte them, and whan they have done they shall retourne; than the Englysshemen wyll issue out after them afote, and we shall suffre our crosbowes to passe homwarde, and than we shall receyve our enemyes at the spere poynt; we shall have of them suche advauntage, that we shall do them great

dommage. Every man that herde these knyghtes speke, reputed them for noble valyaunt men, and agreed to their counsayle; and there assembled toguyder, what one and other, a twelve hundred. The nexte mornynge at the breakyng of the daye, every man was redy and assembled togider. And the crosbowes and men afote issued out and went a great pace to reyse the Englysshmen out of their lodgynges: and in the meane season the horsmen made them redy upon a iii. hundred, for there were dyvers knyghtes and squyers come to Rochell. Certainly, if by any maner of inspyracion thenglysshmen had knowen of their commynge, that they might have made an embusshe, but of two hundred archers, and a hundred men of armes, there had nat one Frenchman retourned agayne. Whan they of Rochell came to the Englysshemens lodgynges, it was earely in the morenynge, and their watche was retourned to their lodgynges. Than the Frenche crosbowes began to shote and entred in among their lodgynges, and hurte many. The Englysshemen lyeng on the strawe had marveyle of the noyse, and many were hurte or they knewe that they were Frenchemen. And whan the crosbowes had shotte every man a sixe shottes, or thereabout, they retourned, as it was before apoynted. Than aproched the horsmen and entred among the lodgynges: therwith the hoost began to styrre, and knyghtes and squyers drewe toguyder into the felde. And whan the Frenchemen sawe the hoost styrre and drawe toguyder, they drewe backe and retourned towarde Rochell a good pace, for feare of the shotte of the Englysshemen, who folowed them near to Rochell. Than the erle of Arundell with foure hundred men of armes folowed after a great pace, every man his speare in his hande or on his necke. The preace of the Frenche fotemen was great at the entrynge into Rochell, and alwayes the two Frenche knyghtes were behynde, and sette their men forwarde tyll they were within the barriers; and ever the Englysshemen folowed in suche wyse, that the two Frenche knightes were in great daunger to be taken or slayn. They were sore sette at, bycause they semed to be the chiefe capitaynes, as they were indede, so that sir Peter Jouy hadde his horse slayne under hym, and with great payne his men saved hym, and drewe

CAP. CXXX

Howe they of Marroys and Rochellois were sore afrayed of the Englysshmen that were a lande.

CAP. CXXX Howe they of Marroys and Rochellois were sore afrayed of the Englysshmen that were a lande.

hym within the barryers. And sir Peter Taylle Pye was stryken through the thye with a glayve, and with an arrowe throughe the bassenet into the heed, and his horse fell downe deed within the gate. At the entrynge into the towne there were many slayne and hurte, mo than xl.; the men of the towne were above over the gate, and caste downe stones, and shotte out bombardes, so that the Englysshemen durst aproche no nerer.

Thus wente the first scrimysshe bytwene them of Rochell and the Englysshemen; and whan they hadde scrimysshed nere to noone, the erle of Arundell sowned the retrayte. Than they withdrewe in good order, and retourned to their lodgynges and unarmed them, and toke their ease, and they had well wherof, they lacked nouther wyne nor flesshe. The Englysshemen taryed there about a fyftene dayes abydinge all adventures. But after that, they of Rochell issued no more oute to scrimysshe, for they sawe well the Englisshemen were wise and valyaunt, and also the two capitayns were hurt, wherfore the other had good cause to sytte styll in rest. The erle of Arundell sent a thre or four tymes abrode into the countrey of Rochelloys, towarde Bresmure,[1] and into the lande of Towars, and dyde great dommage, wherof all the countrey was afrayde. The Englysshmen had done a great enterprice if they had ben furnysshed with horsmen, and in the countre they gatte but fewe, for as soone as they herde of their landynge, every man caryed all that they hadde into the fortresses. And whan this army had taryed there a fyftene dayes, and were well refresshed, and sawe that no man came against them, and parceyved the wynde good for them, they drewe them into their shippes, and caryed with them moche wyne and fresshe fleshe, and so entred into their vesselles, and drewe up their sayles and toke the see. And the same daye they mette with xii. shippes of Bayon, goynge into Englande, charged with wynes and other marchaundises, so they joyned toguyder and made good chere; they gave to the erle of Arundell two peces of Gascoyn wyne. Thus they sayled forthe at adventure.

[1] *Bressuire.*

Nowe lette us speke of Perot le Bernois, and of the other capitayns that were in his company, howe they drewe agayne into their fortresses.

CAP. CXXXI

Howe Perot le Bernoys and his companyons resorted agayne to theyr holdes with great pyllage. And howe the duke of Guerles coulde have no ayde of the Englysshemen to reyse the siege before Grave: and how the Brabansoys made a bridge over the ryver of Meuse, the whiche they of Guerles dyde breke, brinne, and dystroy, as ye shall here after.

THE same seasone that the Englysshe armye was at Marant, Perot le Bernoyes and his route, to the nombre of four hundred speres, were abrode and passed by Lymosyn, and came to Berrey. And on a daye they tooke all the marchauntes that were in the towne of Blanke, in Berrey, on the whiche daye there was a great fayre, wherby they had great profite and good prisoners, and than passed further and came to Selles, in Berrey, and pylled and robbed the towne. Thus Perot and his companyons rode abrode in the countre, and dyde great dommage, for there was none that came agaynst them. The countrey was sore afrayde on bothe sydes the ryver of Loyre, unto the countie of Bloys, and of Thourayne. They coude nat ymagin what these two armyes were purposed to do; some sayde they shulde mete togider, but they dyd nat. For the army on the see drewe agayne to the see, and Perot in lykewise to his fortresse. Whan they had pylled and wonne great richesse in the countrey, every man wente to their owne fortresse to save that they had gotte. There was none other dede of armes done that season in Auvergne, and Lymosyn. Thane began the truce on that syde the ryver of Loyre, the whiche shulde endure to the moneth of Marche; but styll the siege endured before Vandachore,[1] by sir Wylliam of Lignacke, sir Johan Boesme Launce, sir Johan Butlere, and other. For sir Geffray Teatenoyre was so proude and cruell, that he sette nouther by truce

[1] *Ventadour.*

CAP. CXXXI nor peace, and all on the truste of the strength of his fortresses.

Howe Perot le Bernoys and his companyons resorted agayne to theyr holdes with great pyllage.

Nowe lette us leave speakyng of the siege of Vandachore, and shewe hereafter what ende it toke, and speke nowe of Brabante, and of Guerles.

Ye knowe well, as it hath ben conteyned here before in this hystorie, the duchesse of Brabant was determyned to make warre agaynst the duke of Guerles, and caused the siege to contynue before the towne of Grave, with a great puyssaunce of knyghtes and squyers, and other men of the good townes of Brabante: and their entencion was, nat to departe thens tyll they had the towne of Grave at their wyll. And the duchesse, to shewe that the mater touched her nere, she laye at Boyes,[1] a foure leages thens. The hoost was plentifull of every thynge. They were oftentymes refresshed with newe provisyon commyng fro dyvers partes, as well by see, by fresshe water, and by the ryver of Muse, as by the lande of Brabant. This siege long endured, and they had there great ingyns before the towne to caste in great stones, whiche dyde great domage. And besyde that, to enfecte the people within, they caste into the towne all deed careyne, and the wether was hote, the whiche greatly anoyed them within; the clere ayre was sore corrupted with the yvell ayre. Somtyme the knyghtes and squyers of Brabant wolde come to the barryers and scrimysshe with them of the towne, and there were many feates of armes done. For there were men in the towne, sette there by the duke of Guerles, that were redye to shewe forthe their prowes whan tyme was. The duke of Guerles lay at Nimay, and coude nat remedy the mater, nor reyse the siege, nor yet fight with his enemyes, for he had no puissaunce therto. But he hadde sente into Englande, certifyeng what case he stode in, trustynge to have had socours fro thens, but he had none; for at that tyme there was moche trouble in Englande. For there was sette a newe counsayle about the kynge, by the meanes of his uncles, and tharchbysshop of Caunterbury. About the feest of saynt Johan the Baptyst, there was a counsayle in Englande, to knowe if there shulde be sente any ayde of men of armes and archers to the duke of Guerles, or nat: but every thyng consydred, they thought it

[1] *Bois-le-Duc.*

best naye. For renome ran in Englande howe the Frenche kyng made a gret assemble, but no manne knewe whyther they shulde drawe. The Englysshemen by ymaginacyon douted that they wolde come to Calais; on the other syde they douted the Scottes, wherfore they wolde nat sende their men of armes and archers out of the realme; also they knewe howe there were many menne of warre on the see, wherfore it was convenyent to kepe their owne realme. Therfore the noble men of Englande sayd: Lette the duke of Guerles alone, he is ryght valyant, and is in a stronge countre, he wyll do well ynoughe agaynst the Brabansoys; also he shal be conforted by the Almayns, if nede be, for they be alyed with hym and his neyghbours; they have bene with hym or this agaynst the Frenchemen. Thus the maters wente in Englande, but they within the towne of Grave endured the payne, with sautes and sore scrimisshing. They of Brabante devysed whyle they laye at the siege, to make a bridge of tymbre over the ryver of Meuse, therby to entre into the duchy of Guerles, and to over ronne the countrey, and to kepe that no vitayle shulde come to the towne of Grave, and therby to besege it bothe before and behynde, and on all partes, to kepe it fro vitayling, for they had men ynowe so to do. They sette many carpentars aworke with all dilygence, and they dyde so moche that their worke was so forwarde, that the bridge was nere over the water within a speares cast. The duke of Guerles had perfite knowledge of the makyng of this bridge, and dyde lette them alone tyll it was nyghe made. But whan he sawe it was nere hande fynisshed, than he came before it with gonnes and other artillarye, and shotte fyre to the bridge, in suche wyse, that the bridge was brente and broken, and the Brabansoys loste all their labour; wherwith they were sore displeased, and than toke counsayle what was best for them to do.

CAP. CXXXI

Howe Perot le Bernoys and his companyons resorted agayne to theyr holdes with great pyllage.

CAP. CXXXII

Howe the Brabansoys passed the ryver throughe the towne of Ravesten, over the bridge there, and so entred into Guerles. Than the duke departed fro Nimay with thre hundred speares, and came agaynst them and disconfyted them bytwene Ravesten and the towne of Grave.

A THRE lytell leages fro the towne of Grave is the castell of Ravesten, parteyninge to the lorde of Bourne, who was subjecte and helde of the duchy of Brabant. He was desyred by the duchesse counsayle, and by other lordes and knyghtes, that he shulde open the towne of Ravesten, and suffre their hoste to passe throughe to entre into the countrey of Guerles; and at their desyres he was content. The duke of Guerles, lyenge at Nymay, was surely infourmed, by suche spyall as he had, howe the lorde of Bourne wolde gyve his enemyes fre passage to entre into his countrey, through the towne of Ravesten, wherof he was pensyve and malencolyous. For he sawe well he had nat men ynowe to resyste the puysaunce of Brabante, for they were well a xl. thousande menne, one and other. On this the duke had many ymagynacions. And fynally, all thynges consydred, he determyned in his mynde to assemble all his men toguyder, and to take the feldes, and to come towardes the towne of Grave, to the entente that if they of Brabant entred into Guerles, than he wolde entre into Brabant. For he thought surely nat to be inclosed within the walles of any towne. Than the duke spake to the lorde of Ghesme, a great baron of Guerles, who was his princypall counsaylour, and shewed hym his sayd mynde and entente; and fyrste, this lorde was nat of the opynyon that the duke shulde take the feldes with so small a nombre. Well, quod the duke, and what shall I do than? Shall I suffre myselfe to be inclosed in one of my townes, and in the meane tyme they shall brynne and exyle my countrey? That shulde be over dere to me to abyde. I make a vowe to Godde, and to

CAP. CXXXII

Howe the Brabansoys passed the ryverthroughe the towne of Ravesten.

Our Lady, quod the duke, I wyll drawe into the feldes, and resyst my domage as nere as I may. And as he ordeyned so he dyd. The next mornyng he departed fro Nymay, after he had ben at churche, and made his offrynge to Our Lady of Nymay. Than he and his men dranke a lytell, and so mounted on their horses; he was a thre hundred speares, rather lesse than mo, and tooke the feldes, and drewe towardes their enemyes the next way. Beholde what a great corage this duke was of. Some sayd it was a great outrage. Howbeit, he lyke a coragyous knyght full of comeforte, sayde: On, on forwarde in the name of God and saynt George agaynste our enemyes: for I had rather dye in the felde with honoure, than with dyshonour to be closed within a towne. With hym was the lorde of Ghesme, a valyant and a sage knyght, chyefe ruler of his armye, and the lorde of Hanseberth, the lorde of Huckelin, sir Ostez lorde of Vaspre, and dyvers other good knyghtes and squyers of valyaunt corage.

The same daye that the duke of Guerles was in the feldes, early in the mornyng, the seneschall of Brabant, with his men, knyghtes, squyers, and men of the good townes in Brabant, by the consente of the lorde of Bourne, passed the ryver by the bridge of Ravesten, to the nombre of ten thousande men. The seneschall of Brabante, the lorde of Lygnier,[1] the lorde of Bourgnevall, the lorde of Gence, and other, were ryght joyfull whanne they sawe they were over the ryver of Meuse. They said than amonge themselfe, howe they wolde go the same day and make a course before Nymay, and burne the mylles, and fawbours, and the villages there about. But soone after that, they herde other tydynges by their fore ryders, suche as they had sent to discover the countrey. Than tydinges also came to the duke of Guerles, howe a ten thousande of his enemyes were passed the ryver of Meuse, at the bridge of Ravesten. Than the duke stode in a staye, and toke counsayle what was beste to do. Some were sore abasshed bycause they were but a handefull of men to the regarde of their enemyes, who were thurty or xl. agaynst one. Some sayde, howe myght endure thre hundred speares agaynste ten or twelve thousande men. It lyeth nat in our puyssaunce to overcome them, but it

[1] *Lintré.*

CAP. CXXXII

Howe the Brabansoys passed the ryverthroughe the towne of Ravesten.

lyeth well in their power soone to overcome us. Some knyghtes came to the duke, and counsayled hym to drawe towardes Grave. Thanne the duke sayde he wolde nat, for in no wyse he wolde be closed in any towne that he hadde: but sayde, surely he wolde go and fyght with his enemyes, for his corage he sayd gave hym to dyscomfyte them, and said, as he dyd before, that rather he wolde dye with honour, than to lyve with shame. We shall, quod he, this day overcome our enemies, wherby we shall have greate profyte and honoure; therfore all that love me set forwarde and folowe me quyckly.

The wordes that the duke spake incoraged all his men, and specyally suche as herde hym, and every man shewed semblante to be of great corage to fight; every man made hym redy, and lased on his basnet, and gyrte their horses, and set themselfe in good aray togyther, and rode forthe an easy passe to kepe their horses well brethed. There were certayne newe knightes made. Thus they rode in good araye towardes Ravesten; by that tyme the Brabansoys were over the ryver. Thanne tydynges came to the seneschall of Brabante, how the duke of Guerles was in the felde, and so nere them that incontynent they shulde mete togyder. Suche as herde those tydinges first had mervayle of that adventure. Than they beleved surely that for every man that the duke of Guerles had, that he had been syxe. Than they rested to sette themselfe in ordre, but they had no leysar: for therwith came on them the duke of Guerles, with his route close togyder, as faste as spurres wolde dryve their horses, cryenge their cryes: Our Lady of Guerles: with their speares in the restes. There was a squier of Guerles, greatly to be praysed, for the great desyre that he had to exalte his renome; he galoped before all the batayls, and was the firste that justed, and entred in amonge his enemies. The squier was called Arnolde Morbec; with that course he bare one to the erthe rudely, I canne nat tell if ever he was releved or nat, for the prease was so greate, that harde it was if one were downe to be releved agayn, without it were by great helpe. At this first rencountre there were of the Brabansoys a sixe score borne to the erthe; there were many beaten downe, and small defence made by the Brabansoys,

CAP. CXXXII

Howe the Brabansoys passed the ryver throughe the towne of Ravesten.

for they were sodenly taken. And so shulde men of warre do that thinke to do domage to their enemyes. For the Brabansoys, for all that they were so greate a nombre, and so many great men, yet they were so farre asonder, and out of araye, that they coulde nat gette togyther in ordre of batayle, but their batayle was pearsed throughe and sparckled abrode, some here and some there, so that the lordes of Brabante coulde nat come to their owne men, nor their menne to theym. And suche as were behynde, whanne they herde the noyse and brewte, and sawe the dust and powder ryse, it semed to them properly that the voyce of the dyscomfetture came on theym, and howe all their company were overcome. So that the feare therof caused them to tourne and to flye towardes Ravesten agayne; and some toke the ryver at adventure, bothe a foote and a horsebacke, without sertchyng of the depenesse, or without havynge of any guyde. And as they fledde, they thought ever their enemyes had been at their backes. By this dyscomfettynge of themselfe there were drowned and in parell moo than twelve hundred in the ryver of Meuse, for they lepte in one upon another lyke beestes, without ordre or reason; and some of the great lordes and barones of Brabante, whome I wyll nat name, for it shulde be blame to them and to their heyres to be noted to flye away so shamefully, and to seke for their savegarde nother the right passage of the ryver, nor yet the hygh way to the towne of Ravesten, but rather other straunge wayes to flye fro their enemyes. In this myschyefe fell that daye the chyvalrye of Brabante: bytwene the towne of Grave and Ravesten many were slayne and taken, for suche as came to raunsome yelded lightly, and the Almayns were gladde to take them, for the profyte that they thought to have by theym. And suche as retourned to the lodgynges before Grave, abasshed them that were there lyenge at the syege, for they came lyke men clene dyscomfyted; they came flyenge so faste that they lacked brethe, so that they coulde skante speke any worde; that they sayde was, Syrs, gette us all hence for we be all dyscomfyted, there is no comeforte. Whan they in the hoost understode the trouthe of the mater, and sawe their company in that case, they were than so abasshed and afrayed, that they had no

CAP. CXXXII

Howe the Brabansoys passed the ryverthroughe the towne of Ravesten.

leysar nor puyssaunce to take their owne goodes, nor to take downe their tentes nor pavylyons, nor to trusse horse, carte, nor wagon, but sodaynely departed without byddyng adewe, and lefte all behynde. They were so afrayde that they made no countenaunce of abydynge. They toke with theym nother vytayle nor caryage, but suche as hadde horses lepte on them, and fledde awaye towardes the Dukes Wodde,[1] or els towardes Houdan,[2] or to the mount saynt Gervays, or to Gertras,[3] and Dordec. They had none other care but to save themselfe fro their enemyes. And if they within the garyson of Grave had soner knowen of the dyscomfetture, it had ben greatly for their profyte, and had slayne or taken many of their enemyes in their flyenge: but they knewe it nat tyll it was late: howbeit, whan they issued out they founde great plentye of tentes and pavylyons, and provysion of engyns, gonnes, and artyllery, which they brought into their towne at good leysar, for there were none to saye them naye. Thus brake up the siege of Grave to the gret domage of all the Brabansoys, wherof great brute ranne in dyvers countreys, howe that a handfull of men dyscomfyted xl. thousande, and reysed the siege. There was taken the lorde of Bourgnevall, and the lorde of Linyer, and other, to the nombre of seventene baners: they were hanged before the ymage of Our Lady of Nymay, for a perpetuall memory.

[1] *Bois le Duc.*
[2] *Gertruidenberg.*
[3] *Heusden.*

CAP. CXXXIII

Howe the duke of Guerles, after he had dyscomfyted the Brabansoys, he wente agayne to Nymaye: and howe tydynges came to the Frenche kynge: and howe the kyng sente ambassadours to the kyng of Almayne.

I HAVE great payne to recorde or to wryte of this shamefull dyscomfyture of the Brabansoys, for blemysshynge of their honoures; but bycause I promysed and said in the begynnyng of my boke, that if I shall write truely this hystory, I must make true relacion of the mater, whosoever it do touche. Nowe to procede further: the yonge duke

CAP. CXXXIII

Howe the duke of Guerles wente agayne to Nymaye.

of Guerles had and optaygned this journey, in the yere of our Lord God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and eyght, aboute Mawdlyn tyde, in the moneth of July; and whanne this dyscomfyture and chase was passed, and the felde clene delyvered, whiche was done within the space of two houres, than the Guerloys assembled togyder in the felde, and made good chere, and were joyfull. They had good cause so to be for their good adventure, for they had as many prysoners, or mo, than they were themselfe in nombre. Than their heraudes sought out the deed bodyes of bothe partyes, and amonge other there was slayne a yonge man, sonne to therle of Namure, called Vassyer of Colles, lorde of Balaster, of whose dethe the duke of Guerles was sory and sore dyspleased, and that he shewed well, for greatly he complayned his deth, and sayde, howe the dethe of a yonge knyght dyspleased hym greatly: for he was a ryght lusty knyght, pleasaunte and joly, and also the yere before he had ben in Pruse with the duke of Guerles. Some counsayled the duke to retourne to the towne of Grave, and there to refresshe theym, and to brynge thyder their prisoners. Naye, nat so, quod the duke, for at my departynge fro Nymay, I avowed to Our Lady there, that if I spedde well, to returne thyder to offre to Our Lady; wherfore I wyll with a mery chere that we all retourne thyder, and thanke Our Lady, who hath sent us the vyctory of our enemyes. No man durste saye naye agaynst the dukes mynde, and so they rode thyder a good pase: it was but two good leages fro thence as the batayle was: anone they came thyder. Whan tydynges came to Nymay of the trouthe of that busynes, men, women, and children were joyfull, and the clergy issued out and receyved the duke with great joy. And the duke of Guerles incontynent with his knyghtes wente to the churche, where the ymage of Our Lady was, in whome the duke had great affyaunce; and there in the chapell he was unarmed of all his peces into his doublet, and gave all his armure to the churche, in the honour of our blessed lady, thankynge her of the journey that he hadde atchyved. And there all the penons of the lordes that were taken that day were hanged up before Our Lady. I canne nat tell if they be there as yet or nat.

CAP. CXXXIII

Howe the duke of Guerles wente agayne to Nymaye.

Than the duke went to his lodgynge, and so dyd every manne with their prisoners, for they thought surely they shulde well paye for their scot, therfore they made good chere.

Great brute spred abrode of this duke of Guerles, who had thus overthrowen the Brabansoys, wherby he was more douted than he was before. The duches of Brabante, who laye at the Dukes Wood with her trayne, whan she sawe howe yvell the mater wente agaynst her, and that the syege of Grave was raysed, she was sore displesed, and good cause why, for it touched her nere. Than she sette a garysone at the Dukes Wood, to kepe fronter there, and so retourned through Champayne, and came to Bruselles, and wrote oftentymes to the duke of Burgoyne, advertysynge hym of her astate, for all her hope of recoveraunce was in hym. Ye may well knowe and byleve that this discomfyture of the Brabansoys was soone knowen in the French kinges courte, but they made lytell accompte therof, syth they sawe the kynge had suche affection to go to Guerles. The kynges counsayle wrote to syr Wyllyam of Tremoyle, and to syr Gervais of Myraude, who were soveraygne capytayns of the men of warre that the duke of Burgoyne had sente into the countrey, and to the kepers of the thre castels on the ryver of Meuse, Buth, Gaulgeth, and Nulle, commaundyng them to kepe well their fronters, and nat to make any issue out wherby to take any domage, tyll they here more: shewynge theym surely howe the kynge in propre persone shortly wolde go se the duke of Guerles in his owne countrey. This sir Willyam was sore dyspleased of the adventure that was fallen on their party, but the tydynges of Fraunce comforted hym agayne, and ordred hymselfe acordynge as he was commaunded.

Nowe lette us retourne to the counsayle of Fraunce, who had great desyre to go into Guerles. They toke suche dyspleasure with the defyaunce that the duke had sente to the kynge, that they nother regarded the begynnynge, myddes, nor ende, and sayd, what so ever it coste, they wolde make the duke repent his dede and to denye it, or els they wolde distroy and burne his landes, and his fathers also, the duke of Julyers. Dukes, erles, barones, knyghtes, squyers, and all other, were warned every man to be redy,

CAP. CXXXIII

Howe the duke of Guerles wente agayne to Nymaye.

acordyng as it apertayned for so longe a voyage. And it was ordeyned that one of the marshals of Fraunce shulde abyde styll in the realme, that was syr Loys of Poitevyr,[1] and he to take hede of the fronters on the other syde of the ryver of Dordone, to the see, for in Languedoc, bytwene the ryver of Gyronde, dyscendynge to the ryver of Loyre, there was truce had bytwene them. And it was ordeyned that the other marshall, syr Moton of Blainvyll, shulde go with the kyng. It was marvayle to thynke of the great provysyon that the lordes made, fyrste, for the kyng, and for the dukes of Berrey, Burgoyn, Tourayne, and Burbon, at the cyties of Reynes,[2] Chalons, Troys, and in all the countreys of Champayne, Raynes, in the bysshopprike of Laon, and Langers; and cartes and caryages were taken up in all partyes. It was marveyle to consyder the great aparell that was made for this journey into Guerles. All this season the duke of Bretagne was at Parys, and coulde nat be delyvered by the kyng, who was most parte al that season at Moustreuell faulte Yon, but alwayes he had good chere, and was alwayes served with fayre wordes and curtesye, and the lordes wolde desyre hym nat to thynke longe, for shortly he shulde be delyvered: but they shewed hym that the kynge had so moch ado for his vyage into Almayne, that he coulde attende to nothynge els. The duke was fayne to suffre, for he coulde do none other, seyng he was at Parys, and he thought he wolde nat departe without the good wyll of the kynge; there he laye at great coste and charge.

[1] *Sancerre.*

[2] *Rheims.*

Whan the certayne was knowen of this voyage into Guerles, and tayles reysed throughe the realme to paye every man their wages that shulde serve the kynge, many of the wyse men of the realme, as well some of the counsayle, as other, sayd, howe it was a great outrage to counsayle the kyng to go farre of to seke for his enemyes, and that he shulde therby put his realme in a great adventure: for the kynge was yonge, and greatly in the favoure of all his people. Wherfore it had ben suffycyente for hym to have suffred one or two of his uncles to have gone thyder with the constable of Fraunce, and a sixe or seven thousande speares, and nat the kyng in propre persone. The kynges

CAP. CXXXIII

Howe the duke of Guerles wente agayne to Nymaye.

uncles were of the same oppynyon, and oftentymes they counsayled the kynge to forbeare his journey hymselfe; but whan so ever they spake to hym therof, he was dyspleased, and wolde saye: If any of you go without my company, it shall be agaynst my wyll; and besyde that ye shall have no money, otherwyse I can nat restrayne you. Whan the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne herde the kynges answere, and sawe the great affection that the kynge hadde to go that voyage, they aunswered and sayd: Syr, a Goddes name ye shall go, and without you we wyll do nothing; therfore, sir, be of good comfort. Than the kynges counsayle regarded one thyng, the whiche they thought ryght necessary, and that was this: Bytwene the Frenche kynge and the kynge of Almayne, of longe tyme there had ben ordynaunces made bytwene them, and that was, that none of them shulde entre with any army into any of their neyghbours landes, nor the Frenche kynge to make no warre agaynst the kynge of Almayne, nor he agaynst the kynge, on payne to ryn in the sentence of Holy Church. And therto they were bounde and solempely sworne the day of their coronacyon, to the entente to kepe their realmes in peace and reste. Wherfore than it was advysed that if the kyng shulde go this voyage into Guerles, the whiche is holden of the kynge of Almayne, that fyrst he and his counsayle shulde suffycyently informe the kyng of Almayne, howe the duke of Guerles had shamefully defyed the Frenche kynge with fell wordes, out of the style and usage that lordes are wonte to defye eche other in warre. And to the entente to cause the duke to denye his dede, and to repente hym, the Frenche kynge wyll come into Almayne, nat agaynst the kyng of Almayne, nor his signory, but agaynst his enemye, and to seke him out where so ever he can fynde hym. To go on this message was charged syr Guy of Hancorte, a ryght sage and dyscrete knyght, and with hym one of the maysters of the parlyament, called mayster Yves Orient. These two were called before the counsayle, and charged to go this voyage to the kynge of Almayne, and they were well informed what they shulde do and say. Thus they departed and toke their waye by Chalons, in Champayne, and rode with a good trayne lyke notable

persons, ambassadours fro the Frenche kynge. And they founde the lorde of Coucy at Chalons, who lay there and retayned knyghtes and squiers of Barre, Lorayne, and Champayne, to go in that voyage with hym in the vowarde. He made to these ambassadours good chere, and made theym a great dyner at their lodgynge; and the nexte daye they departed and rode towardes saynte Menehout, and towardes the countrey of Lusenburgh, there to here certayne tydynges of the kynge of Almayne.

CAP. CXXXIII
Howe the duke of Guerles wente agayne to Nymaye.

CAP. CXXXIV

How the Frenche kyng gave leave to the duke of Bretayne to retourne into his countrey: and howe the countrey of Brabant wolde nat consente too the kynges passage, nor his aremy: and howe the ambassadours of Fraunce sped.

WHYLE these Frenche ambassadours wente to speke with the kyng of Almayne, in the meane tyme the Frenchmen lette nat styll to make their provysions, and commaundement gyven, every manne to be in the felde by the myddes of Auguste, in Champayne, or there aboute, for the kynge wolde be redy by that tyme: they wolde nat tary for any aunswere fro the kynge of Almayn. Than the Frenche kyng, and his uncles, thought it good that the duke of Bretaygne shulde departe home; he was sente for to the kynge to Monstreuell faulte Yon, and there he had good chere of the kyng, and of the duke of Burgoyne, and of the duke of Tourayne; for as than the duke of Berrey was nat there, he was in his owne countrey assemblynge men togyder, and had sente his commaundement into Poyctou, to knyghtes and squyers there, that they shulde drawe into the felde. The kynge, and the duke of Burgoyne, treated amyable the duke of Bretaygne, and shewed hym nothyng but love. Ye have herde here before how the duke had rendred agayne to the constable his thre castels, and the towne of Jugon, but as for the hundred thousande frankes

CAP. CXXXIV

How the Frenche kyng gave leave to the duke of Bretayne to retourne into his countrey.

that he had receyved, he was lothe to rendre them agayne, for he axed alowaunce for suche provysyons as he had made, and fortifyenge of his garysons, castels, and townes, and retayning of men of warre, and kepynge theym all the wynter, for he thought to have had warre. But the kyng and his counsayle fedde hym with so swete pleasaunte wordes, that fynally he was agreed to pay agayne the hundred thousande frankes in fyve yere: xx. thousande every yere tyll it were paied. Than the duke of Bretayne departed ryght amyably, and the kynge gave hym many fayre jouels; and so he returned to Parys, and there the duke of Burgoyn made hym a great dyner, and there they toke leave eche of other. Thanne the duke of Bretaygne payed for all his dyspenses, and toke the waye to Estampes, and rode through Beaulce, to Bogency, on the ryver of Loyre: and there his men wente on before and passed through the countreys of Bloys, Mayne, Thourayne, Anjou, and entred into Bretayne. But the duke hymselfe had redy at Boygency his navy: and there he entred into a fayre shyp, and with hym the lorde Mountforde, and the lorde of Malestroit, and so sayled downe the ryver of Loyre, and passed under the bridge of Bloys, and so went alonge the ryver to Nauntes in his owne countrey.

Nowe let us leave to speke of the duke of Bretayne. And as farre as I coulde here, he helde well the covenaunte made bytwene the Frenche kynge and hym, and dyd nothyng after to be remembred, tyll I closed this boke; I can nat tell what he wyll do herafter; if he do, I shall speke therof acordyng as I shall knowe. Nowe I wyll retourne to the Frenche kynge, who prepared for his journey into Guerles.

Whan the lorde of Coucy was come to the kyng to Monstreau, he shewed the kyng and his counsayle howe he had sped, and howe that all the knyghtes and squyers in Bare, in Lourayne, in Burgoin, and to the rivers of Ryne, and Some, were redy to go with hym. The kyng had therof gret joy, and sayd, by the grace of God he wolde the same yere se his cosyns the duke of Juliers, and Guerles. Fyrste, they determyned whiche way they shulde take, for the surest and shortest way; some sayd, that the right way was to go by Thyreashe,[1] and to passe by the fronter of Haynalt, and of Liege, and to passe through Brabant, and so to entre

[1] *Thiérache.*

CAP. CXXXIV

How the Frenche kyng gave leave to the duke of Bretayne to retourne into his countrey.

into Guerles, and to passe the ryver of Meuse, at Trecte,[1] and so to entre into the lande of Juliers, and fro thence into Guerles. Of this determynacion the kynge and his counsayle wrote to the duches of Brabant, and to the countrey, shewynge them the waye that the French kynge purposed to kepe. It pleased ryght well the duches, but the countrey wolde nat agre therto, but sayd howe the kynge and the Frenchmen shulde have no passage that way, for it shulde be greatly to their domage. The good townes, and the knyghtes of Brabante, were of that opynyon, and sayd to their lady the duches, that if she consented to suffre the Frenchemen to entre into her countrey, they wolde never ayde nor socoure her agaynst the duke of Guerles: but surely they sayd, they wolde close their townes, and go and defende their landes against the Frenchmen, sayeng, howe they shulde lese more by their passinge through their countrey, than if their enemies were in the myddes therof. Whan the duches parceyved the wylles and ententes of the people, as well knightes as other, she sawe no remedy, but to dyssymule the mater. Than she charged sir Johan Orpen,[2] and syr Johan of Grave,[3] and Nycholas de la Money, to go into Fraunce to speke with the Frenche kyng, and with the duke of Burgoyn, to excuse the countrey of Brabant, that he shuld nat take his voyage that waye: for they of the countrey thinke they shulde be sore greved and distroyed, if he shulde passe through their countrey; and she commaunded them to saye, that as for herselfe she coude be well content therwith, and had done all that she coulde that it myght so have ben. They, acordynge to their ladyes mynde, departed fro Brusels, and rode towardes Parys, and dyd so moche by their journeys, that they came to Moustreau fault Yon, where the kynge and his uncles were, and there was nothynge spoken of, but of their goynge into Guerles. The duchesse ambassadours fyrste came to the duke of Burgoyne, and shewed him their letters and their message. And he, at the request of his aunte, was meane to the kynge and to his counsayle: and also the lorde of Coucy dyd what he myght: in so moche that their firste purpose, as passynge through Brabant to entre into Guerles, was broken, and the duches and the countrey excused.

[1] *Maestricht.*

[2] *Ophem.*

[3] *Gavre.*

CAP. CXXXIV

How the Frenche kyng gave leave to the duke of Bretayne to retourne into his countrey.

Than it was advysed that they shulde go along the realme, whiche way they sayd was moste honourable for the kynge, and also for the Brabansoys, Burgonyons, Savoysyns, and other.

Than it was concluded, and such named as shulde go in vowarde. There were ordeyned a xxv. hundred hewers of woodes, hedgers, and dykers, to make playne the wayes. The Frenchemen had way good ynough thorough the realme tyll they came to Ardayne. Than their good wayes began to fayle: than they founde hygh wodes dyvers and savage, and walles, rockes, and mountaynes: these pyoners were sente before the vangarde with a thousande speares, to advyse the best passage for the kyng, and for the hoost, and for their caryage, wherof they had a xii. M. cartes, besyde other caryages, and they to hewe downe the hygh wodes of Ardane, and to make them playne, and to make newe wayes where never none was before, nor no man passed that way. Every man toke great payne to do their dylygence, and specyally suche as were aboute the kynge, for they had never so great affection to go into Flaunders, as they had than to go into Guerles. And the lorde of Coucy was sent to Avignon, to hym that called hymselfe pope Clement, I knowe nat for what cause, and the vicount of Meaulx, sir Johan Roy, and the lorde de la Bove, had the governaunce of his men tyll he retourned agayne.

Nowe let us somwhat speke of sir Guy of Hancourte, and of maister Yves Orient, who were sent to the kynge of Almayne. They rode so long that they came to Convalence,[1] where the kyng was; and whan they hadde refresshed them, they went towardes the kyng, who was enformed of their commyng before, and he had great desyre to know what entent they came for. He assembled his counsayle; and than these two lordes came before the kyng of Almayn, and curtesly dyd salute hym, and delyverd their letters of credence fro the French kyng: the kyng toke and reed them, and than regarded them, and said: Sir Guy, shewe forthe your charge. The knyght spake ryght sagely, and by great leysar, and shewed the kyng and his counsaile how the Frenche kyng with his army royall wyll come into the fronters of Almayne, nat to make any warre agaynst hym,

[1] *Coblentz.*

CAP. CXXXIV

How the Frenche kyng gave leave to the duke of Bretayne to retourne into his countrey.

but agaynst his enemy the duke of Guerles, who had highly defied the kyng their maister with shamefull wordes, and out of the style of all other defyaunces, the whiche the Frenche kyng nor his counsaile can in no wyse suffre. Wherfore sir, quod they, the kyng requyreth you, as ye be a noble king, and of his blode, and he of yours, as all the worlde knoweth, that ye wyll nat sustayne, ayde, nor mentayne the pride of this duke, but ye to holde the aliances and confyrmacions somtyme done and sworne bytwene thempire of Almayne, and the realme of Fraunce, the whiche he wyll fermly kepe on his parte. Than the kyng answered and said: Sir Guy, we are enformed that our cosyn, the Frenche kyng, wyll assemble togider great nombre of people: he neded nat for so smal a mater to assemble suche people, and to spende so moche to seke his enemy so farre of: for if he had desyred me, with lesse traveyle I coude well have caused the duke of Guerles to have come to mercy and reason. Sir, quod the knight, we thanke you that it pleaseth you to say so: but the kyng our maister regardeth but lytell his expenses, nor travell of his men: but he regardeth his honour, and to this his counsaile is agreed; and syth that you nor your counsayle is nat myscontent with our maister, who wyll in no wyse violate nor breke the ordinaunces and confirmacions of olde tyme made bitwene the two realmes of Fraunce and Almain, but kepe and mentayne it, on the paynes that is ordayned, therfore, sir, we be sent nowe to you. Well, quod the kyng, I beleve you well, and as for our cosyn, the Frenche kyng, shal be welcome into these partes; as for me I thynke nat to styrre. Therwith the messangers were ryght joyous, and thought they had sped very well: than they desyred to have letters agayne; the kyng said they shulde have. That day they taryed and dyned with the kynge, and had good chere, and after dyner they wente to their lodgynges. Wherto shulde I make long processe; they sped so well that they had letters, and suche answere as pleased them well. Than they toke leave of the kyng of Almayne, and retourned the same way they came. Nowe let us speke of the Frenche kyng.

CAP. CXXXV

Howe therle of Bloys sent to the Frenche kyng ii. C. speares; and the duke of Loraine, and the lorde Henry of Bare, came to the kyng. And howe the dukes of Jullyers, and Guerles, knewe that the Frenche kyng came on them.

TO accomplysshe this vyage, every lorde in Fraunce apparelled themselfe of every thyng nedefull. The lordes, knightes, and squiers, and other men of warre departed fro their owne places, as well fro Avergne, Rouergue, Quercy, Lymosyn, Poytou, and Xaynton, as fro Bretayne, Normandy, Anjou, Tourayn, and Champayn, and fro all the lymitacions of the realme of France. Fewest men came out of fardest countreis, and the most nombre out of Burgoyn, Picardy, Bare, and Lorayne: and bicause they of the body of Fraunce were in the waye, therfore they were best travelled. It was ordayned by the kyng and his counsayle, that no man shulde take any thyng in the countre without payeng therfore, to thentent that the pore men shulde nat be greved. But for all that ordinaunce, the whiche was well knowen and sprede abrode, and upon payne of great punissyon, yet the men of warre oftentymes sore travelled the countreis as they passed through; they coude nat absteyne, for they were but yvell payde of their wages, and they must nedes lyve. That was their excuse whan they were blamed for their pyllage by the constable, marshalles, or capitaynes. The erle of Bloyes was sente unto, to sende two hundred speares of chosen men, and was promysed well to be payde. I can nat saye howe he was dalte withall, but he sente to serve the kynge two hundred speares, out of the countie of Bloyes, and capitayns of them was, the lorde of Vyenne,[1] sir Guyllyam of saynt Martyne, sir Wyllyam of Chaumont, and the lorde Montigny: these foure had the governaunce of the erle of Bloys bande; they drewe lytell and lytell towardes Champayne, thyder they were ordayned to go. Than the Frenche kynge departed

[1] *Vieuvy.*

CAP. CXXXV

from Moustreau faulte Yon, and tooke the waye to Chalons, in Champayne. As than the duke of Berrey was nat come, for or his departyng he loked to here tidynges fro sir Helyon of Lignacke, whom he had sente to the duke of Lancastre, to Bayon, to have to his wyfe the dukes doghter, as ye have herde before. But he had her nat, for the duke of Lancastre dissymuled with hym, and helde styll the knyght with hym at Bayon; he treated with two parties, but he rather enclyned to the kynge of Castyle, than to the duke of Berrey, and in lykewyse so dyde the lady Constaunce his wyfe: the duke made good chere to bothe parties, to the entent to enflame them the soner to the maryage of his doughter. The kyng of Castyls messangers sore traveyled in treatyng of this maryage; they rested nat to ryde in and out bytwene the parties; they offered great gyftes to those messangers, but they offred nothynge to sir Helyon of Lignacke.[1] Whan it was knowen in the realme of Fraunce that the kyng was at Chalons, on his waye towardes the duchy of Guerles, than every man departed fro their houses, and drewe after the kyng. Than came the duke of Berrey, and lodged at Espinay, and the duke of Burbone at another place, the erle of Marche, the erle Dolphyn of Auvergne, the erle of saynt Pole, and the erle of Tourayne. And with the kynge was the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Lorayne, the duke of Tourayne, the constable of Fraunce, sir Guye of Tremoile, sir Johan of Beull: and the countrey about Chalons, and Raynes, more than xii. leages all about was clene eaten up with the men of warre. As than the lorde of Coucy was nat retourned fro the Pope. Than retourned sir Wyllyam of Hancourt, and mayster Yves Orient, and founde the kynge and his uncles at Chalons: the kyng was joyouse of their commyng, and demaunded tidynges. They shewed the kyng what they had founde and done, and sayd, howe the kynge of Almaygne had made them good chere, and said to the kyng: Syr, whan the kyng had reed the copye of the defyaunce that the duke of Guerles had sent to you, bothe he and his counsayle were yvell content therwith, and sayd howe it was done by great presumpcyon and pride: and we can parceyve none other, but he and his counsaile is well content with your enter-

Howe therle of Bloys sent to the Frenche kyng ii. C. speares.

[1] *le duc le Lancastre leur donnoit plus grant espérance . . . que il ne fesist au dit messire Hélyon de Lignach.*

CAP. CXXXV

Howe therle of Bloys sent to the Frenche kyng ii. C. speares.

price, and ye shall have no let by hym; and the kynge is well content to upholde and maynteyne the auncient alyaunces that is bytwene the empyre and Fraunce; he saythe ye shall have no dout therof. Herof the Frenche kyng was right joyfull; howebeit, some sayd, that wheder the kynge of Almayne wolde or nat, the kyng had puissaunce suffycient to do what he wolde without daunger for all him. Than the kyng ordeyned to departe fro Chalons, in Champayn, and so departed, and toke his way right to Great Pre.

Whan the kynge came to Great Pre, he taried ther a thre dayes; he coude make no gret journeys, there was so moche people before hym and behynde, and rounde about hym, so that he was constrayned to ryde easely to have good lodgyng, and bicause of the great provisyon that folowed after the hoost: fro the first company to the last contayned xxiiii. leages of that countrey, and styll dayly came people. Therle of Great Pre receyved the kynge into his towne and countre, and offred all at the kynges pleasure. The kyng was well content with hym, and therle was apoynted to the vantgard. Thyder came to the kyng the duke of Lorayne, and sir Henry of Bare, with a faire company of men of armes; the duke of Loraine was ordayned to be with his sonne the lorde of Coucy, and sir Henry of Bare to abide with the kyng. The pioners were sore besyed in the forest of Ardane, to cutte downe wode, and to make wayes wher never non was before, they had great payne to fyll the valeys to make the waye playne for the caryage to passe; there were a thre M. that dyde nothyng els. Whan the duches of Brabant knewe surely howe the kyng was on his waye, and approched the foreste of Ardayne, she was therof ryght joyfull, for she thought at that voyage she shulde be well revenged of the duke of Guerles, and howe the Frenche kyng shulde bring hym to reason; and also his father the duke of Julyers, who had done to her many anoyaunces. Than she departed fro Bruselles, and in her company the erle of Samines,[1] in Ardain, the lorde of Bocelairs,[2] and dyvers other, and toke her waye to Lusenbourge, to se the kynge, and to speke with hym. She passed the ryver of Meuse, and the ryver of Huy,[3] and at laste came to Basconque,[4] and there taryed the kynge, for he shulde passe therby; and

[1] *Salm.*

[2] *Rotselaer.*

[3] *Elle passa la Meuse au pont à Huy.*

[4] *Bastogne.*

CAP. CXXXV

Howe therle of Bloys sent to the Frenche kyng ii. C. speares.

so he dyde, for whan he departed Graunt Pre, he passed the ryver of Meuse, at Morsay, with all his hoost, and rode small journeys. Than tidynges came into the duchy of Julyers, and into Guerles, that the Frenche kynge was commynge on them with a hundred thousande men, and that he had never so moche people toguyder before; he was nat so great a company whanne he came to Burbourc, where he thought the Englysshe army had ben gretter than he founde theym. The duke of Julyers than began to dout, but the duke of Guerles made nothing therof, but sayde: Lette them come: the further they come, the more weryer shall they be, and they and their caryages shall waxe feble, and their provisyons shall waste, and wynter shall drawe on, and I am in a stronge countrey. They shall nat entre at their ease; they shall recule backe somtyme otherwise than by the sowne of the trompettes; and it shall behove them to be alwayes toguyder, which they can nat be, if they wyll entre into my countre; and if they disrought and be out of ordre, they shall soone be taken up, wheder they wyll or nat. Howebeit, to saye the trouthe, quod the duke, our cosyn of Fraunce is of a good corage; he sheweth and dothe as I shulde do. Thus the duke of Guerles devysed amonge his knyghtes, but the duke of Julyers was sore abasshed, for he sawe well the French kynge wolde his lande were but brente and loste. Than he toke counsayle of his brother, the Archebysshoppe of Cologne, and of his cosyn the bysshop Leige, sir Arnolde of Hornes, howe he shulde do to save his lande fro brennyng and exylyng. These two prelates counsayled hym and sayd, how it must nedes behove hym to humble hymselfe to the Frenche kynge and to his uncles. The duke sayde, he was well content so to do.

CAP. CXXXVI

Howe sir Helion of Lignacke made his reporte to the duke of Berrey; and howe the lordes of Scotlande assembled toguyder in the cytie of Berdane, and determyned to reyse up an army to entre into Englande; and of an Englysshe squyer, who was takenne by the Scottes, who knewe the secretnesse of bothe realmes, Englande and Scotlande.

THAN by the counsayle of the bysshoppe of Trect,[1] and by the advyse of the bysshoppe of Cologne, the bysshoppe of Liege was sente to the French kynge to treate for the duke of Julyers. The kynge approched, but he passed nat two or thre leages a daye, for his trayne was great bytwene Morsay and Oure Lady of Amount,[2] where as the duke of Berey and all his route, with mo than fyve hundred speres, was lodged. Thyder came to the duke of Berrey, sir Helyon of Lignacke and sir Wyllyam his brother. Sir Wyllyam came fro the siege before Vanchadore, for the duke had sente for hym, and the duke of Burbone had sente for sir Johan Boesmelaunce; and they had lefte styll at the siege all their companyes, and had lefte for capitaynes sir Johan Butlere and sir Loyes Dambier; and sir Helyon of Lignacke came out of Gascon fro Bayon fro the duke of Lancastre. The duke of Berrey made hym good chere, and demaunded tidynges. Sir Helyon shewed hym and sayd, Sir, the kyng of Castyle seketh on the duke of Lancastre to have peace with hym, and treateth sore to have his sone the prince of Wales to mary with the dukes doughter. With that worde the duke of Berrey was pensyve and sayd, Sir Helion, yet I shall sende you ones agayne to knowe more certayne, and the bysshoppe of Poycters with you: but as at this tyme we have ynoughe to do. Also the same weke the lorde of Coucy retourned fro Avygnon and came to the kyng to Ardane; every man was glad of his commynge.

Ye have herde here before howe kynge Richarde of Englande had some trouble; he agaynst his uncles, and his

[1] *Utrecht.*

[2] *Avioth.*

CAP. CXXXVI

uncles agaynst hym, with other dyvers incydentes, as by the duke of Irelande and other, and many knyghtes in Englande deed and beheeded, and the archebysshop of Yorke, brother to the lorde Nevell, was at a poynte to have loste his benefyce. And by the newe counsaylers about the kyng, and by the archbysshoppe of Caunterbury, the lorde Nevell, who had ben the chiefe ruler and kepar of the fronters of Northumberlande agaynst the Scottes fyve yeres togyder, was as than put out of wages. He had before every yere sixtene thousande frankes out of the countie of Yorke and bysshoprike of Durham: and there was sette in his stede the lorde Henry Percye, and he hadde to wages by the yere but a xi. thousande frankes; wherof other lordes of his lygnage, thoughe they were of his kynne, yet they hadde therat great envy and indignacyon one agaynst another; and all this knewe ryght well the Scottes. Than the lordes and knyghtes of Scotlande determyned ones agayne to reyse up an army, and to make a journey into Englande; they sayde it was as than good tyme and houre, for they sawe the Englysshmen were nat all of one accorde; and where as often tymes past they had receyved great buffettes, than they sayd it was good tyme for them to be revenged; and to the entent that their purpose shulde nat be knowen, they ordayned a feest to be holden on the fronter of the Wylde Scottes, at a cytie called Berdane,[1] where assembled in maner all the lordes of Scotlande. At this feest they concluded and made full promyse, that in the myddes of August, the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and eight, they shulde mete all with their puyssaunce on the fronters of Gales,[2] at a castell in the hyghe forest, called Gedeours.[3] Thus at that tyme they departed eche fro other. And of this covenaunt there was none of them that made their kyng privy therto, for they sayd amonge themselfe, their kyng was no manne of warre. There came to Gedeours at the day apoynted, first, the erle James Duglas, sir Johan of Morette, the [4] erle of Marche and of Donbare, sir Wyllyam de Fii,[5] and sir Stephyn erle of Monstres, sir Aucebauce of Duglas, sir Robert Auerceque,[6] sir Marke Odremneu,[7] sir Wyllyam Lymsey,[8] and sir James his brother, Thomas of Berry, sir Alysaunder Lymsey, the lorde of Sechyn,[9] sir Johan of

Howe sir Helion of Lignacke made his reporte to the duke of Berrey.

[1] *Aberdeen.*

[2] *Wales*, i.e. *Cumberland.*

[3] *Jedworth.*

[4] *the* om. P.

[5] *Fife.*

[6] *Erskine.*

[7] *Malcolm Drummond.*

[8] *Lindsay.*

[9] *Seton.*

CAP. CXXXVI

Howe sir Helion of Lignacke made his reporte to the duke of Berrey.

Sobelans,[1] sir Patryke of Donbare, sir John Senclare, sir Patryke of Hoteborne,[2] sir Johan sonne to the lorde Momogomercy, sir Adam of Glasdinyn,[3] Sir Wyllyam Reduryn, sir Wyllyam Stonacke, sir John of Halpebreton,[4] sir Alider and sir Robert Lauder,[5] sir Stephyn Freseyle,[6] sir Alysander Ramsey, and sir Johan his brother, sir Wyllyam Morbereth, sir Maubert Here,[7] sir Wylliam of Waleran, sir John Amonstan,[8] and Davy his sonne,[9] Robert Colemney, and dyvers other knightes and squiers of Scotlande. In threscore yere before there was nat assembled toguyder in Scotlande suche a nombre of good men; they were a xii. hundred speares and xl. thousande men besyde with their archers; but in tyme of nede the Scottes can lytell skyll with their bowes; they rather beare axes, wherwith they gyve great strokes.

[1] *Sandilands.*
[2] *Hepburn.*
[3] *Glendinning.*
[4] *Haliburton.*
[5] *messire Jehan Alidiel, messire Robert Laudre.*
[6] *Fraser.*
[7] *Robert Hert.*
[8] *Ormiston.*
[9] *David Fleming.*

Whan they were thus mette togyder in the marchesse of Gedeours they were mery, and sayd, they wolde never entre againe into their owne houses tyll they had ben in Englande, and done suche dedes there that it shulde be spoken of xx. yere after. And to the entent to make sure poyntment, they assigned a daye to mete at a churche in a fayre launde called Zedon.[10] Tidynges came into Northumberlande, as nothynge can be hydde if men putte to their dilygence to knowe, bothe to therle and to his chyldren, to the seneschall of Yorke, and to sir Mathue Redman, capitayne of Berwike, of this gret feest that had ben at Bredane; and to thentent to knowe wherfore it was, these lordes sente to sertche covertly by heraudes and mynstrels. The Scottes coude nat do their maters so secretly, but the lordes of Englande knewe howe men rose in Scotlande, and how they shulde mete agayne at Gedeours. Brute of this came to Newcastell upon Tyne; and whan the lordes knewe of this, every man toke good hede to his charge, and provyded themselfe redy to assemble if nede were: and this they dyde secretly, bycause their enterprice shulde nat be broken. Every man helde hymselfe in their owne houses, and were determyned to mete toguyder as soone as they knewe that the Scottes came forward, and sayd, If the Scottes come forthe, we shall have knowlege therof; if they drawe towarde Carlyle, we shall entre at another parte into their countrey, and we

[10] *Southdean.*

CAP. CXXXVI

Howe sir Helion of Lignacke made his reporte to the duke of Berrey.

shall do them more dommage than they can do us, for their countrey is all open: we maye go where we lyst, and our countre is strong, and the townes and castelles well closed. And the better to knowe the state of the Scottes, they sent a gentylman of Englande, who knewe ryght well the marchesse of Scotlande, and specially the forest of Gedeours, where the Scottes shulde assemble; and the Englisshe squyer went so forwarde, that without espyeng he came to the churche of Zedon, where the Scottysshe lordes were, and he entred in amonge them lyke one of their servauntes: and there he herde and knewe a great parte of thententes of the Scottes; and at thende of their counsayle the squyer went to a tree where he had tyed his horse, and thought to have founde him there, but he was gone; for a Scotte, who be great theves, had stollen hym awaye. He durste nat speke for hym, but so went forthe afote boted and spurred. And whan he was gone fro the churche two bowe shotte, than there were two Scottysshe knyghtes devysed bytwene themselfe, and sayd one to another: Felowe, I have sene a marveyle; beholde yonder a man gothe alone, and as I thynke he hath lost his horse, for he came by and spake no worde; I wene he be none of our company; lette us ryde after hym to prove my sayeng. They rode after hym and soone overtoke hym. Whane he sawe them commynge, he wolde gladly have ben thens: they came to hym and demaunded whether he wolde and from whens he came, and what he had done with his horse? He began to varry in his sayeng, and answered nat directly to their purpose. They turned hym, and sayde he shulde go and speke with their lordes. They brought hym again to the churche of Zedon, and presented hym to the erle Duglas and to other lordes: they examyned hym, and parceyved well he was an Englyssheman: than they sayde they wolde knowe the trouthe why he came thyder. He was yvell wyllynge to shewe the trouthe, but they handled hym in suche wise that he was fayne to shewe all the mater, for they bare hym in hande, withoute he wolde shewe the trouthe, incontynent he shulde lese his heed; and if he wolde shewe the trouthe, he sholde have none yvell. There they knew by hym that the lordes of Northumberlande had sente hym thyder, to knowe the estate of their enterprice,

CAP. CXXXVI

Howe sir Helion of Lignacke made his reporte to the duke of Berrey.

and whiche waye they wolde drawe. Herof the Scottes were right joyous, and wolde nat for a great good but that they had spoken with this squyer. Than they demaunded agayne of hym in what parte the Englysshe lordes were, and whyder there were any aparence that they wolde assemble toguyder, and what waye they wolde take to entre into Scotlande; outher by the see syde by Berwyke, or els by Donbare, or els the highe waye by the countie of Monstres[1] towarde Strevelyn. The squyer answered and sayde, Sirs, sithe it behoveth me to say the trouthe, I shall.

[1] *Menteith.*

Whan I departed from them fro Newcastell, there was none aparence of their assemblyng, but they be on a redynesse to departe, as well to daye as to morowe; and as soone as they knowe that ye set forwarde and entre into Englande, they wyll nat come to mete with you, for they be nat of the power so to do, nor to fyght with you, sythe ye be so great a nombre as it is sayd in Englande that ye be. Why, quod the erle of Moret, what nombre do they repute us at? Sir, quod he, it is sayd howe ye be a xl. thousande men and xii. hundred speares. And, sir, if ye take the waye into Gales, they wyll go by Berwike, and so to Dunbare, to Edenborowe, or els to Alquest;[2] and if ye take nat that waye, than they wyll go by Carlyle, and into the mountayns of the countrey. Whan the lordes herde that, eche of them regarded other. Than the Englysshe squyer was putte to the kepyng of the Constable of Gedeours, and commaunded that he shulde be surely kepte; than in the same place they wente agayne to counsayle.

[2] *Dalkeith.*

The lordes of Scotlande were ryght joyfull of that they knewe surely the entent of their ennemyes: and than they demaunded counsayle what waye was best for them to take. The moost wysest and best experte in warre spake fyrst, and that was sir Archanbas Duglas and therle of Fenne,[3] sir Alysander Ramsey, sir Johan Saynt Clere, and sir James Lymsey. They sayd, For feare of faylynge of our entent, we counsayle that we make two armyes, to the entente that our ennemyes shall nat knowe wherunto to attende; and lette the moost parte of our hoost and caryage go by Carleon in Galles, and lette the other company, of a thre or four hundred speares and two thousande of other, well horsed,

[3] *Fife.*

drawe towardes Newcastell upon Tyne, and passe the ryver and entre into the bysshoprike of Durham, and burne and exyle the countrey. We shall make a great breull in Englande or our ennemyes be provyded; and if we se that they do folowe us, as they wyll do, than lette us drawe all oure companyes toguyder, and take a good place and fyght with them; we doute nat but we shall have honoure: than lette us be revenged of the dommages they have done to us. This counsayle was accepted, and ordayned that sir Archanbas Duglas, therle of Fenne, the erle of Surlancke, the erle of Monstres, the erle of Mare,[1] therle of Astroderne,[2] sir Stephyn of Freseyle, sir George of Donbare, and sixtene other great lordes of Scotlande, shulde lede the moost parte of the armye towardes Carlyle: and the erle Duglas, sir Orge erle of Mare[3] and of Donbare, and the erle Johan of Morette, these thre to be capitaynes of thre hundred speares of chosen men, and of two thousande other men and archers, and they to go towardes Newcastell and entre into Northumberlande. Thus these two hoostes departed eche from other, eche of them prayenge other, that if the Englysshmen folowed any of their armyes, nat to fyght with them tyll bothe their armyes were joyned toguyder. Thus in a mornyng they departed fro Gedeours, and toke the feldes.

CAP. CXXXVI

Howe sir Helion of Lignacke made his reporte to the duke of Berrey.

[1] *There was no Earl of Mar at this time. Sir John Swinton was Dominus de Mar.*

[2] *Strathern.*

[3] *March.*

CAP. CXXXVII

Howe the erle Duglas wanne the penon of sir Henry Percy, at the barryers before Newcastell upon Tyne; and howe the Scottes brente the castell of Pondlen; and howe sir Henry Percy and sir Rafe his brother toke advyse to folowe the Scottes to conquere agayne the penone that was lost at the scrimysshe.

WHANNE the Englysshe lordes sawe that their squier retourned nat agayne at the tyme apoynted, and coud knowe nothynge what the Scottes dyd, nor what they were purposed to do, than they thought well

CAP. CXXXVII

Howe the erle Duglas wanne the penon of sir Henry Percy.

that their squyer was taken. The lordes sent eche to other to be redy whansoever they shulde here that the Scottes were abrode; as for their messanger, they thought hym but lost.

Nowe lette us speke of the erle Duglas and other, for they had more to do than they that wente by Carlyle.

Whan the erles of Duglas, of Moret, of de la Mare[1] and Donbare, departed fro the great hoost, they toke their waye, thynkyng to passe the water, and to entre into the bysshoprike of Durham, and to ryde to the towne and than to retourne, brinnyng and exyling the countrey, and so to come to Newcastell, and to lodge there in the towne in the dispite of all the Englysshemen: and as they determyned so they dyde assaye to putte it in use, for they rode a great pase under covert, without doyng of any pyllage by the waye, or assautyng of any castell, towre, or house, but so came into the lorde Percyes lande and passed the ryver of Tyne without any let, a thre leages above Newcastell, nat farre fro Braspathe, and at last entred into the bisshoprike of Durham, where they founde a good countrey. Than they beganne to make warre, to slee people, and to brinne vyllages, and to do many sore displeasures.

[1] *March.*

As at that tyme the erle of Northumberlande and the other lordes and knyghtes of that countrey knewe nothyng of their commyng. Whan tidynges came to Newcastell and to Durham that the Scottes were abrode, and that they myght well se by the fiers and smoke abrode in the countrey, the erle sente to Newcastell his two sonnes, and sente commaundement to every man to drawe to Newcastell, sayenge to his sonnes: Ye shall go to Newcastell, and all the countrey shall assemble there, and I shall tary at Nymyche,[2] whiche is a passage that they muste passe by; if we may enclose them we shall spede well. Sir Henry Percy and syr Rafe his brother obeyed their fathers commaundement, and came thyder with them of the countrey. The Scottes rode burnynge and exylynge the countrey, that the smoke therof came to Newecastell. The Scottes came to the gates of Durham, and skrymysshed there, but they taryed nat longe, but returned as they had ordeyned before to do, and that they founde by the waye, toke and distroyed it. Bytwene Durham and Newcastell is but twelve leages Englyssh, and a good countrey. There was

[2] *Alnwick.*

CAP. CXXXVII

Howe the erle Duglas wanne the penon of sir Henry Percy.

no towne without it were closed, but it was brente: and they repassed the ryver of Tyne, where they had passed before, and than came before Newcastell and there rested. All the Englysshe knyghtes and squyers of the countrey of Yorke and bysshoprike of Durham were assembled at Newecastell, and thyder came the seneschall of Yorke, sir Rafe Mombraye, sir Rafe Redmayne, capytayne of Berwyke, sir Roberte Augle,[1] syr Thomas Grey, sir Thomas Holton,[2] sir Johan Felton, sir Johan Lyerborne,[3] syr Thomas Abyton,[4] the baron of Helton,[5] sir Johan Copuldyke, and dyvers other; so that the towne was so full of people that they wyst nat where to lodge.

[1] *Ogle.*
[2] *Holcon* P.
[3] *Lilburn.*
[4] *Abingdon.*
[5] *Hilton. Helcon* P.

Whan these thre Scottysshe erles, who were chyefe capytaynes, had made their enterprise in the bysshoprike of Durham, and had sore overrynne the countrey, than they retourned to Newcastell, and there rested and taryed two dayes, and every day they skrymysshed. The erle of Northumberlandes two sonnes were two yonge lusty knyghtes and were ever formaste at the barryers to skrymysshe. There were many proper feates of armes done and atchyved; there was fyghtynge hande to hande. Amonge other, there fought hande to hande the erle Duglas and sir Henry Percy, and by force of armes the erle Duglas wanne the penon of syr Henry Percyes, wherwith he was sore dyspleased, and so were all the Englysshmen. And the erle Duglas sayd to sir Henry Percy, Syr, I shall beare this token of your prowes into Scotlande, and shall sette it on hyghe on my castell of Alquest,[6] that it may be sene farre of. Syr, quod sir Henry, ye maye be sure ye shall nat passe the boundes of this countrey tyll ye be met withall, in suche wyse that ye shall make none avaunte therof. Well, syr, quod the erle Duglas, come this nyght to my lodgynge and seke for your penon; I shall sette it before my lodgynge, and se if ye wyll come and take it away. As than it was late, and the Scottes withdrewe to their lodginges, and refresshed them with such as they had; they had fleshe ynough. They made that nyght good watche, for they thought surely to be awaked for the wordes they hadde spoken: but they were nat, for syr Henry Percy was counsayled nat soo to do. The nexte day the Scottes dyslodged and returned

[6] *Dalkeith.*

CAP. CXXXVII

Howe the erle Duglas wanne the penon of sir Henry Percy.

towardes their owne countrey, and so came to a castell and a towne called Pouclan,[1] wherof sir Haymon of Alphell[2] was lorde, who was a ryght good knyght. There the Scottes rested, for they came thyder by tymes, and understode that the knyght was in his castell. Than they ordeyned to assayle the castell, and gave a great assaute, so that by force of armes they wan it, and the knyght within it. Than the towne and castell was brent, and fro thens the Scottes wente to the towne and castell of Combur,[3] an eyght Englysshe myle fro Newecastell and there lodged. That day they made none assaut, but the next mornyng they blewe their hornes, and made redy to assayle the castell, whiche was stronge, for it stode in the maresse. That daye they assauted tyll they were wery, and dyd nothynge; than they sowned the retrayte, and retourned to their lodgyng. Than the lordes drewe to counsayle to determyne what they shulde do. The moste parte were of the acorde that the next day they shulde dysloge without gyvynge of any assaute, and to drawe fayre and easly towardes Carlyle. But therle Duglas brake that counsayle, and sayd, in dispyte of sir Henry Percy, who sayd he wolde come and wynne agayn his penon, Let us nat departe hence for two or thre dayes; lette us assayle this castell; it is prignable; we shall have double honour; and than lette us se if he wyll come and fetche his penon; he shall be well defended. Every man acorded to his sayeng, what for their honour and for the love of hym. Also they lodged there at their ease, for there was none that troubled theym: they made many lodgynges of bowes and great herbes, and fortifyed their campe sagely with the maresse that was therby, and their caryages were sette at the entre into the maresses, and had all their beestes within the maresse. Than they aparelled for to saute the next day; this was their entensyon.

Nowe lette us speke of sir Henry Percy and of sir Rafe his brother, and shewe somewhat that they dyd. They were sore dyspleased that therle Duglas had wonne the penon of their armes; also it touched gretly their honours, if they dyd nat as syr Henry Percy sayd he wolde. For he had sayd to the erle Duglas that he shulde nat cary his penon out of Englande, and also he had openly spoken it

[1] *Ponteland.*
[2] *Atholl.*
[3] *Otterburn.*

before all the knyghtes and squiers that were at Newcastell. The Englysshmen there thought surely that therle Duglas bande was but the Scottes vangarde, and that their hoost was lefte behynde. The knyghtes of the countrey, suche as were well experte in armes, spake agaynst sir Henry Percyes opinyon, and sayd to hym: Syr, there fortuneth in warre oftentymes many losses; if the erle Duglas have wonne your penon, he bought it dere, for he came to the gate to seke it, and was well beaten: another day ye shall wynne as moche of hym or more. Syr, we saye this, bycause we knowe well all the power of Scotlande is abrode in the feldes, and if we issue out and be nat men ynowe to fyght with them, and peradventure they have made this skrimysshe with us, to the entent to drawe us out of the towne, and the nombre that they be of, as it is sayd, above xl. thousande men, they maye soone inclose us, and do with us what they wyll. Yet it were better to lese a penon than two or thre hundred knyghtes and squyers, and put all our countrey in adventure. These wordes refrayned syr Henry and his brother, for they wolde do nothynge agaynst counsayle. Than tydynges came to theym by suche as had sene the Scottes, and sene all their demeanoure, and what waye they toke, and where they rested.

CAP. CXXXVII

Howe the erle Duglas wanne the penon of sir Henry Percy.

CAP. CXXXVIII

Howe syr Henry Percy and his brother, with a good nombre of men of armes and archers, went after the Scottes to wynne agayne his penon, that the erle Duglas hadde wonne before Newcastell upon Tyne; and howe they assailed the Scottes before Mountberke in their lodgynges.

IT was shewed to sir Henry Percy and to his broder, and to the other knightes and squyers that were there, by suche as had folowed the Scottes fro Newecastell, and had well advysed their doynge, who said to sir Henry and to syr Rafe: Syrs, we have folowed the Scottes prively, and have discovered all the country. The Scottes be at Pount-

CAP. CXXXVIII

Howe syr Henry Percy and his brother went after the Scottes to wynne agayne his penon.

clan, and have taken syr Haymon Alphell in his owne castell, and fro thence they be gone to Ottenburge, and there they laye this nyght; what they wyll do to morowe we knowe nat. They are ordayned to abyde there; and sirs, surely their great hoost is nat with them, for in all they passe nat there a thre thousande men. Whan sir Henry herde that, he was joyfull, and sayd, Syrs, let us leape on our horses, for by the faythe I owe to God and to my lorde my father, I wyll go seke for my penon, and dyslodge theym this same nyght. Knyghtes and squiers that herde him agreed therto and were joyous, and every man made hym redy. The same evenynge the bysshop of Durham came thyder with a good company, for he herde at Durham howe the Scottes were before Newcastell, and howe that the lorde Percies sonnes, with other lordes and knightes, shulde fight with the Scottes. Therfore the bysshoppe of Durham, to come to the reskewe, had assembled up all the countrey, and so was commynge to Newcastell. But sir Henry Percy wolde nat abyde his comynge, for he had with hym syxe hundred speares knightes and squiers, and an eight thousande fotemen; they thought that sufficyent nombre to fyght with the Scottes, if they were nat but thre hundred speares and thre thousande of other. Thus they departed fro Newcastell after dyner, and set forth in good ordre, and toke the same way as the Scottes had gone, and rode to Ottebourge, a seven lytell leages fro thence, and fayre way, but they coulde nat ryde faste bycause of their fotemen. And whan the Scottes had supped and some layde downe to their rest, and were wery of travaylynge and sautynge of the castell all that day, and thought to ryse erly in the mornyng in cole of the day to gyve a newe assaute, therwith sodenly the Englysshmen came on them and entred into the lodginges, wenyng it had ben the maisters lodgynges, and therin were but varlettes and servauntes. Than the Englysshmen cryed Percy, Percy, and entred into the lodgynges; and ye knowe well where suche affray is, noyse is sone reysed. And it fortuned well for the Scottes, for whan they sawe the Englysshmen came to wake them, than the lordes sente a certayne of their servauntes of fotemen to skrymysshe with the Englysshmen at the entre of the lodgynges; and in

CAP. CXXXVIII

Howe syr Henry Percy and his brother went after the Scottes to wynne agayne his penon.

the meane tyme they armed and aparelled them, every man under his baner and under his capytaynes penon. The night was farre on, but the mone shone so bryght as and it had ben in a maner daye; it was in the moneth of August, and the wether fayre and temperate.

Thus the Scottes were drawen togyder, and without any noyse departed fro their lodgynges, and went aboute a lytell mountayne, whiche was greatly for their advauntage: for all the day before they had well advysed the place, and sayd amonge themselfe: If the Englysshemen come on us sodaynly, than we wyll do thus and thus, for it is a joperdous thyng in the nyght if men of warre entre into our lodgynges; if they do, than we wyll drawe to suche a place, and therby outher we shall wyn or lese. Whan the Englysshmen entred into the felde, at the first they soone overcame the varlettes, and as they entred further in, alwayes they founde newe men to besy them and to skrymysshe with them. Than sodaynly came the Scottes fro aboute the mountayne, and sette on the Englysshmen or they were ware, and cryed their cryes, wherof the Englysshemenne were sore astonyed. Than they cryed Percy, and the other partye cryed Duglas. There began a cruell batayle, and at the fyrst encountre many were overthrowen of bothe partyes. And bycause the Englisshmen were a great nombre, and greatly desyred to vanquysshe their enemyes, and rested at their pas and greatly dyd put abacke the Scottes, so that the Scottes were nere dyscomfyted, than the erle James Duglas, who was yonge and stronge, and of great desyre to gette prayse and grace, and was wyllynge to deserve to have it, and cared for no payne nor travayle, came forthe with his baner, and cryed Duglas, Duglas. And sir Henry Percy and sir Rafe his brother, who had great indygnacion agaynst the erle Duglas, bycause he had wonne the penon of their armes at the barryers before Newcastell, came to that parte, and cryed Percy: their two baners mette and their menne; there was a sore fyght. The Englysshmen were so stronge and fought so valyauntly, that they reculed the Scottes backe. There were two valiaunt knightes of Scottes, under the baner of the erle Duglas, called syr Patryke of Helborne[1] and syr Patryke his sonne; they acquyted themselfe

[1] *Hepburn.*

CAP. CXXXVIII

Howe syr Henry Percy and his brother went after the Scottes to wynne agayne his penon.

that day valyauntly. The erles baner had ben won, and they had nat ben, they defended it so valyauntly, and in the rescuynge therof dyd suche feates of armes, that it was greatly to their recommendacyon and to their heyres for ever after.

It was shewed me by suche as had been at the same batayle, as well by knyghtes and squyers of Englande as of Scotlande, at the house of the erle of Foiz; for anone after this batayle was done I met at Ortays two squyers of Englande, called Johan of Newecastell, and Johan of Cauteron;[1] also whan I retourned fro Avignon I founde also there a knyght and a squyer of Scotlande; I knewe them, and they knewe me by suche tokens as I shewed them of their countrey, for I, auctor of this boke, in my youthe had rydden nygh over all the realme of Scotlande, and I was as than a fyftene dayes in the house of erle Wyllyam Duglas, father to the same erle James, of whome I spake of nowe, in a castell a fyve leages fro Edenborow, in the countrey of Alquest; the same tyme I sawe there this erle James, a fayre yonge chylde, and a suster of his, called the lady Blaunche. And I was enfourmed by bothe these parties how this batayle was as sore a batayle fought as lyghtly hath been harde of before of suche a nombre, and I beleve it well. For Englysshmen on the one partye and Scottes on the other party are good men of warre: for whan they mete there is a harde fight without sparynge; there is no hoo bytwene them as longe as speares, swordes, axes, or dagers wyll endure, but lay on eche upon other. And whan they be well beaten, and that the one parte hath optaygned the victory, they than glorifye so in their dedes of armes and are so joyfull, that suche as be taken, they shall be raunsomed or they go out of the felde, so that shortely eche of them is so contente with other, that at their departynge curtoysly they wyll saye, God thanke you. But in fyghtynge one with another there is no playe nor sparynge; and this is trewe, and that shall well apere by this sayd rencounter, for it was as valyauntly foughten as coulde be devysed, as ye shall here.

[1] *Cantiron.*

CAP. CXXXIX

Howe the erle James Duglas by his valyantnesse incouraged his men who were reculed, and in a maner discomfyted, and in his so doynge he was wounded to dethe.

KNYGHTES and Squyers were of good corage on bothe parties to fyght valyauntly; cowardes there had no place, but hardynes rayned with goodly feates of armes, for knyghtes and squiers were so joyned togyder at hande strokes, that archers had no place of nother party. There the Scottes shewed great hardynesse, and fought meryly, with great desyre of honour. The Englysshmen were thre to one; howebeit, I say nat but Englysshmen dyd nobly acquyte themselfe, for ever the Englysshmen had rather ben slayne or taken in the place than to flye. Thus as I have sayd the baners of Duglas and Percy and their men were met eche agaynst other, envyous who shulde wynne the honoure of that journey. At the begynnynge the Englysshemen were so stronge, that they reculed backe their enemyes. Than the erle Duglas, who was of great harte and hygh of enterprise, seynge his men recule backe, than to recover the place and to shewe knightly valure, he toke his axe in bothe his handes, and entred so into the prease, that he made hymselfe waye in suche wyse that none durste aproche nere hym, and he was so well armed that he bare well of suche strokes as he receyved. Thus he wente ever forwarde lyke a hardy Hector, wyllynge alone to conquere the felde, and to dyscomfyte his enemyes. But at laste he was encountred with thre speares all at ones; the one strake hym on the shulder, the other on the breste, and the stroke glented downe to his bely, and the thyrde strake hym in the thye, and sore hurte with all thre strokes, so that he was borne perforce to the erthe, and after that he coulde nat be agayne releved. Some of his knyghtes and squyers folowed hym, but nat all, for it was nyght and no lyght but by the shynynge of the mone. The Englisshmen

CAP. CXXXIX

Howe the erle James Duglas by his valyantnesse incouraged his men.

knewe well they had borne one downe to the erth, but they wyst nat who it was, for if they had knowen that it had ben the erle Duglas, they had been therof so joyfull and so prowde, that the vyctory had been theirs. Nor also the Scottes knew nat of that adventure tyll the ende of the batayle, for if they had knowen it, they shulde have been so sore dyspayred and dyscoraged, that they wolde have fledde awaye. Thus as the erle Duglas was felled to the erth he was striken into the heed with an axe, and another stroke throughe the thye: the Englysshemen passed forthe and tooke no hede of hym; they thought none otherwyse but that they hadde slayne a man of armes. On the other parte, the erle George de la Marche and of Donbare fought ryght valyantly, and gave the Englisshmen moche ado, and cryed: Folowe Duglas, and sette on the sonnes of Percy. Also erle Johan of Morette with his baner and men fought valyauntly, and sette fyersly on the Englisshmen, and gave them so moche to do, that they wyste nat to whome to attende.

CAP. CXL

Howe in this batayle sir Rafe Percye was sore hurte, and taken prysoner by a Scottysshe knyght.

OF all the bataylles and encountrynges that I have made mencion of here before in all this hystory, great or smalle, this batayle that I treate of nowe, was one of the sorest and best foughten, without cowardes or faynte hertes. For there was nother knyght nor squyer but that dyde his devoyre and fought hande to hande; this batayle was lyke the batayle of Becherell, the whiche was valyauntly fought and endured. The erle of Northumberlandes sonnes, sir Henry and sir Rafe Percy, who were chefe soverayne capytayns, acquyted themselfe nobly. And sir Rafe Percy entred in so farre amonge his enemyes that he was closed in and hurte, and so sore handeled that his brethe was so shorte that he was taken prysoner by a knyght of the erle of Morettes, called sir Johan Makyrell.[1] In the

[1] *Maxwell.*

takynge the Scottysshe knyght demaunded what he was, for it was in the nyght, so that he knewe hym nat. And syr Rafe was so sore overcome and bledde fast, that at laste he sayd, I am Rafe Percy. Than the Scotte sayde, Syr Rafe, reskewe or no reskewe, I take you for my prisoner; I am Makyrell. Well, quod sir Rafe, I am contente; but than take hede to me, for I am sore hurte; my hosen and my greves are full of blode. Than the knyght sawe by hym the erle Moret, and sayde, Syr, here I delyver to you syr Rafe Percy as prisoner; but, sir, lette good hede be taken to hym, for he is sore hurte. The erle was joyfull of those wordes, and sayd, Makyrell, thou hast well wonne thy spurres. Than he delyvered syr Rafe Percy to certayne of his men, and they stopped and wrapped his woundes. And styll the batayle endured, nat knowynge who had as than the better, for there were many taken and reskewed agayne that came to no knowledge.

CAP. CXL

Howe in this batayle sir Rafe Percye was sore hurte.

Nowe let us speke of the yonge James erle of Duglas, who dyd marvayls in armes or he was beaten downe. Whan he was overthrown the preace was great about him, so that he coulde nat releve, for with an axe he had his dethes wounde. His men folowed him as nere as they coulde, and there came to hym syr James Lymsey[1] his cosyn, and syr Johan and sir Water Saynt Clere, and other knyghtes and squiers. And by hym was a gentle knyght of his, who folowed him all the day, and a chapelayne of his, nat lyke a preest, but lyke a valyaunt man of armes: for all that night he folowed the erle with a good axe in his handes, and styll skrymysshed aboute the erle there as he lay, and reculed backe some of the Englisshemen with gret strokes that he gave. Thus he was founde fyghtynge nere to his mayster, wherby he hadde great prayse, and therby the same yere he was made archedecon of Abredan. This preest was called syr Willyam of Norbernyche;[2] he was a tall man and a hardy, and was sore hurte. Whanne these knyghtes came to the erle, they founde hym in an yvell case, and a knyght of his lyenge by hym, called sir Roberte Harte; he had a fyftene woundes in one place and other. Than syr Johan Sayncte Clere demaunded of the erle howe he dyd. Ryght yvell, cosyn, quod therle; but thanked be

[1] *Lindsay.*

[2] *North Berwick.*

CAP. CXL
Howe in this batayle sir Rafe Percye was sore hurte.

God there hath been but a fewe of myne auncytours that hathe dyed in their beddes. But, cosyn, I requyre you thynke to revenge me, for I recon myselfe but deed, for my herte faynteth often tymes. My cosyn Water and you, I praye you rayse up agayne my baner, whiche lyeth on the grounde, and my squyer Davy Collemine slayne. But, sirs, shewe nother to frende nor foo in what case ye se me in, for if myne enemyes knewe it they wolde rejoyse, and our frendes discomforted. The two bretherne of Saynt Clere and sir James Lymsey dyd as the erle hadde desyred theym, and reysed up agayne his baner, and cryed Duglas. Suche as were behynde and herde that crye, drewe togyther and set on their enemyes valyauntly, and reculed backe the Englysshemen, and many overthrowen, and so drave the Englysshemen backe beyonde the place where as the erle laye, who was by that tyme deed, and so came to the erles baner, the whiche syr Johan Saynte Clere helde in his handes, and many good knyghtes and squyers of Scotlande aboute hym: and styll company drewe to the crye of Duglas. Thyder came the erle Morette, with his baner, well accompanyed, and also the erle de la Mare and of Donbare. And whan they sawe the Englisshmen recule, and their company assembled togyder, they renewed agayne the batayle, and gave many harde and sadde strokes.

CAP. CXLI

Howe the Scottes wanne the batayle agaynst the Englysshemen besyde Otteburge, and there was taken prisoners sir Henry and sir Rafe Percy; and howe an Englysshe squyer wolde nat yelde him, no more wolde a Scottysshe squier, and so dyed both; and howe the bysshope of Durham and his company were discomfyted amonge themselfe.

TO saye trouth, the Englysshmen were sorer travayled than the Scottes, for they came the same day fro Newcastell upon Tyne, a sixe Englyssh myles, and went a great pase, to the entente to fynde the Scottes, whiche they dyd; so that by their fast goynge they were nere out of brethe, and the Scottes were fresshe and well rested, which greatly avayled them when tyme was of their busynesse. For in the laste skrymysshe they reculed backe the Englysshemen, in suche wyse, that after that they coude no more assemble togyther, for the Scottes past through their batayles. And it fortuned that sir Henry Percy, and the lorde of Mountcombre,[1] a valyaunt knyght of Scotlande, fought togyther hande to hande ryght valyauntly, without lettynge of any other, for every man had ynough to do. So longe they two fought, that perforce of armes syr Henry Percy was taken prisoner by the sayde lorde of Mountcomber.

[1] *Montgomery.*

The knyghtes and squiers of Scotlande, as sir Mare Adremench,[2] sir Thomas Avernesquyn,[3] syr Willyam, sir James, and sir Alysander Lymsey, the lorde of Faulcon,[4] syr Johan of Saynte de Laux,[5] syr Patryke of Donbare, sir Johan, and syr Water Saynte Clere, sir Johan Makyrell, syr Guy Stewarde, syr Johan Halebreton, syr Alysaunder Ramsey, Roberte Coloumine, and his two sonnes, Johan and Roberte, who were there made knyghtes, and a hundred knyghtes and squyers that I can nat name; all these ryght valyauntly dyd acquyte themselfe. And on the Englysshe party before that the lorde Percy was taken, and after, there fought

[2] *Malcolm Drummond.*
[3] *Erskine.*
[4] *Swinton.*
[5] *Sandilands.*

CAP. CXLI

Howe the Scottes wanne the batayle agaynst the Englysshemen besyde Otteburge.

valyauntly syr Rafe Longeble,[1] syr Mathewe Redman, syr Thomas Ogle, sir Thomas Gray, sir Thomas Holton,[2] sir Thomas Abreton, sir Johan Lyerbon, sir Willyam Walsyngham, the baron of Helton,[3] sir Johan of Culpedup,[4] the seneschall of Yorke, and dyvers other fotemen. Wherto shulde I write longe proces: this was a sore batayle, and well foughten. And as fortune is alwayes chaungeable, though the Englisshmen were more in nombre than the Scottes, and were ryght valyaunt men of warre, and well experte, and that at the fyrste fronte they reculed backe the Scottes, yet fynally the Scottes optaygned the place and vyctory, and all the foresaid Englysshmen taken, and a hundred mo, savynge sir Mathewe Redman, capytayne of Berwyke, who whan he knewe no remedy nor recoveraunce, and sawe his company flye fro the Scottes, and yelded theym on every syde, than he toke his horse and departed to save hymselfe. The same season aboute the ende of this dyscomfyture, there was an Englysshe squyer called Veleton,[5] a goodly and a valyant man, and that was well sene, for of all that nyght he wolde nother flye nor yet yelde hym. It was sayd he had made a vowe at a feest in Englande, that the first tyme that ever he sawe Englisshemen and Scottes in batayle, he wolde so do his devoyre to his power, in suche wyse, that eyther he wolde be reputed for the best doer on bothe sydes, or els to dye in the payne. He was called a valyaunt and a hardy man, and dyd so moche by his prowes, that under the baner of the erle of Morette, he dyd suche valyauntnesse in armes, that the Scottes hadde marvayle therof, and so was slayne in fyghtynge. The Scottes wolde gladly have taken hym alyve, but he wolde never yelde: he hoped ever to have been rescewed. And with him there was a Scottysshe squier slayne, cosyn to the kynge of Scottes, called Symon Glaudyn;[6] his dethe was greatly complayned of the Scottes. This batayle was fierse and cruell tyll it came to the ende of the discomfyture, but whan the Scottes sawe the Englysshmen recule and yelde themselfe, than the Scottes were curtes, and sette theym to their raunsome, and every manne sayde to his prysoner: Syrs, go and unarme you and take youre ease, I am your mayster; and so made their prisoners as good chere as though they had ben

[1] *Lumley.*
[2] *Helcon* P.
[3] *Helcon* P.
[4] *Copeldike.*
[5] *Waltham.*
[6] *Glendinning.*

brethern, without doyng to them any dommage. The chase endured a fyve Englysshe myles, and if the Scottes had been men ynowe there had none scaped, but outher they had ben taken or slayne. And if Archambault Duglas, and the erle of Fen,[1] the erle Surlant, and other of the great company, who were gone towardes Carlyle, had ben there, by all lykelyhode they had taken the bysshoppe of Durham, and the towne of Newcastell upon Tyne. I shall shewe you howe. The same evenyng that the Percyes departed fro Newcastell, as ye have herde before, the bysshop of Durham, with the rerebande, came to Newcastell and supped. And as he satte at the table, he had ymaginacion in hymselfe howe he dyd nat acquite hymselfe well to se the Englysshemen in the felde, and he to be within the towne; incontynent he caused the table to be taken away, and commaunded to sadell his horses, and to sowne the trumpettes, and called up men in the towne to arme themselfe and to mount on their horses, and footemen to order themselfe to departe. And thus every man departed out of the towne, to the nombre of sevyn thousande, two thousande on horsebacke, and fyve thousande a fote. They toke their waye towarde Octenbourg, where as the batayle had ben; and by that tyme they hadde gone two myle from Newcastell, tidynges came to theym howe their men were fightynge with the Scottes. Therwith the bysshoppe rested there, and incontynent came mo flyeng faste, that they were out of brethe. Than they were demaunded howe the mater wente; they aunswered and sayde: Right yvell; we be all disconfyted; here cometh the Scottes chasynge of us. These tidynges troubled the Englysshmen, and began to doute. And agayne the thirde tyme men came flyeng as fast as they might. Whane the men of the bysshoprike of Durham herde of these yvell tidynges, they were abasshed, in suche wise that they brake their array, so that the bysshoppe coude nat holde togyder the nombre of fyve hundred. It was thought that if the Scottes had folowed them in any nombre, seyng that it was night, that in thentryng into the towne, and the Englisshmen so abasshed, the towne had ben won.

CAP. CXLI

Howe the Scottes wanne the batayle agaynst the Englysshemen besyde Otteburge.

[1] *Fife.*

The bysshoppe of Durham, beyng in the felde, had good

CAP. CXLI

Howe the Scottes wanne the batayle agaynst the Englysshemen besyde Otteburge.

wyll to have socoured the Englysshmen, and reconforted his men as moche as he coude, but he sawe his owne men flye as well as other. Than he demaunded counsaile of sir Wyllyam Lussey, and of sir Thomas Clyfforde, and of other knyghtes, what was best to do. These knyghtes for their honoure wolde gyve hym no counsayle; for they thought to retourne agayne and do nothyng shulde sowne greatly to their blame, and to go forthe myght be to their great dommage: and so stode styll and wolde gyve none answere. And the lengar they stode the fewer they were, for some styll stale awaye. Than the bysshoppe sayd, Sirs, all thynges considred, it is none honour to putte all in parell, nor to make of one yvell dommage twayne; we here howe our company be disconfyted, and we can nat remedy it: for to go to recover them, we knowe nat with whom, nor with what nombre we shall mete; lette us retourne fayre and easely for this night to Newcastell, and to morowe lette us drawe toguyder, and go loke on our enemyes. Every man answered, As God wyll, so be it. Therwith they retourned to Newcastell. Thus a man maye consyder the great defaute that is in men that be abasshed and disconfyted. For if they had kepte them togyder, and have turned agayn suche as fledde, they had disconfyted the Scottes: this was the opynion of dyvers. And bycause they dyde nat thus, the Scottes had the vyctorie.

CAP. CXLII

Howe sir Mathue Reedman departed fro the batayle to save hymselfe; and how sir James Lynsaye was taken prisoner by the bysshoppe of Durhame: and howe after the bataile, scurrers were sente forthe to discover the countrey.

I SHALL shewe you of sir Mathewe Reedman, who was on horsbacke to save himselfe, for he alone coude nat remedy the mater. At his departynge sir James Lynsay was nere to hym, and sawe howe sir Mathue departed. And this sir James to wyn honour, folowed in

CAP. CXLII

Howe sir Mathue Reedman departed fro the batayle to save hymselfe.

chase sir Mathue Reedman, and came so nere hym that he myght have stryken hym with his speare if he had lyst. Than he said, Ah, sir knyght, tourne, it is a shame thus to flye: I am James of Lynsay: if ye wyll nat tourne I shall stryke you on the backe with my speare. Sir Mathewe spake no worde, but strake his horse with the spurres sorer than he dyde before. In this maner he chased hym more than thre myles, and at laste sir Mathue Reedmans horse foundred and fell under hym. Than he stepte forthe on the erthe, and drewe oute his swerde, and toke corage to defende hymselfe; and the Scotte thought to have stryken hym on the brest, but sir Mathewe Reedman swarved fro the stroke, and the speare poynt entred into the erthe: than sir Mathue strake asonder the speare with his swerde. And whan sir James Lynsay sawe howe he had loste his speare, he caste awaye the tronchon and lyghted afote, and toke a lytell batayle axe that he caryed at his backe, and handeled it with his one hande, quickely and delyverly, in the whiche feate Scottes be well experte. And than he sette at sir Mathue, and he defended hymselfe properly. Thus they tourneyed toguyder, one with an axe, and the other with a swerde, a longe season, and no man to lette them. Fynally, sir James Lynsay gave the knyght suche strokes, and helde hym so shorte, that he was putte out of brethe, in suche wyse that he yelded hymselfe, and sayde: Sir James Lynsay, I yelde me to you. Well, quod he, and I receyve you, rescue or no rescue. I am content, quod Reedman, so ye deale with me lyke a good companyon. I shall nat fayle that, quod Lynsay, and so put up his swerde. Well, sir, quod Reedman, what wyll you nowe that I shall do? I am your prisoner, ye have conquered me; I wolde gladly go agayn to Newcastell, and within fyftene dayes I shall come to you into Scotlande, where as ye shall assigne me. I am content, quod Lynsay: ye shall promyse by your faythe to present yourselfe within this iii. wekes at Edenborowe, and whereso-ever ye go, to repute yourselfe my prisoner. All this sir Mathue sware and promysed to fulfyll. Than eche of them toke their horses and toke leave eche of other. Sir James returned, and his entent was to go to his owne company the same way that he came, and sir Mathewe Reedman to New-

CAP. CXLII

Howe sir Mathue Reedman departed fro the batayle to save hymselfe.

castell. Sir James Lynsay coulde nat kepe the ryght waye as he came: it was darke and a myst, and he hadde nat rydden halfe a myle, but he met face to face with the bysshoppe of Durham, and mo than v. hundred Englysshmen with hym. He might wel escaped if he had wolde, but he supposed it had been his owne company that had pursued the Englysshmen: whan he was among them, one demaunded of hym what he was. I am, quod he, sir James Lynsay. The bysshoppe herde those wordes, and stepte to hym, and said, Lynsay, ye are taken: yelde ye to me. Who be you, quod Lynsay. I am, quod he, the bysshop of Durham. And fro whens come you, sir, quod Lynsay. I come fro the batayle, quod the bysshop, but I stroke never a stroke there; I go backe to Newcastell for this night, and ye shal go with me. I maye nat chose, quod Lynsay, sithe ye wyll have it so; I have taken, and I am taken, suche is the adventures of armes. Whom have ye taken: quod the bysshop. Sir, quod he, I toke in the chase sir Mathue Redman. And where is he, quod the bysshop. By my faythe, sir, he is retourned to Newcastell; he desyred me to trust hym on his faythe for thre wekes, and so have I done. Well, quod the bysshop, lette us go to Newcastell, and there ye shall speke with hym. Thus they rode to Newcastell toguyder, and sir James Lynsay was prisoner to the bisshop of Durham.

Under the baner of therle de la Mare and of Donbare, was taken a squier of Gascone, called John of Newcastell.[1] And under the baner of the erle of Moret, was taken his companyon John de Canteron. Thus the felde was clene avoyded or the daye apered. The Scottes drewe togyder, and toke guydes, and sente out scurrers to se if any men were in the waye fro Newcastell, to the entent that they wolde nat be troubled in their lodgynges; wherin they dyd wisely. For whan the bysshop of Durham was come agayne to Newcastell, and in his lodgynge, he was sore pensyfe, and wyst nat what to saye nor do, for he herde say how his cosyns the Percies were slayne or taken, and all the knightes that were with them. Than he sent for all the knyghtes and squyers that were in the towne; and whan they were come, he demaunded of them if they shulde leave the

[1] *Castelnau.*

mater in that case, and sayde: Sirs, we shall beare great blame if we thus retourne without lokynge on oure ennemyes. Than they concluded by the sonne rysynge every manne to be armed, and on horsbacke, and a foote, to departe out of the towne, and to go to Octenbourge, to fyght with the Scottes. This was warned through the towne by a trumpet, and every man armed theym and assembled before the bridge. And by the sonne rysynge they departed by the gate towardes Berwyke, and tooke the waye towardes Octenbourge, to the nombre of tenne thousande, what afoote and a horsebacke. They were nat gone paste two myle fro Newecastell, whan the Scottes were sygnifyed that the bysshoppe of Durham was commynge to theymwarde to fyght: this they knewe by their spyes, suche as they had sette in the feldes.

CAP. CXLII

Howe sir Mathue Reedman departed fro the batayle to save hymselfe.

After that sir Mathewe Reedman was retourned to Newcastell, and hadde shewed to dyvers howe he had been taken prisoner by sir James Lynsey, than it was shewed hym howe the bisshoppe of Durham hadde taken the sayd sir James Lynsey, and how that he was there in the towne as his prisoner. As soone as the bysshoppe was departed, sir Mathue Reedman wente to the bysshoppes lodgyng to se his mayster, and there he founde hym in a studye, lyeng in a wyndowe, and sayd: What, sir James Lynsay, what make you here? Than sir James came forthe of the study to hym, and gave hym good morowe, and sayd: By my faythe, sir Mathewe, fortune hathe brought me hyder; for as soone as I was departed fro you, I mette by chaunce the bysshoppe of Durham, to whome I am prisoner, as ye be to me; I beleve ye shall nat nede to come to Edenborowe to me to make your fynaunce: I thynke rather we shall make an exchaunge one for another, if the bysshoppe be so contente. Well, sir, quod Reedman, we shall accorde ryght well toguyder, ye shall dyne this daye with me; the bysshop and our men be gone forthe to fyght with your men, I can nat tell what shall fall, we shall know at their retourne. I am content to dyne with you, quod Lynsay. Thus these two knyghtes dyned toguyder in Newcastell.

Whan the knyghtes of Scotlande were enformed howe the bysshop of Durham came on them with x. thousande men,

CAP. CXLII

Howe sir Mathue Reedman departed fro the batayle to save hymselfe.

they drewe to counsayle to se what was best for them to do, outher to departe or els to abyde the adventure. All thynges consydred, they concluded to abyde, for they sayd they coude nat be in a better nor a stronger place than they were in alredy. They had many prisoners, and they coulde nat cary theym awaye if they shulde have departed: and also they hadde many of their men hurte, and also some of their prisoners, whome they thought they wolde nat leve behynde them. Thus they drewe toguyder, and ordred so their felde, that ther was no entre but one waye, and they sette all their prisoners toguyder, and made them to promise howe that, rescue or no rescue, they shulde be their prisoners. After that they made all their mynstrels to blowe up all atones, and made the greattest revell of the worlde. Lightlye it is the usage of Scottes, that whan they be thus assembled toguyder in armes, the footemen bereth about their neckes hornes in maner lyke hunters, some great, some small, and of all sortes, so that whan they blowe all at ones, they make suche a noyse, that it may be herde nighe iiii. myles of; thus they do to abasshe their enemyes, and to rejoyse themselfes. Whan the bysshoppe of Durham, with his baner, and x. M. men with hym, were aproched within a leage, than the Scottes blewe their hornes in suche wise, that it semed that all the devyls in hell had been amonge them, so that suche as herde them, and knewe nat of their usage, were sore abasshed. This blowyng and noyse endured a longe space, and than cessed. And by that tyme thenglysshmen were within lesse than a myle. Than the Scottes began to blowe agayn, and made a great noyse, and as long endured as it dyd before. Than the bysshop aproched with his batayle well rainged in good order, and came within the syght of the Scottes, as within ii. bowe shot or lesse: than the Scottes blewe again their hornes a longe space. The bysshop stode styll to se what the Scottes wolde do, and avewed them well, and saw howe they were in a stronge grounde, greatlye to their advauntage. Than the bysshop tooke counsayle what was beste for hym to do. But all thynge well advysed, they were nat in purpose to entre in amonge the Scottes to assayle them, but retourned withoute doyng of any thyng, for they sawe well they myght rather

lese than wyn. Whan the Scottes sawe the Englysshemen recule, and that they shulde have no batayle, they wente to their lodgynges and made mery, and thane ordayned to departe fro thens. And bycause that sir Rafe Percy was sore hurte, he desyred of his maister that he myght retourne to Newcastell, or into some place where as it pleased hym, unto such tyme as he were hole of his hurtes; promysynge as soone as he were able to ryde, to retourne into Scotlande, outher to Edenborowe, or into any other place apoynted: the erle of Mare,[1] under whom he was taken, agreed therto, and delyvered hym a horse lytter, and sent hym awaye. And by lyke covenaunt dyvers other knyghtes and squyers were suffred to returne, and tooke terme outher to retourne, or els to paye their fynaunce, suche as they were apoynted unto. It was shewed me by the informacyon of the Scottes, suche as had been at this sayd batayle, that was bytwene Newcastell and Octeburge in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and viii., the xix. daye of August, howe that there were taken prisoners of the Englisshe partie M. and xl. men, one and other, and slayne in the felde and in the chase xviii. hundred and xl., and sore hurte mo than a thousande. And of the Scottes there were a hundred slayne, and taken in the chase mo than two hundred: for as the Englysshmen fledde, whan they sawe any advauntage they retourned agayne and fought. By that meanes the Scottes were taken and none otherwyse. Every man maye well consydre that it was a well fought felde, whan there were so many slayne and taken on bothe parties.

CAP. CXLII

Howe sir Mathue Reedman departed fro the batayle to save hymselfe.

[1] *Moray.*

CAP. CXLIII

Howe the Scottes departed and caryed with them therle Duglas deed, and buryed hym in the abbey of Nimays: and howe sir Archambault Duglas and his company departed fro before Carlyle, and retourned into Scotlande.

AFTER this batayle thus furnysshed, every man retourned, and the erle Duglas deed body chested and layde in a chare, and with hym sir Robert Hart, and Symon Glaudyn. Than they prepared to departe. So they departed and ledde with them sir Henry Percy, and mo than xl. knyghtes of Englande, and tooke the waye to the abbey of Nimay.[1] At their departynge they sette fyre in their lodgynges, and rode all the daye, and yet lay that night in the Englysshe grounde: none denyed them. The nexte daye they dislodged early in the mornyng, and so came that daye to Nimay; it is an abbey of blacke monkes, on the border bytwene bothe realmes. There they rested, and buryed the erle James Duglas; the seconde daye after, his obsequye was done reverently, and on his body layde a tombe of stone, and his baner hangyng over hym. Wheder there were as than any mo erles of Duglas to whome the lande retourned or nat, I can nat tell. For I sir John Froissart, auctour of this boke, was in Scotlande, in the erles castell of Alquest, lyveng erle Wyllyam, at whiche tyme he had two chyldren, a sonne and a doughter; but after there were many of the Duglasses, for I have sene a v. bretherne, all squiers, bearyng the name of Duglas, in the kyng of Scotlandes house David; they were sonnes to a knight in Scotlande, called sir James Duglas, and they bare in their armes golde, thre oreyls goules. But as for the herytage I knowe nat who had it. As for sir Archambalt Duglas, of whom I have spoken before in this hystorie in dyvers places, who was a valyant knight, and gretly redouted of the Englysshmen, he was but a bastarde.

[1] *Melrose.*

Whan these Scottes hadde ben at Nymaye abbey, and

done there all that they came thyder for, than they departed eche fro other, and wente into their owne countreis, and suche as hadde prisoners, some ledde them awaye with them, and some were raunsomed and suffred to returne. Thus the Englysshemen founde the Scottes right curtesse and gentyll, in their delyveraunce and raunsome, so that they were well contente. This was shewed me in the countrey of Bierne, in the erle of Foiz house, by a knyght named Johan of Newcastell, who was taken prisoner at the same journey, under the baner of the erle of Mare and Donbare: and he greatly praysed the sayd erle, for he suffred hym to passe in maner as he desyred hymselfe.

CAP. CXLIII

Howe the Scottes departed and caryed with them therle Duglas deed.

Thus these men of warre of Scotlande departed, and raunsomed their prisoners as soone as they myght, ryght curtesly, and so retourned lytell and lytell into their owne countreis. And it was shewed me, and I beleve it well, that the Scottes had by reason of that journey two hundred thousande frankes for raunsomyng of prisoners; for sythe the batayle that was before Strevelyne, in Scotlande, where as sir Robert of Breuce, sir Wyllyam Duglas, sir Robert Versey, sir Symon Freseyle, and other Scottes, chased the Englysshmen thre dayes, they never had journey so profytable nor so honorable for them, as this was. Whan tidynges came to the other company of the Scottes that were besyde Carlyle, howe their company had distressed the Englysshemen besyde Octeburgh, they were greatly rejoysed, and displeased in their myndes that they had nat ben there. Than they determyned to dislodge, and to drawe into their owne countreys, seynge their other company were withdrawen. Thus they dislodged and entred into Scotlande.

Nowe lette us leave to speke of the Scottes, and of the Englysshemen, for this tyme, and lette us retourne to the yonge Charles of Fraunce, who with a great people wente into Almaygne, to bringe the duke of Guerles to reason.

Whan the Frenche kynge and all his armye were paste the ryver of Muese, at the bridge of Morsay, they tooke the waye of Ardayn, and of Lusenbourgh, and alwayes the pyoners were before beatynge woodes and busshes, and makynge the wayes playne. The duke of Julyers and his countrey greatly douted the comyng of the Frenche kynge,

CAP. CXLIII

Howe the Scottes departed and caryed with them therle Duglas deed.

for they knewe well they shulde have the fyrst assaute, and beare the fyrst burdone, and the lande of Julyers is a playne countrey. In one day the men of warre shuld do moche dommage there, and distroye and wast all, excepte the castelles and good townes. Thus the Frenche kyng entred into the countrey of Lusenbourgh, and came to an abbey where as Vyncelant, somtyme duke of Brabant, was buryed: there the kyng taryed two dayes. Than he departed and toke the waye throughe Basconque,[1] and lodged within a leage where as the duches of Brabant laye; she sent worde of her beyng there to the duke of Burgoyn, and he brought her into the felde to speke with the kynge, who receyved her right honourably, and there communed togyder. Than the duches retourned to Basconque, and thyder she was conveyed with sir John of Vyen, and sir Guy of Tremoile. And the next daye the kyng went forwarde, aprochyng to the lande of his enemyes, and came to thentryng into Almayne, on the fronters of the duchy of Julyers; but or he came so far forwarde, Arnolde, bisshop of Liege, had been with the kyng, and had greatly entreated for the duke of Juliers, that the kyng shulde nat be miscontent with hym, though he were father to the duke of Guerles: for he excused hym of the defiaunce that his sonne had made, affyrmyng how it was nat by his knowlege nor consent. Wherfore, he sayd, it were pytie that the father shulde beare the defaut of the sonne. This excuse was nat suffycient to the kyng, nor to his uncles; for the entent of the kyng and his counsayle was, without the duke of Julyers wolde come and make other maner of excuse, and to yelde hymselfe to the kynges pleasure, his countrey shulde be the first that shulde beare the burdone. Thanne the bysshoppe of Liege, and the lordes of Hasbane, and the counsayls of the good townes, offred to the kynge and his counsayle holly the bysshoprike of Liege, for his armye to passe and repasse, payeng for their expenses, and to rest and refresshe them there as long as it pleased them. The kyng thanked them, and so dyde his uncles, and wolde nat refuse their offre, for he knewe nat what nede he shulde have after.

[1] *Bastogne.*

CAP. CXLIV

Howe the duke of Julyers came and excused hymselfe of the defyaunce that his sonne the duke of Guerles had made to the Frenche kyng, and so became his subjecte: and of dyvers feates of armes done bytwene the Frenchmen and the Almayns before Rencongne.

THUS the bisshoppe of Liege retourned to the duke of Jullyers, and to the archebysshoppe of Coloigne, and shewed them what he had done, and therupon they toke advyse. The duke of Juliers had great dout of exyling and wastyng of his countrey, and sent for the knightes of his countrey to have their counsayle and advyse, and dayly the Frenchmen aproched; the lorde of Coucy, who was in the vowarde, and with hym a thousande speares, and the duke of Lorayne with hym, and the vicount of Meaulx, with two hundred speares. Whan the Frenchemen aproched the fronters of Almayne, than they rode toguyder in good order and lodged wisely, for there were a thre hundred speares of lynfars Almayns, beyond the ryver of Ryne, gathered toguyder. And they be noted to be the greattest pyllers and robbers of all the worlde: and they alwayes pursued and coosted the Frenchmen to fynde them dispurveyed, to do them dommage. The Frenchemen douted the same, and durst never go a forragyng but in great companyes. And as I understode, sir Boucequaut the elder, and sir Loyes of Grache,[1] were retayned and brought to Nimay.[2] These sayd Almayns rode alwayes covertly, lyke byrdes flyeng in the ayre sekyng for their praye; this made the Frenchemen wyse and to be well ware. Thus whan the Frenche kyng was come so forwarde, as to the entre of the duchy of Julyers, the duke of Julyers, who wolde nat lese his countrey, beleved the counsayle of the archebysshoppe of Coloyne, and the bysshop of Liege: these two entreated for hym to the kynge, and brought the mater to that poynt, that his landes were in rest and peace, by meanes of suche

[1] *Giach.*
[2] *Nimeguen.*

CAP. CXLIV

Howe the duke of Julyers came and excused hymselfe to the Frenche kyng.

condycions as foloweth. These two prelates dyde so moche, that they brought the duke of Julyers into the kynges presence, and before his uncles, and the duke of Lorayne, and other great lordes of Fraunce of the blode royall; and whan he was before the kyng he kneled downe, and wisely excused him of the defyaunce that his sonne had made, and sayd, howe his sonne was a foole, and that he had never counsayle of hym to do as he dyde, but dyde it of his owne wyll: and offred the kyng, sayeng: Sir, to the entent to bring him to the knowledgynge of reason, by your lycence I wyll go to hym and shewe hym his folly, as quickely as I can, and counsayle hym to come and make his excuse before youre grace and your counsayle; and if he wyll nat thus do, but do agaynst my counsayle, I shall abandon to you all the townes and castels in my countrey, and to provyde for men of warre, and to make warre against hym, tyll ye have taken hym to mercy. Than the kyng regarded his brother, his uncles, and his counsaile, and it semed to hym that this offre was faire and resonable, and so thought dyvers other. Than the kyng toke up the duke of Julyers, who was on his kne whyle he spake to the kyng, and sayd to hym: Sir, we shall take counsayle and advyse on your promyses and wordes. Than the duke rose up and stode styll by the bysshoppes that brought hym thyder. Than the kyng and his uncles, and suche of his secrete counsayle, drewe toguyder, and debated this mater long, with dyvers opinions. The duke of Burgoyne, to whom principallye the mater touched, bicause of the duchy of Brabant, wherin he chalenged to have great right of enherytaunce, after the dethe of the duches Jane, bycause of the lady Margaret his wyfe, and also, to say the trouthe, he was the chiefe causer of the kynges commyng thyder with all that puissaunce: wherfore he wolde that every thyng might be for the best, and to thentent that a good peace might be made bitwene all parties, that there shulde be no more occasyon to come thyder agayne another tyme, bycause the voyage is long and costly for the realme; than he sayd to the kyng: Sir, and it lyke your grace, and you my brother of Berrey, and to you all, I saye, that in all thynges yvell begone, lyeth great advyse. We here howe our cosyn the duke of Julyers

greatly excuseth hymselfe, and he is so valyaunt a man, and of our blode, and we of his, that we ought to beleve hym; he offereth to the kyng a great thyng, his body, his countrey, his townes and castelles, to be at the kynges commaundemente, in case that his sonne the duke of Guerles wyll rebell, and come nat to make amendes of the defyaunce that he hath made. To speke acordynge to reason, it is a great thynge to have with us the duke of Juliers: the duke of Guerles shall be the more feble, and the easyer to correcte, and the more he shall dought us, and soner come to obeysaunce. Wherfore I counsayle that his offre be nat refused, for he mekely humyleth hymselfe, and other greate lordes of Almayne entreate for hym. To these wordes there was no contrary opynyons, but all consented by one acorde. Than the bysshoppes of Coloygne, and of Liege, were called to their counsayle, who had ben chyefe entreatours in this busynes, and to them it was declared fro poynte to poynte, and frome clause to clause, what thynges the duke of Julyers shulde swere and seale to do, if he wolde have his landes saved, and to be in reste: Fyrst, that he shulde go to his sonne the duke of Guerles, and shewe hym playnely his foly, and the great outrage that he had done, to sende to defye so puyssaunt a prince as the Frenche kynge, and specially by suche fell defyaunce, out of the style of ryght or reason, and to cause him to come to reason and mercy; and if he wolde nat thus do, but abyde styll in his opynyon, through feble wytte and counsayle, than the duke of Julyers to swere and seale to renounce hym fro all ayde or socoure that he myght do, and to become his enemy, as other be; and to suffre suche as shall be apoynted by the kynge and his counsayle to abyde there all this wynter, to lye in garysone in the countrey of Julyers, to make frounter warre agaynst the duke of Guerles, and there to be well entreated and receyved.

CAP. CXLIV

Howe the duke of Julyers came and excused hymselfe to the Frenche kyng.

These two prelates were called to the kinges counsayle, to the entente that they shulde shewe to the duke of Julyers these artycles, and so they dyd. And than the duke sawe well howe that it behoved hym to agree, or els to have his landes over rynne and wasted; wherfore he acorded, and sware, and sealed, to upholde all the kynges desyre, so that

CAP. CXLIV

Howe the duke of Julyers came and excused hymselfe to the Frenche kyng.

his lande shulde nat be overron nor exyled: and he was contente that his lande shulde vytayle the armye. Thus the duke of Julyers became the Frenche kynges man, and made relyefe for his lande of Vierson, beyng bytwene Bloys and Berrey, and supped that nyght at the kynges table. Fyrst sate the bysshoppe of Liege, and the bysshoppe of Coloygne: than the kynge, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Thowrayn, the duke of Juliers, and the duke of Burbone.

Thus the duke of Julyers was in reste and pease by the foresayd meanes, and the kynge and his armye were lodged in his countrey, the whiche was pleasaunt and plentyfull of all vytayles. Than the duke of Julyers wente towardes the duke of Guerles his sonne. But or he came there, there was dyvers feates of armes done in the countrey; for the Almayns, who be covetouse, oftentymes by night or by daye wolde jeoparde themselfe, and sette on the Frenchemens lodgynges, to kepe them wakynge; and somtyme they wanne, and sometyme they lost. But for one Almayne that was taken, there were ever four Frenchmen taken. And on a daye the constable of Fraunce, and the lorde Coucy, the duke of Lorayne, the marshall of Blainvill, sir Johan of Vien, syr Johan de la Tremoyle, and a four thousande men of armes came before a towne in Guerles, called Renconge,[1] and shewed themselfe before it in good ordre of batayle. The same tyme the duke of Guerles was within the towne, and praysed moche their demeanour, but he made none issue out, for he had nat men ynowe, wherof he was ryght sore dyspleased. Thus the Frenchemen were there in good ordre of batayle the space of four houres, and whan they sawe that none wolde issue out, they departed and returned to their lodgynges. The same evenynge about the duke of Berreys lodgyng, certayne knyghtes and squyers drewe togyther, to the entent to ryde forthe in the mornynge into the lande of their enemies to seke some adventure, and promysed eche other to stycke togyther lyke bretherne. They were in nombre aboute a hundred speares. But whan the mornynge came all their purpose was broken. For there was a squyer of Auvergne, called Godinos,[2] a valyaunt man of armes, he pertayned to the lorde of Alegre; whan he sawe that they had refused his company, and wolde nat desyre hym to go

[1] *Ruremonde.*

[2] *Gourdinet.*

CAP. CXLIV

Howe the duke of Julyers came and excused hymselfe to the Frenche kyng.

with them, he was sore dyspleased, and brake his mynde to another sorte of companyons, so that they were to the nombre of thyrty speares. They rode forthe togyther, and rode all that mornynge, and coulde fynde none adventure. And whan Godynos sawe that they shulde retourne without doynge of any feate, he was sore dyspleased, and sayde to his company: Syrs, ryde on fayre and easely, and I with my page wyll ryde aboute this wode, to se if any enbusshe be hydden therin, and tary me upon yonder mountayne. They agreed to hym. Thus he and his page rode forthe costynge the wode. Whan he had rydden a lytell waye, he herde one whystell in the wode, and strake his horse with the sporres, and came to the syde of the wode, and there he founde an Almayne Guerloys cuttynge of wode. Than Godynos toke his glayve and came rynnynge at this man, wherof the man was sore abasshed; than Godynos made sygne to hym that he shulde go with him, and thought that his companyons yet shulde se that he had founde somwhat, and thought the same manne shulde do them some servyce in their lodgynges: and so Godynos rode on before on a lowe hackeney, and the Almayne folowed hym afoote with a hewynge axe on his necke, wherwith he had wrought in the wode. Godinos page lepte on his maysters courser, and bare his bassenette and speare, and folowed them halfe slepynge, bycause he had rysen so early. And the Almayn, who knewe nat whyder he shulde go, nor what they wolde do with hym, thought to delyver hymselfe, and came fayre and easely to Godynos, and lyfte up his axe, and strake hym suche a stroke on the heed that he clave it to the teeth, and so overthrewe hym starke deed; the page knewe nat therof tyll he sawe his mayster fall. Than the vyllayne fledde into the wode and saved hymselfe. This adventure fell to Godinos, wherwith suche as knewe hym were sore dyspleased, and specyally they of Auvergne, for he was the man of armes that was moste doughted of the Englisshmen in those parties, and he that dyd them most domage. If he had been in prisone he shulde have ben quyted out, and if it had been for twenty thousande frankes.

Nowe lette us retourne to the duke of Julyers.

CAP. CXLV

Howe the duke of Juliers and the archebysshop of Coloygne departed fro the Frenche kynge, and wente to Nymay, to the duke of Guerles, and howe by their meanes he was reconsyled and brought to peace with the Frenche kynge, and with the duches of Brabante.

YE knowe well, as it hathe ben shewed here before, howe the duke of Julyers made his peace with the Frenche king, by meanes of the bysshoppes that treated in that behalfe: and also, to saye the trouthe, the duke of Lorayne, his cosyn, toke great payne in the mater. And, as ye have herde, the duke promysed to go to his sonne the duke of Guerles, and to cause hym to come to the kynges mercy, or els to make hym warre. Thus the duke of Julyers was fayne to promyse, or els all his countrey had ben loste. Thus the duke of Julyers, and the archbysshoppe, toke their journey to go into Guerles, and passed the ryver and came to Nymay, where as the duke was, who receyved his father with great joye as he was bounde to do, for there is nothynge so nere a man as his father and mother. But he was nothynge glad of that he herde howe that the duke his father was agreed with the Frenche kynge. Than the duke of Juliers, and the bysshop, shewed hym at length the hole mater in what case he and his lande stode in. He made lytle therof, for he was so sore alyed with the kynge of Englande that he wolde nat forsake hym, for his herte was good Englysshe, and so excused hymselfe greatly, and sayde to his father: Syr, let me alone, I wyll abyde the adventure, and if I take domage by reason of the Frenche kynges comynge, I am yonge ynough to beare it, and to be revenged herafter on some parte of the realme of Fraunce, or upon my neyghbours the Brabansoys; there is no lorde canne kepe warre without some domage, sometyme lese, and sometyme wynne. Whan his father the duke of Julyers herde hym so styffe in his opynyon, he was sore dyspleased with hym, and

CAP. CXLV
Howe the duke of Juliers and the archebysshop of Cologyne departed fro the Frenche kynge.

sayd: Sonne Willyam, for whome make you youre warre, and who be they that shall revenge your domage? Syr, quod he, the kynge of Englande and his puysaunce; and I have gret marvayle that I here no tydynges of the Englysshe army that is on the see: for if they were come as they have promysed me to do, I wolde have wakened the Frenchemen oftener thanne ones or this tyme. What, quod his father, do you trust and abyde for the Englysshmen? They are so besyed in every quarter, that they wote nat to whome to entende. The duke of Lancastre, our cosyn, lyeth at Bayon, or at Burdeaux, and is retourned out of Spayne in a small ordre, and hath lost his men and tyme: and he hath sente into Englande for to have mo men of armes and archers, and he can nat get to the nombre of xx. speares. Also the Englysshemen have had but late in playne batayle a great domage in Northumberlande, for all their chyvalry aboute Newcastell upon Tyne were overthrowen, and slayne and taken, so that as nowe the realme of Englande is nat in good quyete nor reste. Wherfore it is nat for you to trust at this tyme on the Englysshemen, for of them ye shall have no comforte. Wherfore I counsayle you to be ruled by us, and we shall make your peace with the Frenche kyng, and shall do so moche that ye shall nouther receyve shame nor domage. Syr, quod the duke of Guerles, howe may I with myne honoure acorde with the Frenche kynge, though I shulde lese all my hole lande, and go dwell in some other place? Surely I wyll nat do it, I am so sore alyed with the kinge of Englande, and also I have defyed the Frenche kynge. Thynke you that for feare of hym I shulde revoke my wordes, or breke my seale? Ye wolde I shulde be dyshonored; I requyre you let me alone; I shall defende myself right well agaynst them; I set lytell by their thretenynges. The waters, and raynes, and colde wethers, shall so fight for me or the tyme of Janyuer come, that they shall be so wery, that the hardyest of theym shall wysshe themselfe at home in their owne houses.

Thus at the begynnynge of this treatie the duke of Juliers and the bysshoppe of Coloyne coulde nat breke the duke of Guerles purpose, and yet they were with hym a sixe dayes, and every day in counsayle. And whan the duke of

CAP. CXLV
Howe the duke of Juliers and the archebysshop of Coloygne departed fro the Frenche kynge.

Julyers sawe no otherways, he began sore to argue agaynst his sonne, and sayd: Sonne, if ye wyll nat byleve me, surely I shall dysplease you, and as for your enherytaunce of the duchy of Julyers, ye shall never have one foote therof, but rather I shall gyve it to a straunger, who shall be of puyssaunce to defende it agaynste you; ye are but a foole if ye wyll nat beleve my counsayle. Whan the duke of Guerles sawe his father inflamed with ire, than to apease his displeasure, he sayd: Sir, than counsayle me to myne honour, and at your desyre I shall leane therto; for syr, I owe to you all obeysaunce, and wyll do. Than the duke of Julyers sayde: Sonne, nowe ye speke as ye shulde do, and I shall loke for your honoure as moche as I wolde do for myne owne. Than it was devysed by great delyberacion of counsayle, that for to save the honoure on all parties, that the duke of Guerles shulde go to the Frenche kynge, and to do hym honoure and reverence, as he ought to do to a kynge, and to make his excuse of the defyaunce that he had sente to the kynge, and to say after this maner: Syr, trewe it is there was a letter at a tyme sealed with my seale sente into Fraunce, whiche came to your knowledge, in the whiche letter was contaygned defyaunce, pertaynynge to your grace and to your realme, with wordes unreasonable, out of the ryght style and usage that princes and lordes defie eche other, the whiche I wyll nat avowe that ever any suche wordes passed out of my mouthe, nor by my commaundemente, any worde touchynge or defamynge your name or signory; and syr, to veryfye that this myne excuse is of trouthe, and that it maye be had out of all suspecte, I shall declare the trouthe of every thynge. Syr, by reason of the great alyaunce and servyce that I have borne to my ryght redouted lorde the kynge of Englande, at his requeste, and his counsayls, I sente into Englande four of my knyghtes, and delyvered theym my seale to seale to any thynge that they concluded upon; they sealed this letter and nat I, for I never knewe before the sealynge of that letter what was conteyned therin. Syr, I requyre your grace accepte this excuse, for this is trewe. But, sir, as for the aliaunce and servyce that I have made to my lorde the kynge of Englande I wyll never breke it, nor do contrarye to

that he commaundeth me. But, syr, at his request and commaundement I wyll defye you or any other, whan it shall please hym, who so ever they be, excepte myne owne naturall lorde the kynge of Almayne, to whome I am made servaunte by my mouthe spoken, and by myne handes in his. But, syr, for the honoure of you, consyderynge and recompensynge the paynes and traveyls that ye have susteyned in your journey comynge hyder, to knowe the foundacion and trouthe of the defyaunce, I shall swere to you and kepe it, that I shall never make warre agaynst you nor defye you, but fyrste ye shall be signyfyed therof an hole yere before; and, sir, me thynke this shulde suffyce you. To this devyse the duke of Guerles sayde, I am well contente thus to do; in this there is no dyshonour nor blame to me, as I thynke.

CAP. CXLV

Howe the duke of Juliers and the archebysshop of Cologyne departed fro the Frenche kynge.

Thus on this poynte departed the duke of Julyers from his sonne the duke of Guerles, and with him the archebysshoppe of Cologyne, and so they returned into Julyers, and came to Endesker.[1] And whan tyme was, they wente to the Frenche kynge, and shewed him all the poyntes and artycles before rehersed, and sayd: Syr, loke what ye wyll do with the duke of Guerles, for other than this ye shall nat have of hym. The Frenche kynge greatly desyred to se the duke of Guerles his cosyn, bycause he had put hym to so moche payne, wherfore the soner he enclyned to this treatye. And the duke of Burgoyn, who wolde also that the duches of Brabant and her countrey shulde abyde in rest and peace, he toke payne to bringe this treatie to effecte, and that the duke of Guerles myght come to speke with the kynge. And also there was one thynge that made them the soner agre: wynter aproched, and the nyghtes began to be longe and colde, and also the lordes of Fraunce were enfourmed that Guerles was no countrey to rest in, in the tyme of wynter. And also dayly they had reporte howe they loste of their men, bothe knyghtes and squyers, by the lynfars Almayns, who dayly lay in wayte for them. So many reasons and consyderacyons were layde and alledged, that they fell to acorde, and the duke of Guerles aproched, and the duke of Julyers his father; and the duke of Lorayne, and the bysshop of Coloigne, brought hym into the knyges

[1] *Nideck.*

CAP. CXLV

Howe the duke of Juliers and the archebysshop of Cologyne departed fro the Frenche kynge.

tente, where there was with the kynge his thre uncles, and his brother, the duke of Tourayne, and the duke of Bare, the erle of Marche, the erle of saynte Pole, the erle dolphyn of Auvergne, the lorde Coucy, and the constable of Fraunce. There the duke of Guerles kneled downe before the kynge, and as it was infourmed me, the kyng toke hym up, and there valyauntly and wysely he exscused hymselfe of the defyaunce that he had made to the kynge. And moreover he sware, that if ever he wolde defye the kynge, or make warre to the realme of Fraunce, that he wolde gyve the kynge knowlege therof a yere before, and the countreys of Guerles and Brabante to be styll in the same case as they be in at that same present tyme. Thus the mater concluded bytwene them; and the duke of Guerles supped with the kynge the same nyghte at his table: he was greatly regarded, bycause he had put the kynge to so moche payne and coste. This treatie and conclusyon was put in writynge and sealed; and whan all was done, the lordes toke leave to departe. But or they departed, the duke of Guerles demaunded of the kynge, that all suche prisoners as the Frenchemen had taken in that warre, that he myght have them delyvered franke and free. He had his desyre, they were delyvered. Thanne the kynge demaunded of the duke, that all suche prysoners as his men had taken in that voyage shulde be delyvered and rendred agayne. Than the duke of Guerles excused hymselfe, and sayde: Syr, that I can nat do, I am but a poore man, and whan I knewe of your commynge, I fortifyed myselfe the best I myght with men of warre, knyghtes, and squyers, fro beyonde the ryver of Ryne, and other places: and I promysed them that whatsoever they wanne in this warre, it shulde be their owne; wherfore I can take nothinge fro them of that they have wonne: if I wolde, I have nouther puyssaunce nor power to do it; for if I wolde shewe rygoure to theym, they wolde make warre agaynst me. Wherfore, sir, may it please you to lette it passe, for I canne nat remedy it. The kynge sawe he coulde have nothyng els; he suffred it to passe, and imagyned that he and his realme were riche ynough to encrease poore men, wherfore he let it passe, and spake no mo wordes: and at their departure eche of theym well

contented other. Than it was ordeyned to dyslodge, and to retourne the same way they came. And than it was sayd that the Frenche kynge shulde be at the cytie of Reynes at the feest of All Sayntes, and there to holde a great feest. Thus every man dyslodged and retourned.

Nowe lette us speke of the Englysshe army on the see.

CAP. CXLV Howe the duke of Juliers and the archebysshop of Coloygne departed fro the Frenche kynge.

CAP. CXLVI

Howe the erle of Arundell and the knyghtes of Englande, beyng on the see, by fortune of the wynde, came to the Palyce besyde Rochell, whose beynge there was signifyed to sir Loys of Xanser: and of the departynge of the erle of Arundell.

IN the meane seasone whyle the Frenche kyng was in Guerles, the Englysshe army was on the see, wherof the erle of Arundell was chefe capytayne, and sometyme sayled forwarde and somtyme backwarde, as the wynde wolde serve them, to seke for adventures. As it is well knowen, always lightly bytwene the feest of Saynt Remey and All Sayntes is a perylous season for stormes and wyndes on the see; and aboute the same tyme there rose suche a tempeste, that it sperkled abrode the Englysshe navy in suche wyse that the hardyest marynere there was sore abasshed, so that perforce they were constreyned to seke for lande. And the erle of Arundell, with xxvii. vesselles with hym, whether they wolde or nat, were fayne to caste ancre in a lytell haven called the Palyce, a two small leages fro Rochell, and the wynde was so streynable on seeborde, that they coude nat departe thence. Whanne tydynges therof came to Rochell, they were in great dought at the fyrste leste the Englisshmen wolde come on them and do them great domage, and closed their gates and helde them shytte a day and a halfe. Than other tydynges came to them fro them of Palyce, howe the Englysshemen were but xxvii. vesselles, and came thyder by force of wynde and wether, and taryed for nothynge but to departe agayne, and

CAP. CXLVI

Howe the erle of Arundell and the knyghtes of Englande came to the Palyce besyde Rochell.

that the erle of Arundell was there, and the lorde Henry Beamonde, sir Willyam Helmen,[1] and mo than thyrty knyghtes of Englande. Than they of Rochell tooke counsayle what thynge was beste for them to do; and, all thyng consydered, they sayd howe they shulde but easly acquyte themselfe if they went nat to skrymysshe with them. The same season before the castell of Boutevyll was syr Loys of Xansere, mershall of Fraunce, and had besieged within the fortresse Gylliam of Saynt Foye, a Gascon; and with the marshall a great company of Poictou, of Xayntone, of Piergourt, of Rochell, and of the Lowe Marches, for all were nat gone into Almayne with the king. This sir Loys was soveraygne capytayne over all the fronters bytwene Mountpellyer and Rochell, tyll the retourne of the lorde Coucy. They of Rochell sent worde to the marshall of the Englysshmens beynge at Palyce. Whan he herde therof he was ryght joyfull, and sent to theym that they shulde make redy seven or eyght galees, and to man them forthe, for he wolde come by lande and fyght with the Englisshmen. They of Rochell dyd as they were commaunded; and sir Loys departed fro his siege, and brake it up, for he thought it shulde be more honorable for hym to fyght with the erle of Arundell and the Englysshemen rather thanne to contynewe styll his siege: thus he wente to Rochell, and all knyghtes and squyers folowed hym. I can nat tell by what inspyracyon the erle of Arundell had knowledge howe the marshall of Fraunce, with a greate puyssaunce of knyghtes and squyers, was comynge to fyght with hym at Palyce, whiche tydynges were nat very pleasaunte to the erle of Arundell; howebeit, the wynde was somewhat layde, and the see aveyled. Than the erle wayed up ancres and sayled into the see in suche good season, that if he had taryed longe after, he had been enclosed in the haven and every man taken; for incontynent thyder came the galees of Rochell, well manned and furnysshed with artyllery and gonnes, and came streyght to the haven of the Palyce, and founde the Englisshemen departed. They pursued after a two leages in the see and shotte gonnes; howebeit, they durst nat longe folowe for feare of enbusshmentes on the see. Than the Frenche shippes returned, and the marshall of Fraunce was sore dys-

[1] *Elmham.*

pleased with theym of Rochell that they sente hym worde so late. The erle of Arundell toke the waye by the ryver of Garon to come to Burdeaux, and therby the siege before Bowtevyll was defeated, for Gillonet of Saynt Foy provyded his garyson of that he neded, in the meane tyme that the marshall went to fyght with the Englysshemen.

CAP. CXLVI

Howe the erle of Arundell and the knyghtes of Englande came to the Palyce besyde Rochell.

Nowe let us retourne somwhat to speke of the duke of Lancastre, howe he was in treatie with the Spanyardes, and also with the duke of Berrey for the maryage of his doughter. The kynge of Castyle treated with hym for his sonne the prince of Castyle, to the entent to have a peace with the Englisshemen; also the duke of Berrey treated to have the duke of Lancasters doughter for hymselfe, for he had great desyre to be maryed. And the duke of Lancaster, lyke a sage imagynatyfe prince, sawe well howe it was more profitable for Englande and for hym, to mary his doughter into Castyle rather than to the duke of Berrey: for therby he thought to recover the herytage of Castyle in tyme to come for his doughter. And if he shulde gyve her to the duke of Berrey, and the duke fortune to dye, his doughter than shulde be but a poore lady to the regarde of other, bycause the duke of Berrey had chyldren by his fyrst wyfe, who shulde have all the profyte. Also the duchesse of Lancastre enclyned to the kynge of Castyles sonne. So that whan sir Helyon of Lignac was departed fro the duke of Lancastre, and retourned to the duke of Berrey, beynge as than in Almayne, than the king of Castyls messangers were well herde, in suche wyse that their wordes were noted and their offers accepted, and the covenaunte made and sworne bytwene Kateryn of Lancastre and the kynge of Castylles sonne, and writynges and publike instrumentes and oblygatory bondes made and concluded, without reple or repentaunce; so that the duches of Lancastre, after every thyng set in ordre, shulde bring her doughter Kateryn into Castyle.

All this season the Frenche kynge was styll in the fronters of Julyers, concludynge with the duke of Guerles, as ye have herde before, and howe they departed. And as the Frenchemen retourned, it fortuned on the fronteres of Almayne, on a nyght aboute mydnyght, as the mone shone fayre, certayne

CAP. CXLVI Howe the erle of Arundell and the knyghtes of Englande came to the Palyce besyde Rochell.

Almayns, robbers and pyllers, that dyd sette nother by peace nor warre, but alwayes sought for their advauntage, some pertaynynge to the lorde of Blaqueneuen[1] and to sir Peter of Cronebech,[2] they were well horsed, and came and advysed the French hoost, and where they might have most profyte and advauntage, and so passed by the lodgyng of the vycount of Meaulx, and sawe no styrringe, and returned without any noyse makynge, outher passynge or retournynge, and came agayne to their enbusshe, and shewed them what they had sene and founde. And incontynente these Almayns came and entred at their advauntage into the Frenchmens lodgynges, and overthrewe I can nat tell howe many, and toke xiiii. menne of armes prisoners: there was taken the lorde of Viesvile and the lorde of Mountkarell. This adventure the Frenchemen hadde the same nyght, by reason they made but easy watche and were but yvell ordred. The next day whan these tydinges were knowen howe the lorde of Viesville and the lorde of Mountkarell were taken, the Frenchemen were sore displeased, and toke better hede after. Whan the Frenche kynge departed fro the countrey of Julyers none taryed behynde; every man drewe to their garysons, sir Guylliam of Tremoyle, and sir Gervays Fuerande,[3] and all other, and the Brabansoys by the waye, every man wente home. And in the retournynge of the Frenchemen, it was ordeyned by great delyberacion of counsayle, that the Frenche kynge, who had ben under the governynge of his uncles ever syth the dethe of the laste kynge his father, shulde than take on himselfe the governynge and charge of his hole realme, and his uncles to cease of the governynge, for they had ynough to do in other busynesses. The kynge as thanne was paste twenty yere of age. This was openly publysshed, and every man thought it was resonable. The kynge came to Rennes[4] at the feest of All Sayntes, and there helde a great feest, and his uncles with hym. And there they had fyrst knowledge that the kynge of Castyle and the duke of Lancastre were concluded upon a peace and upon a maryage to be had bytwene the kinges sonne and the dukes doughter. Than the Frenche kyng sported with the duke of Berrey, and sayde, Fayre uncle, ye have fayled of your entent; another is lyke to enjoy the wyfe that ye

[1] *Blanckenheym.*
[2] *Cronenburg.*
[3] *Meraude.*
[4] *Rheims.*

wolde have had. Howe say you therto? What sayeth your corage? The duke of Berrey sayde, Syr, I saye nothynge but well; if I have fayled there, I shall spede in some other place. Than the Frenchemen beganne to murmure upon this maryage, and said, This can nat be done without great alyaunces, whiche shal be a thynge greatly prejudycyall in tyme to come to the realme of Fraunce. And suche as considred the botom of the mater said howe that if Castyle, Englande, and Portugale be all of one alyaunce and accorde, these thre realmes, what by see and by lande, they maye make warre to the realme of Fraunce. Wherfore they sayde, It were good that the kynge shulde sende and provyde remedy by tymes, consydringe that this unhappy kyng of Castyle hath made alyaunce in maner with a deed man, for the duke of Lancastre is as a man without men and puyssaunce. Nor also, they sayde, howe the kyng of Castyll ought nat to make any aliaunce with any man without the counsayle of the Frenche kynge: if he do, the kynge maye sende hym worde that he wyll make hym as lowe a varlette as he hath made hym a great lorde. Lette the kynge make warre agaynste the realme of Castyle, and putte out the unhappy kyng, sonne to a bastarde, and lette the kyng gyve the realme to his owne brother, the duke of Thourayne, who as yet hath no great herytage; he shall well and sagely governe it. Howe can or dare this kynge of Castyle make or treate for any peace or alyaunce with the duke of Lancastre without the knowledge or consent of the Frenche kynge, who hath so moche ayded, honoured, and avaunsed hym? He had loste his realme, if the puissaunce and blode royall of Fraunce had nat ben: he hath well marchaundysed, and yet he wyll marchaundyse. But if it be as it is sayd, lette hym be shamed and disheryted, and lette hym have suche punysshment that he may well knowe that he hath yvell done.

CAP. CXLVI
Howe the erle of Arundell and the knyghtes of Englande came to the Palyce besyde Rochell.

These wordes multiplyed in suche wyse, that all thynges consydered, the kynge and his uncles and his counsayle determyned to sende into Castyle to kynge Johan, and to shewe hym on the Frenche kynges behalfe that he be well advysed, and take hede what he dothe; and that he be nat so hardy to make any treatie or alyaunce with the Eng-

CAP. CXLVI lysshemen, nor with the duke of Lancastre, in any thyng that shulde be prejudyciall to the crowne or realme of Fraunce; and if he have done, or do, or thynketh to do, lette hym be sure that the puyssaunce of Fraunce shall as moche or more sette hym abacke and hynder hym as it hath avaunsed hym before, and that the kynge and the realme shall entende to do nothynge elles but to distroye hym. Than it was consydred who shulde do this message. And it was thought, that whosoever shulde do it ought to be a hardy man and well spoken, and sagely and valiauntly to declare the kynges pleasure. It was thought that a meane and a symple persone ought nat to do that message. Than there were thre persones named, the lorde of Coucy, sir Johan of Vyen, admyrall of Fraunce, and sir Guye de la Tremoyle; of these thre to take one to go into Castyle on this voyage. And all thynges consydred, sir Johan of Vyenne was apoynted to go. Than the kynge and his counsayle sayd unto hym, Admyrall, make you redy; ye shall go on this voyage, and ye shall have none other letters to the kyng of Castyle but of credence; ye are suffyciently enstructed of the mater wherupon ye be sente. And saye unto the kynge of Spaygne, that he advyse well and cause to be advysed, and to rede and cause to be reed the alyaunces, ordynaunces, and promyses sworne and sealed bytwene hym and us; and marke well youre aunswere that ye shall have of hym and of his counsayle, and therupon we shall take our grounde to procede farther. The admyrall aunswered and sayde, It shall be done.

Howe the erle of Arundell and the knyghtes of Englande came to the Palyce besyde Rochell.

CAP. CXLVII

Howe the Admyrall of Fraunce was ordayned by the Frenche kyng and his counsayle as ambassadour to go to the kynge of Castyle; and howe the duke of Berrey sente to the erle of Foize to treate for a maryage bytwene the duke of Berrey and the erles doughter of Boulogne.

THE admyrall of Fraunce taryed nat long at Paris, but made hym quickely redye to departe, and tooke his leave of the kyng and of his uncles, and tooke his waye by Burgoyne, bycause he wolde go by Avygnone to se the Pope and his brother, and so he dyde.

Nowe lette us leave spekyng of hym, and speke somwhat of Geffray Tetenoyre, who was enclosed and besieged within the castell of Vandachore;[1] but fyrste we wyll speke of the duke of Berrey, who had great desyre to mary, as he well shewed within that yere. Whan he sawe that he had fayled of the duke of Lancasters doughter, he was enfourmed that the erle of Boulogne had a fayre doughter, named Jane, doughter to the lady Elyanour of Comynges; howebeit, she was nat with her father nor with her moder; she was in the countrey of Bierne with the erle of Foiz, her great frende and cosyn. She hadde ben there brought up and nourysshed and well entreated the space of nyne yeres in the castell of Ortayes, without cost or charge to father or mother. The erle often tymes hadde been desyred to have had her maryed, but alwayes the erle aunswered that the damosell was to yonge. Specially sir Bernarde, brother to the erle of Armynacke, hadde desyred to have her, and promysed that if he myght have her in maryage, the warre shulde ende bytwene them for the chalenge of the lande of Byerne. But for all those promyses the erle wolde nat agree therto, but aunswered ever howe that his cosyn was to yonge. But amonge his owne men he wolde saye otherwyse. For as sir Espaygne du Lyon shewed me, he wolde saye howe they of Armynacke myght well repute hym for a beest if he shulde graunt their

[1] *Ventadour.*

CAP. CXLVII

Howe the Admyrall of Fraunce was ordayned to go to the kynge of Castyle.

desyre, seynge it was to his dommage: for if he shulde graunt theym his cosyn in maryage, he shulde strength them and enfeble hymselfe; sayeng, howe they of Armynake helde by force and nat of right the countie of Comynges, the whiche herytage is by his mother and aunte to my cosyn of Boloyne. I wyll well they knowe I shall mary her in so stronge a place and puissaunt to make warre with them for the herytage of Comynges, for as nowe there is none to answere but a deed man.

Thus whan the erle of Armynacke and sir Bernarde his brother sawe that they coulde nat come to their purpose as long as her aunte lyved, than they sayde to the duke of Berrey that this lady shulde be a fayre maryage for John of Berrey his sonne. And by their settynge on, the duke sente suffycient and noble messangers into Byerne to the erle of Foiz, desyringe hym that all yvell wyll might be sette aparte and every thynge pardoned of tymes paste, and that he myght have the damosell of Boulogne for Johan his sonne in maryage: so that the erle of Boulogne, father to the damosell, dyde therto agree and assent. Therle of Foiz made good chere to these ambassadors, but he excused hym for that maryage, and sayd howe the lady his cosyn was to yonge. And also he sayde, howe that whan the countesse of Boulogne her mother delyvered her into his charge, she caused hym to swere that he shulde never mary her in no place without her knowledge and consent; and in no wyse he sayde he myght, nor wolde nat, breake his promyse nor othe, and he sayd none ought to desyre hym therunto. This excuse the erle made, for he knewe well that his cosyn of Comynges, who was with the erle of Urgell her brother in the realme of Arragon, wolde nat agree therunto. Thus the ambassadors of the duke of Berrey retourned without any thyng doyng to their purpose; and whan they were gone, as sir Espaygne du Lyon shewed me, the erle sayd, Ah, the duke of Berrey and his counsayle myght well repute me for an ignorant, whan he wolde have me to enforce myne ennemyes. Johan of Berrey is cosyn germayn to myne adversaries of Armynake: that bargayne shall I never make; I shall rather mary her into Englande: it hath been spoken of to sir Henry of Lancastre, erle of

CAP. CXLVII

Howe the Admyrall of Fraunce was ordayned to go to the kynge of Castyle.

Derby, sonne to the duke of Lancastre. If I thought nat greatly to displease the Frenche kynge, there shulde none other have her but he; and as yet I knowe nat what I wyll do, for I shall rather mary her at my pleasure than they of Armynake shulde have her agaynste my wyll. In me it lyeth to do or to leave; I nede nat to trouble myselfe in the mater.

Whan the duke of Berrey knewe the certentie that the duke of Lancastre shulde mary his doughter to the king of Castyls sone, and that he coude nat breke that maryage in no wyse, he was a v. or sixe dayes so pensyve, that none about hym durst demaunde what he ayled: at last he declared his entent to them of his counsayle. Than they said to hym, Sir, if ye have fayled of the duke of Lancasters doughter, ye maye recover another, as great and as good as she is; howebeit, she is very yonge for your age; wherfore we can nat tell if the erle of Foiz wyll refuse it for that cause, who hath the lady in his governaunce. Ah, quod the duke, that is the doughter of the erle of Boulogne: the erle of Foiz hath refused Johan of Berrey; howebeit, in the name of God let us yet assaye. Than the duke wrote to the erle of Foiz, signifyeng hym ryght swetely that he wolde sende to hym four lordes, as therle of Xancere, the lorde de la Ryver, sir Guy de la Tremoyle, and the vycount Dassey, to treate with hym to have for hymselfe in maryage the doughter of Boulogne, beyng under his kepyng, so it maye be to his pleasure: and desyred the erle to sende hym an answere in writyng the hole of his mynde, to thentent that his messangers shulde nat traveyle in vayne, nor lese there payne. The erle of Foiz receyved the messangers that brought the writynge ryght amyably, and wrote agayne by them to the duke of Berrey, sayeng, howe he was right gladde of those tidynges, and wolde be redy to receyve the sayd lordes, outher in Foiz or in Byerne, so that the erle of Boulogne and the countesse, father and mother to the lady, be agreed therunto. And at their retourne, whan the duke of Berey herde his answere, he was right joyfull; and all that wynter styll he pursued, what here and there, that he myght attayne to this maryage the nexte somer after. He coude nat bring his purpose aboute shortely,

CAP. CXLVII

Howe the Admyrall of Fraunce was ordayned to go to the kynge of Castyle.

for he knewe well the erle of Foiz was no man lightly to be wonne, for he was sure he shulde have many delays; wherfore the duke thought to worke wysely, and sent specyall messangers to pope Clement, who was cosyn and nere akyn to the damosell of Boulonge. The Pope was right joyouse whan he knewe that his cosyn might so highly be maryed as to the duke of Berrey, uncle to the Frenche kyng. Than the Pope wrote to therle of Foiz, signifyeng hym right honorably, and advysinge hym that he shulde nat vary fro the treatie of that maryage, for therby their lynage shulde be enhaunsed. Thus the erle of Foiz receyved letters fro all parties, and he answered them all, for right well he coude dissimule in suche busynesse. He helde all the parties in good love and favour, bothe the Pope and the duke of Berrey; yet there was nat the wysest of them bothe nor of their counsayls that coude knowe perfitely what the erle of Foiz thought surely to do.

Nowe lette us somwhat leave speakyng of this mater, and retourne to the siege of Vanchadore.

Ye have herde here before in this hystorie how sir Wyllyam Lignac and sir John Boemlaunce,[1] and dyvers other knightes and squiers of Auvergne and Limosyn, had besieged the castell of Vanchadore, and Geffray Tetenoyre within. But they coude nat wyn it by no maner of assaut, for they within were provyded of all thynges necessary for vii. yere, though they had no refresshyng. They without ofte tymes wolde come out of their bastydes and scrimysshe. Durynge the siege many feates of armes were done, and dyvers hurt on bothe partes. And so it fortuned at a scrimysshe Geffray Tete Noyre was there hymselfe, and avaunsed so forwarde, that he was striken through the bassenet into the heed with a quarell, so that he was fayne to kepe his bedde, wherwith all his company was sore displeased; and the season that he lay there was no scrimysshing. Of this hurt, if he had ben well kept, he might sone have ben hole; but he kept hymselfe but yvell, and specially fro lechery, the whiche he derely bought, for it cost hym his lyfe: but or he died, he knewe well before there was no remedy but dethe, for it was playnly shewed hym by reason of his yvell rule he was in jeopardy of dethe, for his hed apostumed; wherfore he

[1] *Bonne Launce.*

CAP. CXLVII

Howe the Admyrall of Fraunce was ordayned to go to the kynge of Castyle.

was counsayled to declare his wyll, and to make hym redy to God ward; than he made his testament. First he caused to come before hym all the soveraygne companyons of the garyson, suche as were best expert in armes. Than he sate up in his bedde and sayd, Sirs, and derely beloved companyons, I knowe well I am in great daunger of dethe; we have a long season ben toguyder, and kepte good company: I have ben your maister and true capitayne to my power. Wherfore I wolde gladly in my lyfe dayes se that ye hadde another capitayne, that trewly shulde acquyte hym to you all, and to kepe this fortresse: for I shall leave it well provyded of every thynge necessary parteyning to a castell of warre, bothe of wyne, vitaylles, and artyllary, and other thynges requysyte. Wherfore I demaunde of you all in generall, if ye be advysed of any capitayne or capitayns metely to be chosen to governe you and this castell, as men of warre adventurers ought to do, for suche hath ben alwayes the warre that I have used. I have made warre moche under the shadowe of the kyng of Englandes quarell; I have alwayes ben[1] desyrous to be there as somwhat was to be gotton, and so alwayes companyons adventurers ought to do, suche as desyre feates of armes to adventure themselfe. Here in these fronters is a good countrey and frutefull, and great profyte to be goton therin: thoughe the Frenchemen nowe besiege us, it wyll nat endure alwayes; the siege and their bastydes wyll breke one day. Sirs, answere me to my demaunde: Have ye chosen any capitayne amonge you? The companyons stode styll and gave none aunswere. And whan he sawe that they spake nat, he beganne to speke agayne with swete wordes, and sayd: Sirs, I thynke surely of this my demaunde ye have thought before but lytell; wherfore, sirs, as I have layne here in my bedde, I have thought and devysed for you. Sir, quod they, we beleve it well; and it shal be more agreable to us that it cometh of you rather than of us; and, sir, shewe it us, if it please you. Sirs, quod he, I shall declare it to you, and name hym that I meane.

[1] *be* P.

CAP. CXLVIII

Howe Geffray Teate Noyre dyde chose a capitayne over his company, and howe he made his testament, and so dyed; and howe the duke of Guerles departed fro his countre to go into Pruce, and of the incydence that fell to him in the lande of the duke of Stulpe, where he was taken prisoner and disconfyted.

FAYRE sirs, quod Geffray, I knowe well ye have alwayes served and honoured me, as men ought to serve their soveraygne and capitayne, and I shal be the gladder if ye wyll agre to have to your capitayne one that is discended of my bloode. Beholde here Aleyn Roux, my cosyn, and Peter his brother, who are men of armes and of my blode. I requyre you to make Aleyne youre capitayne, and to swere to hym faythe, obeysaunce, love, and loyalte here in my presence, and also to his brother; howebeit, I wyll that Aleyne have the soverayne charge. Sir, quod they, we are well content, for ye have ryght well chosen. There all the companyons made theym servyaunt to Aleyne Roux and to Peter his brother. Whan all that was done, than Geffraye spake agayne and sayde, Nowe, sirs, ye have obeyed to my pleasure, I canne you great thanke; wherfore, sirs, I wyll ye have parte of that ye have holpen to conquere: I saye unto you, that in yonder chest that ye se stande yonder, therin is to the some of xxx. thousande frankes; I wyll gyve them accordynge to my conscyence. Wyll ye all be content to fulfyll my testament; howe saye ye? Sir, quod they, we be right well contente to fulfyll your commaundement. Thane firste, quod he, I wyll and gyve to the chapell of Saynt George here in this castell, for the reparacions therof, a thousande and fyve hundred frankes: and I gyve to my lover, who hath truely served me, two thousande and fyve hundred frankes; and also I gyve to Aleyne Roux, your newe capitayne, foure thousande frankes; also to the varlettes of my chambre I gyve fyve

CAP. CXLVIII

Howe Geffray Teate Noyre dyde chose a capitayne over his company.

hundred frankes; to myne offycers I gyve a thousande and fyve hundred frankes; the rest I gyve and bequeth as I shall shewe you. Ye be upon a thyrtie companyons all of one sorte; ye ought to be bretherne, and all of one alyaunce, withoute debate, ryotte, or stryfe amonge you. All this that I have shewed you ye shall fynde in yonder cheste: I wyll that ye departe all the resydue equally and truely bitwene you thyrtie; and if ye be nat thus contente, but that the devyll wyll set debate bytwene you, than beholde yonder is a stronge axe: breke up the coffer and gette it who can. To those wordes every man answered and said, Sir and dere maister, we are, and shal be all of one accorde: Sir, we have so moche loved and douted you, that we wyll breke no cofer, nor breke no poynt of that ye have ordayned and commaunded.

Thus Geffray Teate Noyre made his testament and lyved nat past two dayes after, and was buried in the chapell of saint George within the castell. His wyll was accomplysshed, and the xxx. thousande frankes devyded as he had ordayned. And Aleyne Roux and Peter Roux his brother were capytayns of the castell of Vanchadore. All this season the siege styll endured, but there were but fewe scrimysshes made; howbeit, whan the dethe of Geffray Teate Noyre was knowen in Auvergne and Lymosyn, the knyghtes and squyers there were ryght joyfull therof, and douted lesse than they dyde before. For this Geffray in his tyme was sore douted, for he was a good and a sage capitayne, and expert in all warre.

Nowe lette us retourne to the duke of Guerles, and shewe what fell to hym in this season, bycause I have spoken of hym before. For by his meanes the Frenche kyng, his uncles, and his brother, and other nobles of Fraunce, came to the entre of the countrey of Guerles; and the kyng departed thens and the duke, havyng no great dommage. And whan the duke of Guerles sawe that all the men of warre were departed, and that he was apeased with the duches of Brabant and with all his enemyes, by reason of the composicion that was made, as to rendre up the towne of Grave upon certayne poyntes and artycles, ordayned bytwene the duke of Burgone, the duches of Brabant, and the duke of Guerles: than he thought, to thentent to employ his season, to go into Pruce. He made hym redy, and gate hym com-

CAP. CXLVIII

Howe Geffray Teate Noyre dyde chose a capitayne over his company.

pany of knyghtes and squyers of his owne countrey and other places. And about the Utas of saynt Martyn he rode forthe throughe Almaygne: and in every place where as he passed he had good chere. And so longe he rode that he came to the lande of Pruce. I knowe nat by what insydence certayne men layde in wayte on hym, and in the feldes set on him or he was ware, and overthrewe hym and all his men, so that they lost all their horses, armure, vessell, golde and sylver, and were all ledde prisoners to a towne, and there sware faythe and trouthe to paye their raunsomes; and specially the duke of Guerles became prisoner, and made promyse to pay his raunsome to a squyer called Arnolde; his surname I knowe nat. Than the duke and his men were ledde to a stronge towne in the lande of the duke of Stulpe;[1] whether the duke was there or nat I was nat enformed therof. But whan the great maysters of Pruce herde howe the duke of Guerles was taken as he was commyng into their countre, they were sore displeased therwith, and sayd howe the mater shulde nat rest in that case, for they to suffre it shulde be greatly to their blame. Thane they reysed up men and departed fro Connysbredge,[2] and came with a great strength of men towardes the towne and castell where as the duke of Guerles was in prison. Whan the squyer that had taken the duke was enfourmed of the commyng of the great mayster of Pruce, with suche a puyssaunce, he doughted greatly, and determyned nat to abyde their commyng to the castell, but thought to departe. But or his departure he came to the duke of Guerles, and sayd to hym, Sir duke, ye are my prisoner and I am your mayster. Ye are a gentylman and a true knight; ye have sworne and gyven me your faithe: wheresoever I go, and wyll go, ye ought to folowe me. I can nat tell if ye have sente for the great mayster of Pruce or nat; he cometh hyder with a great puyssaunce; I thynke nat to abyde hym; tary you here if ye lyst; I wyll cary with me your faythe and promyse. The duke to those wordes gave none answere; and the squyer toke his horse and departed, and wente to a place stronge ynoughe. And at his departyng he sayde agayne to the duke, Sir, ye shall fynde me in suche a place: he named hym a stronge castell, and oute of all

[1] *Stolpe.*

[2] *Königsberg.*

CAP. CXLVIII

Howe Geffray Teate Noyre dyde chose a capitayne over his company.

hyghe wayes. And whan he was gone, the great mayster of Pruce came to the duke of Guerles where as he was, for there was none to lette hym, and so delyvered the duke out of prison; and if he hadde founde the squyer there, surely he had been slayne. Than the great mayster of Pruce retourned to Connysbredge, and the duke of Guerles with hym.

I shall shewe you what fell of this busynesse. True it was, great brute ran in dyvers countreis, and specially in Almaygne, of the takyng of the duke of Guerles: every man that herde it hadde great marveile therof. Thus whan the duke of Guerles was come to Connisbredge, and was delyvered, as ye have herde, than he remembred hymselfe howe he was bounde by his faythe to the squyer that tooke hym, and remembred the wordes that the squier spake at his departyng. Than he thought in hymselfe that in no wyse he wolde breke his promyse, but truely acquyte his faythe, and sayd to the great maister of Pruce, that he wolde no lengar tary there, but go to the squyer that had his faythe: and so determyned to do for any thynge that the great mayster coulde saye or do. Nouther dispensacyon, absolucyon, nor other thyng coude nat cause the duke to absteyne, but that he wolde nedes go to the town where as the squyer was, whome he called his maister: every man that herde therof reputed it for a great valyauntnesse. Whan this came to knowledge of his frendes and kynsmen, than they treated for his delyveraunce; and so he was delyvered by the helpe and meanes of the duke of Stulpe, who toke great payne in the mater. Howebeit, the duke of Stulpe, or he consented that the duke of Guerles shulde be delyvered out of daunger and out of his lande, wolde in any wyse that the duke of Guerles shulde swere and seale, that he and his heyres never after that daye, nor none other man for hym, shulde take any vengeaunce for that mater, by waye of dissymulacion or otherwyse. Thus he was fayne to do or he departed. This adventure had the duke of Guerles that yere.

Nowe let us retourne to sir Johan of Vyen, admyrall of Fraunce, and shewe what he dyde, and what he sayd to the kyng of Castyle on the Frenche kynges behalfe.

CAP. CXLIX

Howe sir Johan of Vyen dyd his message to kynge Johan of Castyle fro the Frenche kynge and his counsayle, and what answere the kynge of Castyle made.

THE admyrall of Fraunce spedde so in his journeys that he entred into Castyle, and demaunded where to fynde the kynge. It was shewed hym howe he was at Burgus. He rode thyder, and alyghted at his lodgynge and refresshed hym, and than made hym redy to go to the kynges palays; and he was receyved after the maner of the countrey right honorably, for the love and honoure of the Frenche kyng. And he was brought into the kynges chambre, and there the kyng receyved hym joyfully. Than he delyvered the kynge his letters. The kyng reed them, and called his counsayle aparte; and whan they parceyved by his letters that he had credence, than the admyrall was called forthe, and was commaunded to declare the entent of his commynge. And he, who was redy, sayd in fayre language, Sir kyng, and all ye of his counsayle: the Frenche kyng hath sente me to you, bycause it is come to his knowledge howe ye shall marry your sonne to the duke of Lancasters doughter; and, sir, ye knowe well that he is the kyng my maysters adversary. The kyng and his counsayle have great marveyle howe ye may here or entende to any treatie in all the worlde for any maryage without their knowledge; for they saye, and true it is, that maryage of chyldren can nat be withoute alyaunce and amyte of peace and love. Sir, he sendeth you worde by me, that ye be well advysed what ye have done or are mynded to do, and that in no wyse it be prejudiciall to the kyng nor to the realme of Fraunce, nor therby to breke the boundes and alyaunces that hath ben sworne and sealed bytwene kyng Henry your father, the prelates and noble cyties of this your realme, and the noble kyng and realme of Fraunce. Regarde well that they in no wise be broken, for if they be,

and ones openly knowen, ye ryn in the churches sentence, and to be excommunycate on payne unpardonable; and also to be in the indygnacion of the kynge and of all the nobles of Fraunce, and besyde that, to have them your great enemyes. Sir, this is the commaundement of the kyng and his counsayle that I have to shewe to you.

CAP. CXLIX
Howe sir Johan of Vyen dyd his message to kynge Johan of Castyle.

Whan the kyng of Castyle and parte of his counsayle, suche as were there, had herde the French kynges ambassadour speke so quickely they were abasshed, and eche of them loked on other; there was none that gave any answere, but satte styll. At the laste a bysshoppe spake, and sayde, Sir Johan, ye are newly come into these partes, and the kyng and all we saye howe ye be right hertely welcome: the kyng hath well herde and understande what ye have sayd; ye shall have shortely an aunswere, within a day or two, suche as shall contente you. That is suffycient, quod sir Johan of Vyen, and so tooke his leave of the kynge and of his counsayle, and wente to his lodgynge. And it was shewed me howe he taryed there more than seven dayes, without havynge of any answere; he sawe nothynge but dyssymulacion, wherwith he was sore dyspleased, for all that tyme he coulde nat se the kyng, for he kept hym close in his chambre. And whan syr Johan of Vien sawe that he coulde have none other exployte in his busynes, he spake on a daye to some of the kynges counsayle, and sayd: Syrs, surely I wyll departe without aunswere. They douted leste he wolde do as he sayd; and surely so he had done, and they had nat called hym on a day, and made him his aunswere as they dyd. Than it was sayd to hym howe he might well shewe the Frenche kynge, and suche as had sent hym thyder, that they shulde have the kinge of Castyle nor his counsayle in no maner of suspecte, for they had nat done nor wolde nat do any thynge with the kynge of Englande that shulde breke or adnychilate in any maner of wayes the alyaunces that hath been sworne and sealed bytwene Fraunce and Castyle. Howebeit, thoughe the kynge of Castyle mary his sonne to the doughter of the duke of Lancastre, therby to make a fynall peace, for the chalenge that the duke maketh to the realme of Castyle by ryght of his wyfe, and generally all the realme counsayleth the

CAP. CXLIX

Howe sir Johan of Vyen dyd his message to kynge Johan of Castyle.

kynge therto; and though he assent and wyll do it, yet the Frenche kyng nor his counsayle ought nat to be dyspleased therewith, for alwayes the kyng of Castyle and his men wyll be conjoyned and alyed with the French kynge and with the realme of Fraunce. This was the substaunce of the aunswere that sir Johan of Vien brought into Fraunce fro the king of Castyle, who proceded forthe with the duke of Lancastre in his maryage, and made an amyable peace togyther, by meanes of messengers that wente bytwene them. For the duke laye in the marchesse of Burdeaulx, and came thyder fro Bayon, and the duches and her doughter, where as they were receyved with great joye, for they were greatly desyred there, and fro Burdeaux they wente to Lyborne.[1]

[1] *Libourne.*

Whan trewe and certayne tydynges was come into the erle of Foiz house howe the kynge of Castyle was agreed with the duke of Lancastre, and shulde mary his sonne with the dukes doughter, and to gyve great landes in Castyle, and greate nombre of floreyns, about a two hundred thousande nobles, wherof the erle had great marveyle, this I knowe well, for I syr Johan Froysart was there the same tyme, than the erle of Foiz sayd, Ah, this kynge of Castyle is unhappy, for he hath made peace with a deed man; for I knowe well the duke of Lancastre is in that case, and in suche daunger that he can nat helpe hymselfe; but the kynge of Castyle hathe mette with a sage and a valyaunte prince of the duke of Lancastre, for he hath valyauntly borne hymselfe all the warre season.

Nowe lette us somwhat speke of the army on the see. So it was that aboute the feest of Crystmas, the erle of Arundell, who had ben a longe season on the see, costynge the fronters of Bretaygne, and of Rochell, Xaynton, and of Normandy, and so passed before Karenten; but afore that they tooke lande at Chirbroke, and wolde have done there some dedes of armes: and the same season there were soverayne capytayns in the towne and garyson of Karentyne, the lorde of Hambre[2] and the lorde of Coucy,[3] and with them a great nombre of knyghtes and squyers of Normandy. Whan the erle of Arundell knewe howe the towne of Karentyne was so well provyded and furnysshed with good

[2] *Hambuye.*

[3] *Courcy.*

men of warre, than he passed forthe: for he sawe well in assautinge therof he myght rather lese than wyn. Than he came to another towne therby, called Toraguy,[1] and assayled it, and toke it perforce, and pylled it, and wanne there great rychesse, and toke with theym many prisoners, and than came before the good towne of Bayeux, and came to the barryers, and there they made a skrymysshe and none assaute. Than the Englysshmen passed the watches[2] of saynte Clemente, and dyd great domage in the countrey, for they taryed there a fyftene dayes, and no man encountred them. The marshall of Blanniville[3] was in Normandy, but he knewe nat of their comynge; if he had, he wolde have provyded for the mater. And whan the Englysshemen had done their enterprise, and done great domage to the countrey of Normandy, as moche as a hundred thousande frankes came unto, than they drewe backe, and passed agayne the watches, and retourned to Chyrbroke, and dyd put all their conquest in suretye and savegarde into their shyppes. And whan they had wynde and wether, and their shyppes charged, than they entred and dysancred and toke the see, and retourned into Englande, and aryved at Hampton. Thus the army of the erle of Arundell on the see concluded in that season.

CAP. CXLIX

Howe sir Johan of Vyen dyd his message to kynge Johan of Castyle.

[1] *Torigny.*
[2] *gués.*
[3] *Blainville.*

CAP. CL

Howe syr Loys of Xancere wente to se the erle of Foize at Ortays: and howe before the duke of Lancastre at Burdeaux there were dedes of armes done bytwene fyve Frenchmen and fyve Englysshemen; and howe the duches of Lancastre wente with her doughter into Castyle to kynge Johan.

IN this season sir Loys of Xancer, marshall of Fraunce, was in Languedoc, in the marches of Tholouse and Carcassone, and he knewe well of the treatye that was made bytwene the duke of Berrey and therle of Foiz, for the maryage of the duke of Bowlognes doughter, whome

CAP. CL

Howe syr Loys of Xancere wente to se the erle of Foize at Ortays.

the duke of Berrey wolde have, though the damosell were right yonge. Than the marshall had affection to go and se the erle of Foyz: as I was enfourmed by his men at Ortays, for whan he came thyder he founde me there, he came at the sendynge of the Frenche kynge, and I shall shewe you why and wherfore. The Frenche kyng was as than yonge, and had desyre to travayle, and he had never ben as than in Languedoc, whiche is a great countrey, and full of cyties, townes, and casteles, and as than nygh all dystroyed and wasted: for the duke of Berry and his counsayle, who had the governaunce of that countrey, had greatly enpoverysshed and pylled the countrey, by tayles and great oppressyons, the complayntes wherof came to the kynges eares, by reason that he was newly entred into the domynacion of his realme. And the kynge sayde he wolde go into Languedoc to vysite that countrey, and also to go and se the Pope, whome he had never sene before: and also in that voyage he sayd he wolde se the erle of Foiz, of whome he had herde so moche honour and larges spoken of. Thus the marshall went forthe on his waye, and departed fro the cytie of Tholous, with a fyve hundred horse, and rode so longe that he came to Tarbe in Bygore, and fro thence to Morloys in Bierne. And the erle of Foiz, who was signyfied of his comyng, was joyfull, and commaunded all his offycers that the towne of Ortays shulde be well aparelled to receyve him, for he sayd the marshals comynge pleased hym ryght well. Lodgynges for his men were made redy, and the erle rode out into the feldes to mete with hym, and mo than thre hundred horses, and there receyved hym with good chere. And he was at Ortays a syxe dayes; and the marshall sayd to the erle howe the Frenche kynge had great affection to se the countrey of Languedoc and to se hym. Than the erle aunswered and sayd, Syr, the kynge shall be ryght welcome, and gladde I wolde be to se hym. Yea, but sir, quod the marshall, it is the kynges entension at his comyng playnely to knowe whether ye wyll holde you Frenche or Englissh, for alwayes ye have dissymuled out the warre, for ye wolde never arme you for no desyre. A, sir, quod the erle, I thanke you in that ye have shewed me so moche; for, syr, though I

CAP. CL

wolde never arme me, nor take no parte, there hath been good cause why: as for the warre bytwene Englande and Fraunce, I have nothynge to do therwith; I holde my countrey of Bierne of no man, but of God and the sworde. What have I to do to put myselfe in servytude or in dyspleasure of one kynge or other? Yet I knowe well myne adversaryes of Armynake have done that in them is, to bring me in the indygnacion of bothe partyes; for or the Prince of Wales wente into Spayne, by the informacyon of the erle of Armynake, the Prince wolde have made me warre; he was so sore moved therto, that he had done so and sir Johan Chandos had nat broken his purpose; but I thanke God, alwayes I have borne myselfe as mekely and as curteysly as I coulde, and shall do as longe as I lyve; and whan I am deed, let the maters go as they wyll. Thus the erle of Foyze and the marshall passed the tyme togyder. And at their departure the erle gave hym a fayre courser, a fayre mule, and another good horse, all thre togyther rychely sadylled and aparelled. And he gave to syr Roberte of Challus and to syr Rycharde Dolphyn to eche of them two hundred frankes, and to fyve other squyers to eche of them fifty frankes. Than the marshall toke leave to departe to Tholous. And I syr Johan Froysart was there the same tyme, and wolde have departed fro Ortays with hym, but the erle of Foyze wolde nat suffre me, and sayd I shulde nat as than departe; so it behoved me to byde his pleasure. Sir Loys departed fro Ortays and rode to Tarbe; and the lorde Dolphyn of Bygore[1] conveyed him, and sir Peter of Cabestan, one of the erle of Foiz knyghtes.

Howe syr Loys of Xancere wente to se the erle of Foize at Ortays.

[1] *le sire d'Anchin, de Bigorre.*

Aboute the same season there was at Burdeaux a dede of armes done before the duke of Lancastre, by fyve Englisshmen of his owne house, and fyve Frenchemenne; some of theym were of the marshall of Fraunce house; fyrst, by syr Pecton Dallagnie,[2] a Gascone Englyssh, agaynst sir Mores Mauvigmente, Frenche: seconde, bytwene sir Aragon Raymon,[3] Englysshe, agaynst the bastarde of Chavigny, Frenche: the thyrde, bytwene Loys Malapus, capytayne of Agremortes, Frenche, agaynst Jaquemyn Corne de Cerfe, Englysshe: fourthe, bytwene Archambalte de Villyers, Frenche, and the sonne of the lorde of Chaumonte, Gascone Englysshe: the fyfte, by

[2] *Petiton de la Grue.*

[3] *Raymond d'Aragon.*

CAP. CL

Howe syr Loys of Xancere wente to se the erle of Foize at Ortays.

Willyam Foucalt, Frenche, against the brother of the lorde of Chaumont, Englysshe. And to se these armes acomplysshed, dyvers knyghtes and squiers of Bierne, of therle of Foiz house, toke their way towarde Burdeaux, and I wente with them in company. Bytwene Ortays and Burdeaux is but xxiiii. myle. There we sawe the sayde armes done before saynte Andrews, in the presence of the duke of Lancastre and the duches, their doughter, and other ladyes, and damosels of the countrey. These knightes were nat all armed at ones, but every man by hymselfe with his felowe aparte. Their armes were thre courses with a speare, thre strokes with a sworde, thre with an axe, and thre with a dagger, and all a horsebacke. And this they dyd in thre dayes, and none of all tenne hurte; but sir Raymon slewe the bastardes horse, wherwith the duke of Lancastre was sore dysplesed, and blamed greatly the knight, bicause he bare his staffe so lowe; and the duke gave the bastarde one of his horses. Whan this was accomplysshed, every man departed to their owne houses.

Anone after, the duchesse of Lancastre ordayned to go into Castyle, and to leade with her Katheryne her doughter, who shulde have in maryage the kynge of Castyls sonne. And the duchesse entente was, fyrste, or she wolde entre into Castyle, to go to Mantuell,[1] where somtyme was the batayle bytwene kynge don Peter her father, agaynste kynge Henry of Castyle, and of sir Bertram of Clesquyn. And there she purposed to make juste enquiry where the kynge her father lay buryed, and to dygge up his bones, and to have them to the cytie of Cyvill, and there to bury theym agayne rychly, as it appertayned to a kynge. In the begynnynge of Marche, whanne the sonne beganne to mount, and the dayes to encrease, than the duches of Lancastre was redy with her doughter, and so departed fro Burdeaux, and went to Bayon, and there the duke of Lancastre toke leave of her, and he retourned to Burdeaux. And the ladyes rode forthe to Dape,[2] and there she was well receyved, for the cyte of Dape was under the obeysaunce of the kynge of Englande. There she rested two dayes, and than passed throughe the countrey of Basquence, and passed by the passe of Roncevalx, and entred into Naverre, and came to Pan-

[1] *Montiel.*

[2] *Dax.*

pilona, and there founde the kyng of Naver and the quene, who receyved the duchesse honourably. The quene of Naver was suster to the kynge of Castyle. The duches and her doughter were a monethe passynge throughe the realme of Naver, for they taryed with the kynge and with the quene a certayne space, and their costes and charges were borne and payed for. Than they entred into Spaygne; and at the entre of the realme they founde of the kynge of Castyls servauntes redy there to receyve theym, acordynge as they were commaunded. And than the yonge prince was called prince of Galyce.

CAP. CL

Howe syr Loys of Xancere wente to se the erle of Foize at Ortays.

CAP. CLI

Howe the duches of Lancastre departed fro the kynge of Castyle, and wente to Mantuell, to brynge her fathers bones to Civyll: and howe the Frenche kynge sent ambassadours to the erle of Foize, to treate for the maryage of the duke of Berrey, his uncle, with the doughter of the erle of Boloyne.

WHAN all these matters were renewed, and the maryage confyrmed, than the duchesse of Lancastre lefte her doughter with the king, and with her yonge husbande that shulde mary her, who was of the age of eight yeres. The duches toke leave of the kynge to go to Mantuell; the kyng sent with her of the greatest men of the courte to accompany her. Thus she came to Mantuell, and dyd so moche that she knewe the trouth where her father was buryed. Than he was dygged up, and his bones wasshed and bawmed, and wrapped in leade, and brought to the cytie of Civyll, and there receyved with processyon without the cytie, and the bones brought into the cathedrall churche, and there reverently and solemply his obsequy was done. And there at was kinge Johan, and his yonge sonne the prince of Galyce, and the most parte of prelates and barons of the realme. After the obsequy

CAP. CLI

Howe the duches of Lancastre departed fro the kynge of Castyle.

doone, every man retourned to their owne places. The kynge of Castyle wente to the vale of Sory, and his sone, and his yonge wyfe with hym; and the duchesse of Lancastre to Medena de Campo, a good towne, wherof she was lady, by reason of the confyrmacyon of the peace, and there she lay a season.

Nowe lette us leave to speke of them, and of Castyle, tyll another tyme, and let us speke of the maryage of the duke of Berrey, and also of other insydentes that folowed.

The duke of Berrey, who had maryed the lady Jane of Armynake to his first wyfe, after she was dysseased he hadde great imagynacyon to be maryed agayne, and that he well shewed. For whan he sawe howe he had myssed of the duke of Lancastres doughter, he than set clerkes to write, and sent messangers to therle Gaston of Foix, who had the kepyng of the erle of Boulonges doughter, more than the space of nyne yeres. And bycause the duke of Berrey coulde nat come to this maryage, but by the daunger of the erle of Foize, for nother for Pope, father, mother, nor frende, that the damosell had, the erle wolde do nothynge, without it were his owne pleasure, than the duke of Berrey desyred effectuously the French kynge his nephue, and the duke of Burgoyne his brother, to helpe and assyst hym in this maryage.

The Frenche kyng laught, and had good sporte at the duke of Berrey his uncle, bycause he was olde, and so hote in love, and said to him; Fayre uncle, what shall ye do with a yonge mayde, she is nat twelve yere of age, and ye be lx.; by my faythe it is great foly for you to thynke therof: speke for my cosyn Johan your sonne, he is yonge, the mater is more mete for hym than for you. Syr, quod the duke, I have spoken all redy for my sonne, but the erle of Foize wyll in no wyse agree therto, bycause my sonne is of the blode of them of Armynake, who be at warre togyder, and have ben longe. If the lady be yonge, I shall spare her a thre or four yere, tyll she be a parfyte woman. Well, fayre uncle, quod the kyng, I feare me she wyll nat spare you so longe: but seynge ye have so great affection therto, I shall ayde you as moche as I may. It was nat longe after but that the kynge ordayned the lorde de la Ryver, and syr Bureau,[1] his soverayne chamberlayne, to go in the voyage to

[1] *le sire de la Rivière, messire Burel.*

CAP. CLI

Howe the duches of Lancastre departed fro the kynge of Castyle.

the erle of Foiz, and with them the erle of Dassy: and the duke of Burgoyne ordeyned to go thyder on his behalfe the bysshop of Authune, and sir Gylliam of Tremoyle: and the duke of Berrey desyred Johan erle of Sanxer, a sage and valyaunt knyght, to go with the other. These fyve lordes were apoynted to go to the erle of Foize, and to desyre to have the yonge lady in maryage for the duke of Berrey. These lordes departed, and apoynted to mete togyder at Avignon, with pope Clement. About Candelmas they departed and toke the waye to Nysmes, and so to Avignon; they passed by Mountepellyer, and rode by small journeys and great exspence, and passed by Besyers, and came to Carcassone, and there they founde sir Loys of Xancere, marshall of Fraunce, who receyved them with good chere: and he shewed theym moche of the erle of Foiz estate, for he had ben there within two monthes before. Than they departed fro Carcassone, and wente to Tholous, and there rested, and than sente messangers to the erle of Foiz, to Ortays, in Byerne, and there began to treate for this maryage. But it was farre of, for at the begynnynge the erle of Foyze was colde, bycause the duke of Lancastre had sente to hym to have the same lady for his sonne the lorde Henry erle of Derby. By reason of this longe taryenge and delayeng of this treatye, it was said and noysed that the maryage shulde nat be. And all their aunsweres that they had fro the erle of Foize, wickely they sente worde therof to the duke of Berrey, who was at Nonnette in Auvergne. And the duke, who had none other desyre but to bringe the mater aboute, wrote oftentymes agayne to them with fresshe messangers, desyrynge them nat to cease tyll they had brought the mater to passe. And the erle of Foyze, who was sage and subtyle, sawe well the ardent desyre that the duke of Berrey had, and the hoter that he was, the colder was he: and he handeled the matter so wysely, that by the full agrement of all partyes, and yet sore desyred therto, he hadde thyrty thousande frankes for the charges of the ladyes expenses for suche yeres as she had been with hym. If he had more demaunded, more he shulde have had: but he dyd it so to have thanke of the duke of Berrey, and that he shulde perceyve that he had done somewhat for hym.

CAP. CLI

Howe the duches of Lancastre departed fro the kynge of Castyle.

Whan this mater was concluded, and all partyes agreed, thanne the erle of Foiz sente his cosyn the lady to Morlans, accompanyed with fyve hundred speares, of whome were capytayns syr Espaigne du Lyon, syr Raynolde Guyllam, syr Peter Cabestan,[1] sir Adam of Cacasse,[2] sir Manalte of Nonnables,[3] and sir Pier of Kees:[4] and in the feldes the lady was delyvered to the Frenche ambassadours on the behalfe of the duke of Berrey. There was syr Loyes of Xancere with a fyve hundred speares, and other company, who receyved the lady, and there tooke their leaves and departed: they of Foize retourned, and the Frenchemen ledde forthe the lady. The duke of Berrey had sente to her chares and chareottes rychely garnysshed, and horse, hackeneys, and aparell for her body and for her heed, as fresshe and as ryche as though it had been for the Frenche quene. Thus they rode forthe, and I sir Johan Froysart, auctor of this boke, rode in their company: for oftentymes whan I wolde have taken leave of the erle of Foiz, he wolde saye to me, howe I had no nede to make so great haste, and badde me whan I wolde retourne to go in good company; so I retourned in this sayde company. This yonge duchesse of Berrey, for so I wyll name her fro henceforthe, and all her company, rode so longe that they came nere to Avignon; there she rested at a towne called Vile Neufe, without the towne of Avignon, in a house of the Popes. And the nexte daye aboute nyne of the clocke, all the cardynals that were there at that tyme mette with her, and so passed the bridge of Rosne in gret estate, the lady rydynge on a whyte palfrey, whiche the Pope had sent her. Than she came to the Popes palays in Avignon, and there alighted and went to se the Pope, who sate in consystory in a chayre pontyfi-call. The Pope kyst her mouth bycause of lygnage. Than the duchesse and her company wente to dyner with many cardynalles, to the house of the cardynall of Thureyn, nere to the Popes palyce. This was on a Wednysdaye, and the nexte daye they all dyned in the same house agayne. I may well saye that the comyng of this lady to Avignon cost the Pope the some of tenne thousande frankes. The Fridaye she supped in the palays, and tooke her leave of the Pope; and the Saturday she departed and rode to dyner to Orange,

[1] *Calestan* P.
[2] *Corasse.*
[3] *Navailles.*
[4] *Quer.*

and there lay all night, for her cosyn germayne was princesse therof. The Sonday she departed, and her caryage before, and passed to Valance, and than to Vien, and so to Lyon sur le Rone, and there rested two dayes; than fro thens to Bresle,[1] and so entred into the countie of Forestes, and passed through the countrey, and so came to la Palesse, in Bourbonois, and so to Quissy; than to Hanche,[2] and so to Ryon, in Auvergne, and there rested two dayes or the duke of Berrey came thyder, who came thyder on Whytsonevyn: and on Whytsonday betymes he maryed the lady. This was a noble weddynge, and a gret feest; there was the erle of Boloyne, the erle of Estampes, and the erle Dolphyn of Auvergne. This feest and justes endured foure dayes. All this, I sir Johan Froysart, auctor of this boke, sawe with myne eyen, for I was there presente.

CAP. CLI

Howe the duches of Lancastre departed fro the kynge of Castyle.

[1] *Arbresle.*

[2] *Euch-sur-Allier.*

CAP. CLII

Howe certayne wyse men treated for a peace to endure thre yeres bytwene Fraunce and Englande, and all their alyes, as well on the one parte, as on the other, by lande and by see.

YE have herde here before howe there was a treuse taken bytwene all partyes and garysons, bytwene the ryver of Loyr, and the ryver of Dordone, and of Geronde, unto the feest of saynt Johan Baptyst, counted as than in the yere of grace a thousande thre hundred fourscore and nyne. This treuse durynge there were some great men and sage on bothe partyes, bothe of Englande and of Fraunce, that busyed themselfe to treate for a peace to endure thre yeres, both by water and by lande. And the entensyon of them that treated in this mater was to comprise in their treatye for the Frenche party, all suche as were besyed with their warre: first, to have comprysed the realme of Castyle wholy, as well by lande as by water, and in lyke maner the realme of Scotlande; and on the Englysshe partye shulde be comprised all their alyes, and the kynge and realme of Portugale, and dyvers barones of hygh Gascon.

CAP. CLII

Howe certayne wyse men treated for a peace to endure thre yeres bytwene Fraunce and Englande.

These entreatours had moche payne and travayle or they came to their ententes, for the Scottes wolde in no wyse consent; for whanne worde therof came to kynge Roberte of Scotlande fro the Frenche kynge, his owne persone wolde lyghtly have greed therto, for he desyred no warre. On a daye he called before hym all the barones and prelates of Scotlande, suche as ought to gyve counsayle in that mater, for without their knowledge the kynge wolde do nothyng: if he had done, they wolde nat have kepte it. There openly was redde in all their presence, the letters that the Frenche kynge had sente thyder to the kynge, and to the realme of Scotlande: the entente wherof was, that the Frenche kyng wolde have them of Scotlande to be comprised with him, and to agre to a treuse for thre yeres, by lande and by water, bytwene Englande and theym. This tydynges was harde to them, and they sayde: The Frenche kynge canne do nothynge but to have treuce, whan it is tyme to make warre. We have in this yere overcome the Englysshmen, and the season is ryght good, and lykely that we shall overcome them agayn the seconde tyme; yea, and the thyrde also. There was great debatynge of the matter bytwene them, but in no wyse they wolde consente therto. Fynally they acorded to sende a bysshoppe and thre knyghtes into Fraunce, to the kynge and to his counsayle, to the entent to breke the treaties, and to shewe the good wyll of the Scottes that they had to the warre. The bysshoppe of saynt Andrews, and syr Archambalte Duglas, syr Willyam Lynsey, and syr Johan Saynt Clere, these departed as soone as they myght, and toke the see and arryved at Sluse, and than rode to Parys. And before the kyng and his counsayle they shewed their letters of credence, sente in the name of all the barones and prelates of the realme of Scotlande. They were well herde, and the Frenchemen perceyved well the great affection that they hadde to procede, and to contynewe the warre agaynste Englande; howebeit, the treatye was so farre past and promysed that it coulde nat be revoked agayne: than the Scottes were swetely answered, howe there was no remedy but that they muste nedes procede to the peace. Thus the Frenchemen tooke a treuse, by meanes of suche as treated for the mater; there were

CAP. CLII

Howe certayne wyse men treated for a peace to endure thre yeres bytwene Fraunce and Englande.

dyvers metynges bytwene the partyes at Balingham,[1] bytwene Boloyne and Calays. So often they mette and debated the maters that a treuce was taken, gyven, and acorded, bytwene Englande and Fraunce, for suche as were treaters of the mater were prelates, gret lordes, and wyse menne, of bothe realmes, and all their adherentes and alyes, by see and by lande, to endure fermely without dissymulacyon of any shadowe of male engyn, the space of thre yeres. The entreatours of the Frenche partye were at Boloyne, as the bysshoppe of Bayeux, the erle Valery of Saynt Pole, sir Willyam of Melyn, sir Nycholas Bracque, and sir Johan le Mercier: and at Calays, for the Englysshe parte, was the bysshop of Durham, sir Willyam Montague erle of Salisbury, sir Wyllyam Beauchampe capitayne of Calais, Johan Lanon,[2] and Nycholas of Gaberthe,[3] and Richarde Roell[4] clerke, doctor in lawe. These mette togyder in the myddes of the waye bytwene Calays and Boloyne, at a place called Balyngham.

[1] *Lelinghen.*

[2] *Clanvowe.*

[3] *Dagworth.*

[4] *Rouhale.*

In this tyme great brute was in Fraunce, and in other places, of a great feest and justes that the yonge kyng Charles wolde make at Parys, at the fyrst entryng of Isabell the Frenche quene: agaynst whiche feest knightes, squyers, ladyes, and damoselles, apparelled them to be at that tryumphe. Of the whiche feest I shall speke more hereafter, and of the charter of the peace that was engrosed and sealed bytwene the parties.

Ye shall knowe that whan I sir Johan Froyssarte, authour of this hystorie, was departed fro Ortays fro the erle of Foiz, as ye have herde here before, and wente in company with the lorde de la Ryver, and the lorde Guyllyam of Tremoyle, who brought the yonge duchesse of Berrey, doughter to the erle of Boulonge, to the duke of Berrey, who wedded her in the towne of Ryon, in Auvergne, as it is conteyned here before in this hystorie, for at all these maters I was present, wherfore I maye well speke therof: and whan I came to Parys I founde there the gentyll lorde of Coucy, a good lorde of myne, who had newly maryed a yonge lady, doughter to the duke of Lorayne: whiche lorde made me good chere, and demaunded of me newes of the countrey of Foiz, and Biern, and of pope Clement, beyng at

CAP. CLII

Howe certayne wyse men treated for a peace to endure thre yeres bytwene Fraunce and Englande.

Avygnon, and of the maryage bytwene Berrey and Boulonge, and of another great frende of myne, and good lorde and mayster, therle Berault dolphyn of Auvergne. And to all his demaundes I answered all that I knewe, so that he was content. Than he desyred me to go with hym into Cambresys, to a castell that the kynge had gyven hym, called Crevecure, a two leages fro Cambrey, and nyne leages fro Valensenes. And so I rode in his company. And as we rode by the way he shewed me howe the bysshoppe of Bayeux, and the erle of Saynt Pole and other were at Boloyn, sent thyder by the Frenche kyng, to conclude the truce: and howe that for kyng Richarde kynge of Englande, there were at Calys the bysshop of Durham and therle of Salisbury, with other, and howe they had been there the space more thanne a moneth, abydynge for the ambassadours of Scotlande, who were as than newly come thyder. He sayde howe his cosyn the erle of Saynt Pole had writen to hym therof, and howe the Frenche kynge had sente to the kynge of Scottes, and to his counsayle, that he shulde agree to the truce: for the Englysshemen wolde consente to no peace, without the Scottes were comprised in the same. Thus we rode tyll we came to Crevecure, and there I was with hym thre dayes. Than I toke leave of hym and went to Valencennes, and there I taryed fyftene dayes. Than I wente into Holande to se a gentyll lorde and good mayster of myne, the erle of Bloyes, and founde hym at Estonchoucke.[1] He made me good chere, and demaunded of me some tidynges, and I shewed him such as I knewe. I taryed with hym a moneth there and at Gede.[2] Than I retourned into Fraunce to knowe the trouthe of the conclusion that was taken bytwene Englande and Fraunce, at Balyngham. Also I purposed to be at the feest that shulde be at Parys at the entre of the Frenche quene, to knowe the trouthe of all these maters. I retourned throughe Brabaunt, and so came to Parys, eyght dayes before the feest began. Than I fell in company with the lordes of Fraunce and of Scotlande, suche as had ben at the makynge of the truce bytwene Englande and Fraunce. And I fell in acqueyntaunce with sir Guyllyam of Melyn, who shewed me all the hole mater, and howe the erle of Saynt Pole was passed into Englande

[1] *Schoonhove.*

[2] *Gouda.*

to se kynge Rycharde, and to confyrme the truce that was graunted for thre yeres; and that he shulde retourne agayne to be at the said gret feest. Than I demaunded of the said sir Guillyam what lordes of Scotlande had been at the sayd treatie. I demaunded it, bycause in my youthe I had ben in Scotlande, and serched all the realme to the Wylde Scottes. And while I was there I taried a space in the court of kyng Davyd of Scotlande, and there I had acqueyntaunce of the most parte of the lordes and knightes of Scotlande; therfore I demaunded who had been there. And this sir Melyn answered me and saide, howe there had ben the bysshop of Bredon,[1] and sir James and sir Davyd Lynsay, and sir Water of Saynt Clere. I bare his sayeng awaye and dyde putte in writynge all that I hadde sene and herde, and shall shewe the trouthe what I sawe and knewe of this feest, and of the fyrst entryng of quene Isabell into Parys.

CAP. CLII
Howe certayne wyse men treated for a peace to endure thre yeres bytwene Fraunce and Englande.

[1] *Aberdeen.*

CAP. CLIII

Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

THE Sonday the twentie daye of June, in the yere of oure Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourescore and nyne, there was people in Paris and without, suche nombre that it was marveyle to beholde. And the same Sondaye in the mornyng there was assemble made in the churche of saynte Denyce, of noble ladyes of Fraunce, suche as shulde accompany the quene, and of suche lordes as shulde assyst the quenes lytters and other ladyes. And there was of the burgesses of Parys twelve hundred an horsebacke, raynged in the feldes on bothe sydes of the way, aparelled in gownes of one sute of clothe of baudkyn, grene and crymosyn. And the olde quene Jane and her doughter, duchesse of Orlyance, entred fyrste into Parys one houre before noone, in a lytter covered, well accompanyed with lordes, and passed through the hyghe strete of saynte Denyce, and so rode to the palays, and there taryed for the kynge; that day these two ladyes went no further.

CAP. CLIII
Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

Than the Frenche quene and the other ladyes set forwarde, as the duchesse of Berrey, the duchesse of Burgoyne, the duches of Thourayn, the duches of Bare, the countesse of Nevers, the lady of Coucy, and other ladyes and damoselles, all in good ordre. All their lytters were aparelled as richly as myght be. But the duches of Thourayne had no lytter: she rode alone upon a fayre palfrey rychly aparelled, and she rode on the one syde by the quenes lytter, and it was assysted with the duke of Thourayne, and the duke of Burbone, at the fore heed on bothe sydes. And in the myddes, on bothe sydes the lytter, were the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne: and at the fete was the lorde Peter of Naver and therle of Ostrevaunt; the quenes lytter was richely apparelled and discovert. Than nexte folowed, on a ryche apparelled palfrey, the duchesse of Berrey, and she was assisted with the erle de la Marche, and with the erle of Nevers, and she rydinge a softe pace bytwene them bothe. Thane folowed the lytter all discovered and open of the duchesse of Burgoyne, and Margarete of Heynalte her doughter, countesse of Nevers; that lytter was assysted with the lorde Henry of Bare, and the yonge erle of Namure, called sir Guylliam. And than the lady of Orlyaunce on a palfrey richely apparelled; and the lorde James of Burbone, and the lorde Philyppe Dartoys assysted the lady of Orlyaunce. Than another lytter with the duchesse of Bare, and the doughter of the lorde of Coucy.[1] Of other ladyes and damoselles that came after in chariottes and palfrayes, and knightes that folowed, there was no mencion made. And as for sergeauntes and offycers of armes had busynesse ynoughe to do to make way, and to breke the preace. There was suche people in the stretes, that it semed that all the worlde had ben there.

[1] *la duchesse de Bar et sa fille, et estoient adextrées de messire Charles de Labreth et du seigneur de Coucy.*

At the fyrst gate of saynt Denice entryng into Parys, there was a hevyn made full of sterres, and within it yonge chyldren apparelled lyke angelles swetely syngynge: and amonge them an ymage of Our Lady holdyng in fygure a lytell chylde playeng by hymselfe with a lytell myll made of a great nutte. This hevyn was hyghe and richely apparelled with the armes of Fraunce, with a baner of the sonne shynyng of golde castyng his rayes: this was devysed

by the kynge for the feest of the justes. The quene and the other ladyes as they passed under in at the gate they had great pleasure to beholde it, and so had all other that passed by. Than, whan the quene and the ladyes were paste by, then they came a softe pace before the fountayne in a strete of saynt Denice, whiche condyte was covered over with a clothe of fyne asure, paynted full of floure de lyces of golde: and the pyllers were sette full of the armes of dyvers noble lordes of Fraunce. And out of this fountayn there issued in great stremes piment[1] and clarre. And about this fountayne there were yonge maydens richely apparelled with ryche chapelettes on their heedes, synginge melodiously. Great pleasure it was to here them; and they helde in their handes cuppes and goblettes of golde, offryng and gyveng to drinke all suche as passed by. And the quene rested there and regarded them, and had great pleasure of that devyse, and so dyde all other ladyes and damoselles that sawe it.

CAP. CLIII
Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

[1] *Punent* P.

Than after under the mynster of the Trinyte in the strete there was a stage, and therupon a castell, and alonge on the stage there was ordeyned the Passe of kynge Salhadyn, and all their dedes in personages; the Christenmen on the one parte, and the Sarazins on the other parte. And there was in personages all the lordes of name, that of olde tyme hadde ben armed, and had done any feates of armes at the Passe of Salhadyne, and were armed with suche armure as they than used. And thanne a lytell above them there was in personages the Frenche kynge, and the twelve peeres of Fraunce, armed with the blazon of their armes. And whan the Frenche quenes lytter was come before this stage she rested there a season. Thanne the personage[2] on the stage of kyng Rycharde departed fro his company, and wente to the Frenche kynge, and demaunded lycence to go and assayle the Sarazins, and the kyng gave hym leave: than kynge Rycharde retourned to his twelve companyons. Thane they all sette them in order, and incontynent wente and assayled the kynge Salhadyne and the Sarazins. There in sporte there semed a great bataile, and it endured a good space: this pagiaunt was well regarded. Thane the quene passed forthe and came to the seconde gate

[2] *personages* P.

CAP. CLIII
Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

of saynt Denyce. And there was a castell ordayned as was at the fyrste gate, and a hevyn clouded, and full of sterres richely devysed, and therin the fygure of God syttynge in majestie, the Father, the Sonne, and the Holy Goost: and within the hevyn chyldren in fygure of angelles swetely syngyng, whiche pagiaunt was greatly praysed. And as the quenes lytter passed under the gate of Paradise, there were two angelles came out and came downe holdynge in their handes a ryche crowne of golde, garnysshed with precious stones, and they sette fayre and easely the crowne on the quenes heed, synging right swetely this verse: Dame, as ye be enclosed bytwene the floure de lyces, so ye be quene of the realme of Fraunce: and so drewe agayne into paradyse. Than they passed forthe and came before the chapell of saynt James, and there was a scaffolde richely devysed on the right hande as the quene rode, covered over with ryche arras, and drawen aboute with curteyns, in maner of a chambre: and within there were men playeng upon organs ryght swetely. And all the strete of saynt Denyce was covered over with clothes of sylke and chamlet, suche plentie, as thoughe suche clothes shulde cost nothynge. And I sir Johan Froissart, authour of this hystorie, was present and sawe all this, and had great marveyle where suche nombre of clothes of sylke were goten; there was as great plentie as though they had ben in Alysandre or Damas; and all the houses on bothe sides of the great strete of saynt Denice unto the bridge of Parys, were hanged with clothes of Arras of dyvers histories, the whiche was pleasure to beholde. Thus they passed forthe a soft pace, and so came to the gate of the chatelet of Parys, and there the quene rested to se the other goodly devyses that were there ordayned.

At the gate of the chatelet of Parys there was a castell made of woode and tymbre, as strongly made as it shuld have endured xl. yeres, the whiche castell was enbatylled; and at every lope there was a man of armes armed at all peces. And in the same castell there was a bedde made, richely encourteyned and apparelled, as it had been to have stande in the kynges chambre, and this bedde was called the bedde of Justyce: and in this bedde there lay by figure,

saynt Anne. In this castell there was a playne, for the castell conteyned a gret space, and this playne was full of trees, and full of hares, cones, and byrdes, that flewe in and out: for whan they were abrode, they flewe thider agayne for feare of the people. And out of these trees there issued a whyte Harte, and wente to the bedde of Justyce; and out of the other parte of the wode there issued out a Lyon and an Egle properlye, and fresshely approched the Harte, and the bedde of Justyce. Than came there out of the trees a xii. yonge maydens richely apparelled, with chapelettes of golde on their heedes, holdynge naked swordes in their handes: and they wente bytwene the Harte, the Lyon, and the Egle, and there they shewed themselfe redy to defende the Harte and the bedde of Justyce. This devyse the quene and all other had great pleasure to regarde. Than they passed forthe and came to the bridge of Parys, whiche was covered and richely besene; the coverynge of grene and crimosyn full of sterres, and the stretes hanged to Our Ladyes churche. And by that tyme that the quene and the ladyes were paste the bridge, and approched to the churche of Oure Lady it was late: for all the waye as they wente, they rode but a softe pace: and or the quene and the ladies entred into the churche of Our Lady, they founde by the waye other playes and pastymes greatly to their pleasure.

CAP. CLIII
Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

Amonge all other there was a mayster came out of Geane; he had tied a corde on the hyghest house on the bridge of saynt Myghell over all the houses, and the other ende was tyed on the hyghest towre in Our Ladies churche. And as the quene passed by, and was in the great strete called Our Ladyes strete, bycause it was late, this sayde mayster with two brinnynge candelles in his handes, issued out of a lytell stage that he had made on the hyght of Our Ladyes towre, and syngyng he went upon the corde all alonge the great strete, so that all that sawe hym hadde marveyle howe it myght be. And he bare styll in his handes the two brinnynge candelles, so that it myght well be sene over all Parys, and two myle without Parys; he was suche a tombler that his lyghtnesse was greatlye praysed. And before the churche of Our Lady the bysshoppe of Parys was revested with the

CAP. CLIII

Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

armes of our Lorde Jesu Christ, with all the colledge, and great nombre of other of the clergy. There the quene alyghted out of her lytter, and was takenne downe by the four dukes, that is to saye, the duke of Berrey, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Thourayne, and the duke of Burbone; and all other ladyes in lykewise taken downe by theym that were their assysters, bothe out of their lytters, and fro their horses, and in good order. So they entred into the churche, the bysshoppe and the clergy before them syngyng in the honour of God and of Our blessed Lady. The quene was ledde and assysted and brought up to the hyghe auter, and there she kneled downe and sayde her prayers suche as pleased her, and offred to the tresorie of Our Lady four clothes of clothe of golde, and the goodly crowne that the angelles dyde set on her heed: and than incontynent sir John de la Ryver, and sir Johan le Mercyer, delyvered the bysshoppe of Parys a more rycher crowne. And the bysshoppe and the four dukes dyde sette it on the quenes heed. Thane they retourned agayne through the churche, and the quene and the ladyes sette agayne in their lytters, as they were before. There were mo than fyve hundred torches brinnyng, for it was late. Thus they were brought to the palays of Parys, where the kynge, the olde quene, and the duchesse of Orlyaunce her doughter were. There the quene and the ladyes lyghted fro their lytters, and eche of theym brought into severall chambres: and the lordes went to their lodgynges after the daunsynge was paste.

The nexte daye Monday, the kynge made them all a dyner at his palis. And at the houre of the high masse the quene was ledde with the foresayd foure dukes into the holy chapell, and there in the masse season the quene was sacred and anoynted as a quene ought to be, and the archebysshoppe of Roane dyde the observaunce, who was called sir Wyllyam of Vyar.[1] After the masse songe solempnely, the kynge and the quene retourned into their chambres, and all other ladies, suche as had chambres in the palays. Than anone after, the kyng and the quene retourned into the halle, and all other ladyes. The great table of marble that alwayes standeth styll in the halle was made lengar with a great plaunche borde of oke of foure inches thycke,

[1] *Vienne.*

CAP. CLIII

Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

whiche borde was richelye covered. And above the great table agaynste one of the pyllers was the kynges dressyng borde, standynge full of vessell of golde and sylver, whiche was greatly coveted of many that sawe it. Before the table alonge discendyng downe, there were barryers made of wode with thre alyes, and there were sergeauntes and usshers a great nombre kepynge the entrees, to the entente that none shulde entre but suche as were servytours of the table, for the hall was so full of people that a man coulde nat tourne hym but with moche payne; mynstrelles a great nombre plesauntly played, every man after his facultie. Than the kyng and the prelates and the quene and the ladyes wasshed and sate downe at the tables. At the kynges table sate downe as chiefe the bysshoppe of Noyon, than the bysshoppe of Langers, than the kynge, and by the kynge the archebysshoppe of Rohan; the kynge satte in a surcote of scarlette furred with armyns, and a ryche crowne of golde on his heed; than the quene, and by her the kyng of Armyne: than the duches of Berry, than the duches of Burgoyne, and the duches of Thourayne: than the lady of Nevers, and the good damosell of Bare: than the lady of Coucy, and Mary of Harecourt: no othere sate nat at the highe table, savynge beneth all satte the lady of Sully, wyfe to sir Guye of Tremoyle. And at two other tables alonge downe the hall sate mo than fyve hundred ladyes and damosels. The prease was so great that it was great payne to serve them with their messes, whiche were great and notable. I have nat to do to make great processe therof: I shall somwhat speke of the pastymes that were made bitwene the messes, the whiche had been great pleasure for the kyng to have sene if he had taryed out the hole dyner.

Firste, in the myddes of the palays there was a castell made of tymbre, xl. fote longe, and twentie fote brode, with foure towres, in every quarter one, and one in the myddes hygher than the other. This castell was fygured for the cytie of Troye, and the towre in the myddes for the palays of Ylion: and there were penons with the armes of the Troyans, as of kyng Priamus, Hector his sonne, and his other chyldren, and also the armes of suche other kynges

CAP. CLIII
Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

and princes as were enclosed in Troye with kynge Priam. This castell went upon wheles, the whiche myght be tourned every waye properly. This castell came to assayle another sorte that was therby in a pavilyon, whiche also wente upon wheles, so softely and covertly that the movynge therof coude nat be parceyved; and there was the armes of the kynges of Grece, and of other suche as were at the siege. Also there was a shyppe properlye devysed, wherin myght well be a hundred men of armes, and all moved by the crafte of wheles, bothe the castell, pavilyon, and ship. They of the pavilyon, and of the shyppe, assayled ever the castell, and they within the castell made great defence: but this sporte endured nat longe, for the preace of the people was so sore about them that no man coulde styrre. The people were sore chafed with the heate, and putte to moche payne. And there was a table by the parlyament chambre dore, whereat satte many ladyes and damoselles: it was by reason of the preace overthrowen to the erthe, and the ladyes caused sodainly to ryse without order, and sore chafed with the preace and heate that was in the palays. The quene herselfe was at the poynt to have been sore displeased: perforce a backe doore was broken up to gette fresshe ayre. The ladye of Coucy was sore diseased. Whane the kynge sawe this mater he commaunded to cease, and the tables in great hast to be taken up to let the ladyes and damoselles at large. They lefte takynge of wyne and spyces and wente to their chambres. Than some of the ladyes taryed styll in the palays, and some wente into the towne to their lodgynges to be the more at their ease, for with preace and with heate they had been sore greved. The lady Coucy wente to her lodgynge, and helde her there tyll it was late.

Than about fyve of the clocke the Frenche quene, accompanyed with the foresayd duchesses, departed fro the palays of Parys, and toke their lytters all open, and so wente throughe the stretes to the kynges lodgynge, called saynt Polle, on the ryver of Sayne. With the quene there were mo than a thousande horses. And the kyng went fro the palays to the ryver of Sayne, and toke there a barge, and wente by water to his house of saynt Polle. And for all

CAP. CLIII
Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

that the house was great and large and well amended, yet the kyng had caused in the great court nere to the gate fro the ryver, to be made a great halle, whiche was covered over with clothes of the armes of Normandy, and the walles were hanged with clothes of arras of sondrie hystories. In this hall the kynge gave the ladyes a supper; but the quene kepte her chambre, she was no more sene that nyght. The other ladies, and the kyng and the lordes, daunsed and revelled all that nyght, nerehande tyll it was daye in the mornyng. Than every person departed and went to their lodgynges to slepe, for it was good tyme. Nowe I shall shewe you what gyftes and presentes they of Parys gave on the Tuesday before noon to the quene and to the duchesse of Thourayne, who was but newly come into Fraunce oute of Lombardy, for she was doughter to the duke of Myllayne, and she had the same yere wedded Loyes duke of Thourayne. She was named Valentyne; she had never before ben at Parys, therfore the burgesses of Parys gave her her welcome.

On this Tuesday aboute xii. of the clocke, about a xl. burgesses of Parys of the most notablest persons of the cytie, all in one sute of clothynge, came to the kynges house of saynt Polle, and brought a present for the quene through the stretes of Parys. The present was in a lytter richely wrought, and borne bytwene two strong men properly apparelled lyke two auncient sage persones.[1] The lytter had a celler of a thynne fyne clothe of sylke, so that the jewelles that were in the litter might well be sene through. Whan they came to saint Polle, first they came into the kynges chambre, whiche was redy apparelled to receyve them, for alwayes suche as bringeth any thyng are welcome. Than these burgesses sette downe the lytter on two trestels in the myddes of the chambre. Than they kneled downe before the kyng and said: Right dere lorde and noble kyng, your burgesses of Parys presenteth your grace these jewelles here in this lytter, in the welcomyng of your grace into the governaunce of your realme of Fraunce. Than the kyng sayd, Good men, I thanke you, they are right goodly and riche. Than the burgesses rose and drewe backe, and therwith toke their leave. Whan they were

[1] *ordonnés et appareilliés moult proprement comme hommes sauvages.*

CAP. CLIII
Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

gone, the kynge sayd to sir Wyllyam of Lordes,[1] and to Montague, who were by hym: Sirs, let us go nere to this lytter, and se these presentes more nerer. Than the kynge well regarded them. Fyrst, there were foure pottes of golde, sixe lavers of golde, and sixe plattes of golde, all this vessell wayed a hundred and fyftie marke of golde. In lyke maner another sorte of burgesses richely apparelled, all in one lyverey, came to the quene and presented her another lytter, whiche was borne into her chambre, shewynge howe the good men of Parys dyde recommende them to her grace and sent her that present. Whiche present was a shippe of golde, two great flagons of golde, two dredge boxes of golde, two saltes of golde, sixe pottes golde, sixe lavers of golde: xii. lampes of sylver, two basons of sylver. The somme was thre hundred marke, what golde what sylver. This present was brought in a lytter bytwene two men, one in semblaunce of a beare, and the other in semblaunce of an unycorne. The thirde present in lykewise was brought into the duches of Thourayns chambre by two men, fygured in the fourme of two blacke Moores richely apparelled, with white towelles about their heedes lyke Sarazins; the lytter was fayre and riche, covered with a fyne clothe of sylke, and brought by xii. burgesses all in one apparell, who gave this present to the sayd duchesse. In the whiche presente there was a shippe of golde, a great potte of golde, two ewers golde, two great plattes golde, two saltes golde: sixe pottes sylver, two dosin saucers sylver, two dosyn boules sylver: somme golde and sylver two hundred markes. This present greatly rejoysed the duches of Thourayne, as it was reason, for it was goodly and riche, and curtesly she thanked them of their gyfte. Thus this Tuesdaye these presentes were gyven to the kyng, the quene, and to the duchesse of Thourayne. It was greatly to be consydred the valeur of these presentes, and also the puyssaunce of the Parisyens: for it was shewed me by one who sawe all these presentes, that they cost the Parisiens more than threscore thousande crownes of golde. After these presentes thus delyvered it was tyme to go to dyner. But that daye the kynge and the quene and other ladyes dyned in their chambres, the soner to have done. For at thre of the clocke at after dyner they

[1] *Bordes.*

shulde drawe into the felde of saynt Katheryne, where as there was ordayned stages and scaffoldes a great nombre, for the kynge and the quene, and other, to beholde the justes.

CAP. CLIII
Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

Nowe shall I name by order the knyghtes that were called the kynges knyghtes, of the sonne of golde; there were thyrtie of them.

Firste the duke of Berrey, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Burbone, the erle de la Marche, sir Jaquemarte of Burbone his brother, the lorde Guillyam of Namure, sir Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce, syr Johan of Vien, sir James of Vien, lorde of Espaigny,[1] syr Guy of Tremoyle, sir Gillyam his brother, sir Phylyp of Bare, the lorde of Rocheforde, Bretone, the lorde of Raies, the lorde Beamond, syr Johan of Barbencon, the Hazle of Flaunders,[2] the lorde of Tourcy, Norman, syr Johan of Barres, the lorde of Nantoyllet, the lorde of Rochfoucalt, the lorde of Garanciers, sir Johan of Harpedante, the barone Dinury,[3] syr Willyam Marcyell, syr Raynolde of Roye, syr Geffrey of Caryn,[4] syr Charles of Changeet,[5] and sir Gylliam of Lignac. All these knyghtes were armed and sheldes lyke, therein the sonne raye; and aboute thre of the clocke they were in the place of saint Kateryne, and thyder was come ladyes and damosels. And firste the quene came thyder in a chare rychely aparelled, and all other ladyes in good ordre, and entred into the scaffoldes that were ordeyned for them. Than came the Frenche kyng redy apparelled to juste, whiche pastyme he loved ryght well; he was well accompanyed. Than the justes beganne; there were many lordes of dyvers countreys: syr Gyllyam of Heynalt, erle of Ostrevant, justed ryght goodly, and so dyd suche knyghtes as came with hym, as the lorde of Gommines, sir Johan of Andregenes, the lorde of Cantan, syr Ansell of Transegynes, and sir Clinquart of Herimo; all dyde well their devoyre to the prays of the ladyes. Also there justed well the duke of Irelande, who was all that seasone with the Frenche kynge. Also there justed well a knyght of Almayne besyde the Ryne, called sir Servays of Miraudo. These justes were well contynued, but there were so many knightes that one coulde nat rynne for another, and the duste with rynnynge of their horses was so great, that it troubled them sore: the

[1] *Gaultier de Vienne, seigneur de Pagny.*
[2] *Fraūce* P.
[3] *d'Ivry.*
[4] *Charny.*
[5] *Hangest.*

CAP. CLIII Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

lorde of Coucy dyd marvelously well. These justes contynued tyll it was nyght: than they departed, and the ladyes brought to their lodgynges. The kynge with his company was brought to his lodgynge of saynt Pole, and there was a supper for the ladyes, with suche haboundaunce that it were harde to recorde it, and the feest and revell with syngynge and daunsyng tyll the next mornynge the sonne rysinge. And the prise of the justes of the aunswerers that had best done and lengest contynued, was gyven to the Frenche kynge, by consente of all the ladyes, and judgement of the harauldes; and of the chalengers, the Halze of Flaunders, bastarde brother to the duchesse of Burgoyne. The knightes complayned of the dust, so that some said they loste their dedes by reason therof. The kynge made provysion for it; he ordeyned mo than two hundred barrelles of water that watred the place, wherby the grounde was well amended, and yet the nexte day they hadde duste ynough and to moche. Than the Wednysdaye came to Parys the erle of saynte Pole frome oute of Englande; he had made great haste to come to these justes and feest, and he had lefte behynde him in Englande sir Johan of Chatell Morant, to bringe the charter of the treuce with hym. The erle of saynte Pole was well welcomed of the kynge and of all other lordes, and the quene and all other were glad of his comynge.

On the Wednysdaye after dyner every man drew to the felde, and the ladyes came thyder in goodly aray, as they had done the daye before, and mounted upon their stages. Than the justes began fyersly, and was well contynued tyll it was nyght; than every person retourned, and the ladyes had a great supper at saynte Polle. Than the pryses were gyven by consente of the ladyes and judgement of the harauldes; of the answerers the prise was gyven to a squyer of Haynalte, called Johan de Flaron,[1] who was come thyder in the company of therle of Ostrevant; and of the chalengers, the prise was gyven to a squyer of the duke of Burgoyns, called Johan de Pokerers.[2] And agayne the Thursdaye justed knightes and squyers all togyther; every man payned hymselfe to do well, and it endured tyll nyght. And the ladyes supped agayne at saynt Polle; and there the prise

[1] *Floyon.*

[2] *Poquières.*

was gyven of the utter partie to sir Charles of Armoyes, and of them within to a squyer of the quenes, called Lons.[1] The Frydaye the kynge made a dyner to all the ladyes and damoselles, and aboute the ende of the dyner there entred into the hall, the kyng sytting at the table, the duchesse of Berrey, the duchesse of Burgoyne, the duches of Thourayne, the countes of saynt Polle, the lady of Coucy, and a great meny of other ladyes and damosels. They brought in two knyghtes on horsebacke, armed at all peces for the justes, with their speares on their thyes; the one was sir Raynolde of Roy, and the other sir Bouciquaut the yonger, and there they two justed goodly togyther. Than came thyder other knightes, sir Raynold of Troyes,[2] syr Gyllyam of Namure, syr Charles of Armoyes, and the lorde of Garancyers, the lorde of Nantoyllet, Lardenoys of Ostende,[3] and dyvers other. All these justed there the space of two houres before the kynge and the ladyes: than they returned to their lodgynges. That Fryday suche ladyes and damosels as wolde retourne to their owne houses toke their leaves of the kynge and of the quene, and also suche lordes as wolde departe. The kynge and the quene thanked them of the payne they had taken comynge to his feest.

CAP. CLIII

Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell into the towne of Parys.

[1] *Kouk.*

[2] *Trie.*

[3] *Donstienne.*

CAP. CLIIII

Howe the lorde of the Chateau Morante, whom the erle of saynte Polle had lefte behynde hym in Englande, retourned into Fraunce with the charter of the treuce, sealed by kynge Rycharde and his uncles, to endure thre yere by see and by lande.

AFTER that all these lordes and ladyes were returned fro this greate feest to their owne houses, than the lorde of Chastell Morant, whome the lorde of saynte Polle had left in Englande, retourned into Fraunce to the kynge and to his counsayle, and shewed forth the charter of the treuce, sealed by kynge Rycharde of Englande, and by his uncles and other, to endure thre yere, as well by see as by lande; and the wordes in the charter sayd, That whoso-

CAP. CLIIII
Howe the lorde of the Chateau Morante retourned into Fraunce with the charter of the treuce.

ever breketh by any maner of condicion any poynte or artycle conteyned in that treatie, shulde be taken and reputed as traytours, and to rynne in a mortall punysyon. And bycause that the lorde of Coucy was soverayne capytayne chosen by the kinge and his counsayle to defende and kepe the outwarde marches bytwene the ryver of Durdone and the see, and all the countrey of Auvergne and Lymosyn, the copy of this treatye was delyvered to hym: to the entente that he shulde publysshe and shewe it to all them that wolde do any thynge to the contrary, and also to the entent that they of Vandachor, of Chalusset, of Dorbesidousac,[1] and of the garysons that made warre for the Englysshe tytle, shulde have knowledge of that treuce, that they shulde make none excuse if they fell in the payne. In lykewyse the marshall of Fraunce, the lorde Loys of Xancer, had also the copy therof, whiche was ryght nedefull, for he was governour of the outwarde marches of Languedoc, fro the ryver of Ronne and the bridge of Avyngnon, and aboute the countreys and signories apendaunt to the ryver of Dordone, as the countreys of Beaucaire, of Carcassone, of Tholous, of Rouergue, of Dagen, of Quercy, of Bygore, of Pyergourte, and of Lymogines; and in these countreys were dyvers garysons, that smally regarded or obeyed any peace or truce, but alwayes entended to make warre, as the castell of Tullyer,[2] and the stronge castell of Londre[3] in Bygore, on the fronters of Byerne: they were greatly feared of their neyghbours.

[1] *d'Orbest, d'Ousach.*

[2] *Cullyer* P.

[3] *Lourdes.*

CAP. CLV

The maryage of king Loys, sonne to the duke of Anjou, to the doughter of kynge Peter of Aragone; and how he went with the quene of Napoles his mother to Avignon, to se pope Clemente.

IN this tyme there was a treatye made of a maryage bytwene Loys of Anjowe, sonne to the duke of Anjou, who wrote himself kynge of Napoles, of Cycyll, and Jherusalem, and erle of Provynce, and the doughter of kyng Peter of Arragon. The quene of Napoles went to Avygnone

CAP. CLV

The maryage of king Loys to the doughter of kynge Peter of Aragone.

to se pope Clement, and there she founde the lorde of Coucy, and had in her company her yonge sonne Loys. The lorde of Coucy was ryght joyous of her commynge. The quene was receyved ryght honorably of pope Clement and of the cardynalles, as she was well worthy, for she was a noble woman, and a dilygent in all her busynesse. There she desyred the lorde of Coucye to helpe to convey her sonne Loyes into the realme of Arragone, and to be about him tyll he were maryed. The lorde of Coucye wolde nat refuce it, but ordayned hymselfe so to do, and sayde, Madame, there was no vyage this sevyn yere that I wolde be more gladder to accomplisshe than to go into the marches of Cicyll and Naples with my lorde your sonne, if I had lycence of the kyng my soverayne lorde. Sir, quod the lady, I thanke you; I se well your good wyll; I doute nat but the kyng wyll be content that ye go with my sonne into Aragon; and the quene of Aragon wyll be glad to se you, for your doughter hath maryed her brother, sir Henry of Bare. The lorde of Coucy agreed to go this voyage. Thus the yonge kynge of Cicyll tooke his journey, well accompanied, whan he had taken his leave of the Pope and of his mother, all wepynge: for at the departynge of the mother and the sonne caused their hertes to relente, for they shulde departe farre asonder, and knewe nat whan to se togyder agayne. For it was ordayned, that whan the maryage was accomplysshed, that the yonge kynge and the yonge quene shulde take the see at the porte of Barcelone, and so to go and arryve at the porte of Naples, or as nere as they myght.

So longe this yonge kynge Loyes journeyed, that he passed Mountpellyer and Besyers, and so came to Narbone, where he was receyved joyfullye of every man. There they refresshed them and their horses one day, and than departed and wente to Parpygnen, the fyrst towne of the realme of Arragon. The commyng of this yonge kynge was well knowen in the court of the kynge of Arragon. He sente menne to mete with hym and to convey him, as the vycount of Roquebertyn and sir Raymonde of Baighes. So long they rode, that they came to the cytie of Barcelone, where the kynge and the quene and their doughter was. There the yonge kyng was nobly receyved, and specially the quene

CAP. CLV

The maryage of king Loys to the doughter of kynge Peter of Aragone.

of Arragon was ryght joyous of the commynge of the lorde of Coucy, and thanked the yonge kynge her sonne that shulde be, for bringynge of hym in his company, and sayd, that all other maters shulde do and atcheve the better. This maryage was confyrmed bytwene these two chyldren: but bycause wynter approched, they delayed their voyage goyng to the see. For in wynter the great sees are perillous: they said they wolde make their provisyon that wynter to go into Naples the nexte Marche after. The lorde of Coucy beyng in Arragon, receyved letters fro the Frenche kynge, commaundynge hym to retourne. Than he toke his leave of the kynge of Arragon and of the quene, and of the yonge kyng and his wyfe, and of all other lordes suche as were there, and departed. And if he myght have had leysar, he wolde have retourned by Avignon to have sene the Pope and the olde quene of Naples. But he sente to them his excuse, and retourned by Auvergne into Fraunce.

Whane this maryage was made bytwene the yonge kyng Loyes of Cycyll and the doughter of the kynge of Arragon, wherby there was great alyaunces bytwene the parties, and they of Arragon were bounde to ayde and to serve the yong kynge, to bringe hym into the realme of Naples, and nat to leave hym tyll he had the realme pesably of Naples and of Cicyll, with the appendauntes, as Pule and Calabre, and the cytie of Gaiet, the whiche Margarete of Duras helde; the Aragonoys shulde serve hym as longe as his warre endured with ii. hundred speares at their coste and charge, and a thousande crosbowes, and a thousande bregandiers. Whan the swete tyme of Marche was come, and that the wyndes were apeased, and the waters swaged of their rages, and the wodes reverdured, and that their provysions were made redy at Barcelone, and the galees redy suche as shulde go with the yong kynge, than he and his yonge quene tooke their leaves of the kynge of Aragone and of the quene, who wept at their departyng. Than the quene recommaunded the yonge quene her doughter to the erle of Roodes, a valyaunt knight, and to sir Raymon of Baighes. These two toke the speciall charge, natwithstandinge that the erle of Urgell and the erle of Lune were there in a great company. In these galees were a fyftene hundred speares,

two thousande crosbowes, and two thousande of other men of warre, with dartes and pavesses. They wente thus fortifyed and well acompanyed, to resyst the better if nede were agaynst their ennemyes, and also to resyst all rencounters upon the see: for it is a longe waye by the see fro Barcelone to Naples, and Margarete of Duras, their adversary, myght trouble them by the way; therfore they thought to go surelye.

CAP. CLV
The maryage of king Loys to the doughter of kynge Peter of Aragone.

Nowe we wyll leave to speke of this yonge kyng of Cicyll, and speke of other busynesse of the realme of Fraunce.

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme; and howe he went fyrst into Burgoyne and to Avygnon to se pope Clement.

AFTER this great feest was accomplisshed, and that every lorde and lady were gone home to their owne houses, as ye have herde here before, and that the Frenche kyng sawe that he had truce with Englande for thre yere, he hadde than ymaginacion to go and visite his realme, specially the utwarde marchesse of Languedocke. For the lorde de la Ryver and sir Johan Mercier, who were as than chefe of his prevy counsayle, they exhorted hym to go to Avygnon to se pope Clement and the cardynalles, who desyred to se hym, and also to go to Tholous. For they sayd to the kyng, Sir, a kyng in his youthe ought to visyte his realme, and to knowe his people, and to lerne how they be governed, the whiche shulde be greatly to his profyte, and the better to be beloved with his subjectes. The kyng lyghtly enclyned to their counsayle, for he had desyre to traveyle and se newe thynges. And the lord de la Ryver, who was but newly come out of those marchesse, herde great complayntes of the people of Tholous, of Carcassone, and of Beaucayre, and they desired greatly to se the kyng. For they had ben sore charged with tayles and aydes by the duke of Berrey, by the informacion of a servaunt of his,

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

called Betysache, who had pytie of no man; he so pylled the people, that nothynge was lefte; therfore he counsayled the kynge to go thyder to provyde some remedy, and also that the kynge shulde sende for the erle of Foize to come to hym to Tholous. The kyng made him ready to go thyder, and sente afore all the way that provisyon shulde be made for his commyng, and sente worde therof to his uncle the duke of Burgoyne and to his aunte the duchesse, how he wolde come alonge throughe their countrey, and wolde se his cosyns their chyldren, and to bring in his company his brother the duke of Thourayne and his uncle of Burbone, whiche pleased greatly the duke and the duchesse. And the duke caused to be proclamed a feest and a justes, to be holden at Dygnon,[1] and knightes and squiers of Burgoyne, of Savoy, and of other marches adjoyning, were requyred to be at this feest. And so every man ordred themselfe accordingly.

[1] *Dijon.*

Thus whyles the kynges provisyon was a makyng to go to Avignon and to Languedocke, the duke of Burgoyne on his parte made great provisyon to receyve the kynge, and so dyde every man in their marchesse that purposed to be at the feest at Dignon. The same season other maters fell in Fraunce. Ye have herde howe the duke of Irelande, who was called erle of Oxenforde, was banysshed oute of Englande by the uncles of kyng Rycharde, and speciallye the duke of Gloucestre had grettest dyspleasure to hym; so that to save hymselfe he was fledde into Hollande, and taryed there but a small season in the towne of Dordreght, for he was fayne to departe thens, for duke Aubert, who was lorde of that towne and of Holande, denyed hym the taryeng in his countrey: for he wolde nat kepe hym agaynst the wyll of his cosyns germayns of Englande, for all that the kynge of Englande had written for hym. Yet he was fayne to departe and to go to Trecte,[2] a fraunches towne for all maner of people, payeng for that they take; and the duke of Irelande had ynoughe to paye, for besyde that he brought with him, he had threscore thousand frankes out of Fraunce fro the constable, for the redempcion of Johan of Bretayne: and he was come to the Frenche kyng under saveconducte, and was there with hym more than a yere.

[2] *Utrecht.*

The kyng made hym good chere, bycause he was a straunger. Howebeit, trewe it was, thoughe this duke was with the kyng, yet the lorde of Coucy hated hym in his herte, for he had good cause. For though the duke in all affayres was provyded of wytte, honoure, eloquence, and of great largesse, yet he had greatly trespassed agaynst the lorde of Coucies doughter, who was his wyfe laufully spoused, and forsoke her without any tytell of reason: but by false and yvell temptacyon and disceyte was disceyved, and toke another wyfe, a damosell of the quene of Englandes, of the countrey of Boeme; and the kyng and the quene of Englande synfully consented therto, and was dispensed by pope Urbane of Rome, at the instaunte desyre of the kynge and quene of Englande. This synne greved greatly the conscience of the duke of Irelande. And bycause the lorde of Coucy, who was of the counsayle of Fraunce, and well worthy so to be, for he had done good servyce, and was well able to do, he procured so moche by meanes of his frendes, as sir Olyver of Clysson, and the lorde de la Ryver, sir Johan Marcyer, and other, that it was sayde to the duke of Irelande that he shulde departe out of Fraunce, and to go and chose hymselfe another place to abyde in, where he lyst, so that it be nat in the realme of Fraunce, and thyder he shulde surely be conveyed. The duke of Irelande sawe well howe he was dayly in paryll by meanes of the lorde of Coucy and his lygnage; wherfore he thought it shulde be beste for hym to go farre of rather than to abyde nere: than he advised to drawe into Brabant, and desyred the kyng to write to the duchesse of Brabant, that it wolde pleace her to suffre hym pesably to abyde in her countrey. The kynge wrote to his aunte the duchesse of Brabant, and she condiscended to the kynges desyre. The duke of Irelande was conducted by men of the kynges to Lovayne, and there he taryed, and somtyme he went to a castell nat farre of fro the towne of Lovaygne, the whiche he had borowed of a knyght of Brabant. With the duke of Irelande was the archebysshop of Yorke, who in lykewise was banysshed out of Englande, all for one cause: this bysshoppe was one of the Nevelles of Englande, who in the countrey of Northumberlande were puissaunt men, bothe of landes and of lynage. There taryed these two lordes at

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

Lovayne or there about, as I herde saye, as longe as they lyved, for they coude never come to mercy nor peace with the kynge of Englandes uncles: I can no farther speke of them.

About the feest of saynt Mychell the Frenche kyng departed fro his house of Beautie besyde Parys, and lefte there the quene, and toke his waye by Troy in Champayne to go into Burgoyne, and his uncle the duke of Burbone, and duke Loyes of Thourayne, and the lorde of Coucy, and many other lordes and knyghtes in his company. The kynge rode so longe that he came to Dignon: the duke of Burgoyne and the erle of Nevers his sonne were come before to the Chatelon on the ryver of Sayne. Whan the kyng was come to Dignon, the duchesse of Burgoyne and the countesse of Nevers her doughter receyved the kyng joyfully, and all other lordes for love of the kyng. And to his welcomynge to Dygnon many ladyes and damosels were come thyder to se hym. There was the lady of Sully, the lady of Vergy, the lady of Pagny, and dyvers other fayre ladies and fresshe, and well apparelled: than began feestynge, daunsynge, and carolynge. These ladyes enforsed themselfe to daunce and to syng, and to make joye for love of the kyng, and the duke of Thourayne, the duke of Burbone, and of the lorde of Coucy. Monday, Tuesday, and Wednisday, all thre dayes ther was goodly justes, and prices gyven to the best doers. The kynge was eight dayes in the towne of Dignon, in great triumphe and sporte. The x. daye he toke leave of his uncle the duke of Burgoyne and of the duchesse and their children. Thentent of the duke of Burgoyne was shortely after to folowe the kyng his nephue, and to go with hym that journey. The kyng departed fro Dignon, whan he had taken his leave of all ladyes and damoselles, and rode so long by his journeys that he came to Vileneufe besyde Avygnon: There his house royall was apparelled for hym, and there was the cardynals of Amyens, of Aigreuell,[1] of saint Marcell, of Chatell Neufe, and mo than xiii. other came and mette the kyng in the felde, and all were gladde of the kynges commyng.

[1] *Aigrefeuille.*

The duke of Berrey was come to Avygnon and was lodged in the Popes palais, but he came to Vyle Neufe to the kynge, and laye in the lyvere of Arras, called Amontays, in the

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

way to Mountpellyer. The duke of Burgoyne arryved there the next day that the kyng came thyder by the water of Rone, for the duke toke a barge at Lyon sur le Rone. Thus the kynge and these four dukes were togyder. Than they determyned to passe the bridge of Avignon and to go and se the Pope. And about ix. of the clocke in the mornyng the kyng passed the bridge, acompanyed with his brother and his thre uncles and xii. cardynalles, and so went to the Popes palays, and pope Clement was redy in his chambre of consystorie, syttyng in his chayre of papalyte. Whan the Frenche kyng came into the chambre and sawe the Pope he enclyned hymselfe, and whan he came nere, the Pope rose, and the kyng kyst his hande and his mouthe. Than the Pope sate downe, and caused the kyng to syt downe by hym, on a place purposely prepared for hym. Than the dukes kyst the Popes hande, and sate downe amonge the cardynals. Anone it was tyme of dyner; than they drewe into the Popes great chambre, where the tables were redy covered. The Pope wasshed and satte downe at a table alone and kepte his estate. The Frenche kyng satte downe at another table alone, and the cardynalles and dukes satte downe in order. The dyner was plentyfull, and after dyner they had wyne and spyces. Than the kyng and the four dukes went into their chambres; eche of them had a chambre apparelled in the palays, and there they taryed a certayne dayes. The v. day after that the kyng came thyder, the yonge erle of Savoy, cosyn to the king, and nephue to the duke of Burbone, came thyder: the kyng was right joyfull of his commyng. The Frenche kynge, the duke of Thourayne his brother, and the erle of Savoye, who were lyght of corage and of spyrite, thoughe they were lodged in the Popes palais, nere to the Pope and to the Cardynalles, yet for all that they wolde nat absteyne to daunce and to caroll, and to make sporte amonge the ladyes and damoselles of Avignon: and the erle of Genesve, brother to the Pope, brought theym in aquayntaunce with the ladyes and damoselles of the towne. The kynge gave great giftes to the ladyes and damoselles, wherby he had great laude and prayse.

The Pope and the Cardinals were ryght joyfull of the

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

kynges beyng there, as it was reason that they shulde so be, for without the love of the Frenche kynge their porte shulde have ben but small. For they consydred, or ought to have consydred, that there was no kynge christned that were obedyent to them, except it were for love and favoure and alyaunce of the Frenche kyng. The kynge of Spaygne and the kynge of Scottes obeyed this pope Clement, and the kynge of Aragon was but newly so determyned; and that made the quene Yolande of Bare, who was cosyn germayne to the Frenche kynge: elles he had nat done so, for before, the kynge of Aragon and his father before hym was as neuter. Therfore this Pope and Cardynalles ought well to feest the Frenche kyng, seynge their puyssaunce and profyte that they lyved by to kepe their estate came by meanes of the Frenche kyng. Thus the kyng taryed there a certayne season in great joye and sporte. And for joye of the kynges commynge thyder, the Pope opyned his graces to all clerkes beyng in the courte for the space of a moneth: and gave the nomynacions to the kyng, of all coledges and cathedrals: and to every coledge two prebendes: and revoked all other graces before gyven, and wolde that the kynges graces shulde procede before, as they dyd, wherby many of the kynges clerkes were promoted. Also the Pope gave graces to the duke of Thourayne, the duke of Berrey, the duke of Burgoyne, and to the lorde Coucy; all other were stopped that had been graunted before. The Pope was so curtesse and lyberall, that for love of the kynges commyng he graunted every thyng that was asked.

Whan the kynge had ben there a certayne space, the Pope shewed hym his complaynt, howe that the other pope of Rome greatly hyndred his ryght, and made moche trouble and diffrence in the churche. The kynge herde hym well, and promysed this pope Clement, that after his returne agayne into Fraunce he wolde entende to none other thynge, but to bringe the churche in one accorde. With those wordes the Pope was greatly conforted. The kynge toke his leave, and retourned to Vyle Neufe, and so dyde his brother and uncles of Berey and Burgoyne. And there on a daye the kynge made a dyner to all the cardynalles and to the erle of Genesve, brother to the Pope. After

dyner they toke their leaves, for the kyng sayd, that the nexte day he wolde ryde towarde Mountpellyer, and he thanked them of the reverence that they had done to hym. The cardynalles retourned to Avygnon. Than it was ordayned that the kynge shulde departe the nexte daye, his brother and the duke of Burbone in his company. And so he dyd, and toke leave of his uncles of Berrey and of Burgoyne, and sayde, howe they shulde retourne into their owne countreis, for they shulde go no further with hym at that tyme: for he sayde he wolde go to Tholous, and sende for therle of Foiz to come thyder. His uncles were content therwith, for as than the kyng had suche counsayle about hym, that the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyns voyces were nat herde, without it were in small maters. The governyng of Languedocke was taken awaye fro the duke of Berrey, and devyded into seneschaunces to the kynges profyte; wherof the countreis and marchesse of Carcassone, of Besyers, of Narbone, of Fonges,[1] of Bygore, and of Tholous, were greatly rejoysed. For before that season they had been sore oppressed with tayles that the duke of Berrey had reysed on them, as ye shall here after whan the mater requyreth it.

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

[1] *Fanjeaus.*

Whan the duke of Berey and the duke of Burgoyn sawe that the kyng wolde go to Mountpellyer and visyte Languedoc, and wolde nat suffre them to go in his company, they were sore displeased therwith. Howbeit, sagely they dissymuled the mater, and sayde eche to other: The kyng gothe into Languedoc to make inquysycyon on them that governed there, and to make a treatie with therle of Foiz, who is the most proudest erle now lyveng: he never loved nor praysed any neyghbour that ever he had, nouther Frenche kyng, Englande, Spaygne, Arragon, nor Naver. The kyng taketh with him of his counsayle no mo but Ryver and Mercier, Montague, and the Beghe of Villayns. Howe saye you to this, brother? quod the duke of Berrey. The duke of Burgoyne answered and sayd, The kynge our nephue is yonge, and he beleveth yonge counsayle; they shall disceyve hym, for surely the conclusyon shall nat be good, and that ye shall se. It must behove us to suffre for this presente tyme, but the tyme shall come that suche as

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

counsaileth him shall repent and the kynge also. Let hym go on Goddes name whider it shall please hym, and let us retourne into our owne countreis; as long as we holde toguyder there is none shall do us any wronge: we are two of the chefe membres of Fraunce. Thus these two dukes devysed togyder, and the Frenche kyng departed the nexte day and toke the waye to Nymes, and rode thyder to dyner. The said two dukes taryed styll with the Pope thre dayes, and the lorde of Coucy in lykewise. The fourthe daye they departed and rode into their owne countreis, and the kyng went fro Nymes and laye all nyght at Lunell.

Whan the kyng departed fro Lunell he went to dyner to Mountpellyer, it was but thre lytell myles. There he was receyved of the burgesses, ladyes, and damoselles of the towne, for they greatly desyred to se the kynge; and many riche presentes were gyven to hym, for Mountpellyer is a puissaunt towne, ryche, and full of marchandise. The kynge praysed the towne moche, and well consydred their puissaunce. And it was shewed the kyng that the towne hadde ben moche richer before thanne it was at that presente tyme: for the duke of Anjou and the duke of Berrey, eche of them in their tourne, hadde greatlye pylled them. The kyng was sorie that the good people had endured so moche dommage, and sayd how he wolde reforme the countre into a better state. Than it was shewed the kynge that the povertie of that towne was nothyng to that he shulde fynde forwarde: For that towne of itselfe hath good meanes of recoveraunce by reson of the marchandyse that is there used, bothe by lande and by see. But in the marchesse of Carcassone and Tholous and therabout, where as the sayd two dukes had the governaunce, loke on what thyng they had puyssaunce to laye on their handes, there was nothyng left, but all taken away; for ye shall fynde the people there so poore, that suche as were wont to be riche and puissaunt, nowe they are scant able to labour their vynes nor landes. It is a great pyte to se them, their wyves and chyldren, for they have had every yere fyve or sixe tayles layde on their shulders, and are raunsomed to the thirde or fourthe parte of their substaunce, and somtyme to all toguyder: one tayle coude nat be payde but that another was redy on the necke

therof. For, syr, as it is well knowen, these two dukes your uncles, while they ruled in Languedocke, they have levyed in the countrey fro Vyle Neufe into Tholousyn, rounde about to the ryver of Garon, and retournyng to the ryver of Dordone, the somme of xxx. hundred thousande frankes. And specially sythe the duke of Anjou departed, the duke of Berrey hath done the more dommage; for he founde the playne countrey and commontie in good case, for the duke of Anjou tooke but of the ryche men, who had wherwith to paye; but the duke of Berrey spared nother poore nor riche, for he gadered all before him, specially by one of his counsayle, his treasourer, named Betysache, who is of the nacyon of the cytie of Besyers, as ye shall here by the complayntes of the people that will crye out on hym. To these wordes the kyng sayd, As God have my soule, I shall provyde for this mater or I retourne: and I shall punisshe the trespasours; for I shall make an inquysycion of the servauntes and offycers of myne uncles, suche as had ruled here before in the parties of Languedocke, and suche as have deserved shall be corrected.

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

The kynge taryed at Mountpellyer the space of xii. dayes, for the order of the towne and the pastyme of ladyes and damoselles, suche as he founde there, pleased hym greatly. To saye trouthe, the kynge as at that tyme was in his lusty youthe, and lyght and quycke of spyrite; he daunsed and caroled amonge the frysce[1] ladyes and damoselles of that towne somtyme all nyght, and gave and made bankettes and suppers largely, and wolde gyve to the ladyes and damosels rynges of golde and chaynes to them that he reputed worthy. The kynge dyde so moche, that he had great laude and prayse. And some of them wolde that he had taryed there lengar than he dyd, for he kept revell, daunsyng, and solas, and every day it was newe to begyn.

[1] *frysco* P.

Ye have herde oftentymes said, howe the sporte of ladies and damosels encorageth the hertes of yonge lusty gentylmen, and causeth them to desyre and to seke to gette honour. I say this, bycause with the kyng there was thre gentylmen of highe enterprice and of great valure, and that they well shewed, as ye shall here. Fyrst, there was the yonge sir Boucequaut, the other sir Raynold of Roy, and the thirde

CAP. CLVI

Howe the Frenche kynge had desyre to go and visyte the farre partes of his realme.

the lorde of saynt Pye. These thre knyghtes were chamberleyns with the kyng, and well beloved with him, for they were well worthy; they were fresshe, and served hym well in armes and in all other maters. These thre beyng at Mountpellier among the ladyes and damosels, they toke on them to do armes the next somer after; and as I was enformed, the principall cause that enclyned them therto was as I shall shewe you. Ye knowe well, as it hath ben rehersed here before in this hystorie, howe that in the dayes of kyng Charles there was an Englysshe knyght, called sir Peter Courtney, a valyaunt knyght in armes, came out of Englande into Fraunce to Paris, and demaunded to do armes with sir Guy of Tremoyle, in the presence of the kyng or of suche as wolde se them. Sir Guy wolde nat refuce his offre, and in the presence of the kyng and of other lordes they were armed on a daye and ran toguyder one course. And than the kyng wolde nat suffre them to ryn agayne toguyder, wherwith thenglysshe knyght was right yvell content, for as he shewed, he wolde have furnysshed his chalenge to the uttraunce. But he was apeased with fayre wordes; and it was sayde to hym that he had done ynough, he ought to be content therwith. The kynge and the duke of Burgoyne gave hym fayre gyftes and presentes. Than he retourned agayne towardes Calays. And the lorde of Clary, who was a friscay and a lusty knyght, was charged to convey hym. They rode so longe toguyder that they came to Lucynen,[1] where as the countesse of saynt Poule laye, suster to kynge Richarde of Englande. The lady was joyfull of the commynge thyder of sir Peter Courtney, for she hadde maryed fyrste his cosyn the lorde of Courtney, but he dyed yonge, and after she maryed the erle of saynt Poule. The Englisshemen called her madame Courtney, and nat countesse of saynt Poule.

[1] *Lucheux.*

CAP. CLVII

Howe sir Peter Courteney came into Fraunce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle; and howe the lorde of Clary conveyed hym, and by what occasyon he dyde armes with hym in the marchesse of Calais.

THUS as sir Peter of Courtney and the lorde of Clary were at Lucenen in Arthoys with the countesse of saynt Poule, who was right joyouse of their commynge, and as they devysed of many thynges, the countesse demaunded of sir Peter Courtney what he thought of the state of Fraunce. He aunswered and sayd, Certaynly, madame, the states of Fraunce are well and goodly served; we can nat be so served in our countrey. Sir, quod the lady, do the lordes of Fraunce and the maner there contente you? Have they nat made you good chere? Surely, madame, quod he, their chere contenteth me passynglye well; but in the case that I passed the see for, they have but easely acquyted me therin. And, madame, I wyll ye knowe, that if the lorde of Clary here present hadde come into Englande, and desyred to have done armes with any man, he shulde nat have departed or he hadde ben answered at his pleasure. But I am served to the contrary. Trewe it was, sir Guye de la Tremoyle and I were armed in the felde eche agaynst other, and ranne toguyder but one course. Than it was shewed me fro the kynge that we shulde do no more, sayenge, howe he hadde done ynough. Wherfore, madame, I saye and wyll say wheresoever I be come, that I coulde fynde none to do armes with me, and that was nat in my defaute, but in the knyghtes of Fraunce. The lorde of Clary noted well his wordes, and helde his pease with great payne. Howebeit, he suffred hym, bycause he had the charge of the conveyaunce of hym. Than the countesse sayde, Sir, ye departed right honorably fro Fraunce whan ye obeyed to the kynges desyre, for ye coude do no more, sythe it was his pleasure that ye shulde nat. In commyng,

CAP. CLVII

How sir Peter Courteney came into Fraunce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle.

returnyng, and doyng as ye have done, none can laye any faute in you. All suche as shall here thereof on this syde the see or on the other shall repute in you more honour than blame; wherfore, sir, I requyre you be contente therwith. Madame, quod the knight, so I do and shall do; I shall never take thought for it. Thus they lefte that mater and fell in other talkynge. There he taryed all that daye and night. The nexte mornynge sir Peter Courtnay toke his leave of the countesse of saynt Poule, and she gave hym at his departynge a lytell chayne of golde, and to the lorde of Clary another. Thus in the mornynge they departed fro Lucenen, and toke the waye to Bouloygne, and came thyder and there laye all nyght, and the nexte daye rode towardes Margyson[1] to go to Calais.

[1] *Marquise.*

Bitwene Boloygne and Calays are but sevyn or eight leages, and fayre playne waye. Whan they came nere to Calais, there sir Peter of Courtney sayd to the lorde of Clary, Sir, we be nowe in the kyng of Englandes lande, and ye have well acquyted you in the conveyaunce of me, and of your company I thanke you. The lorde of Clary, who had displeasure in his hert, for the wordes that sir Peter had spoken at Lucenen, in the presens of the countesse of saynt Pole and other, whiche wordes he thought he wolde nat suffre to reste in that case, for he reputed them to haute and to hyghe agaynst the honoure of the chivalry of Fraunce: for he understode hym that he said howe he was come oute of Englande into Fraunce to do armes, and how there were none that wolde aunswere hym; than the lorde of Clary at their leave takynge sayde, Sir Peter, ye be nowe in the kynge of Englandes lande, and sir, I have conveyed you hyder by the commaundement of the kynge my maister and of the duke of Burgoyne; and ye remembre well this laste daye whan we were in the countesse of saynt Poules chambre, who made us good chere, ye spake there over largely, as me thynketh, to the great prejudyce and blame of the knyghtes of Fraunce. For ye sayde, howe ye came fro the kynges courte, and coude fynde none to do armes with you. By the whiche wordes maye be understande that there is no knyght in Fraunce that dare do armes or just with you thre courses with a speare. Wherfore, sir, I wyll

CAP. CLVII

Howe sir Peter Courteney came into Fraunce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle.

that ye knowe that here I offre myselfe, thoughe I be one of the moost symplest knyghtes in all Fraunce, and saye and justifye, that the realme of Fraunce is nat so voyde of knyghtes but that ye shall well fynde ynowe to do dedes of armes with you. And sir, if ye lyste ye shall fynde me redy to aunswere you, be it incontynente this night or to morowe. I saye nat this for any hatered that I have to your persone; I do it all onely to maynteyne the honour of our partie, for I wolde nat ye shulde retourne to Calais or into Englande to make your avaunt that without stroke stryken ye shulde disconfyte the knyghtes of Fraunce. Sir, answere me if it please you to my wordes. Sir Peter Courtney was soone counsayled what answere to make, and sayde, Sir of Clary, ye speke well, and I accepte your demaunde: and I wyll that to morowe in this same place ye be armed at your pleasure, and I shall be in lykewise, and than lette us rynne eche at other thre courses with a speare, and therby ye shall wynne agayne the honour of the Frenche courte, and ye shall do me a greate pleasure. Sir, quod the lorde of Clary, I promyse you I shall nat fayle to be here at the hour ye have assigned. Thus these two knightes promysed eche other to just. The lorde of Clary retourned to Marguysen, and there provyded hym of his armure, shelde, speare, and horse. He hadde anone all that he lacked, for on the fronters of Calays and Boloyne men were soone provyded. There he made his provisyon as shortely as he myght, for he wolde natte that over many shulde have knowen therof. In lyke manner sir Peter Courtney, whane he came to Calays, he forgate nat the promyse that he had made, but provyded hym of good armure and of every thyng elles. As for harnesse he had redy, suche as he had caryed with hym out of Englande into Fraunce. As at that tyme sir Johan Bernes[1] was capitayne of Calays. Sir Peter shewed hym the promise that was made bytwene hym and the lorde of Clary. Than sir Johan Bernes sayde howe he wolde accompany hym thyder, and other good felowes of Calays. The nexte daye these two knightes came to the place apoynted; the Englysshe knyght came moche better accompanyed than dyde the Frenche knyght, for the capitayne of Calays was with

[1] *Devereux.*

CAP. CLVII

Howe sir Peter Courteney came into Fraunce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle.

hym. Whan they were come togyder there was but fewe wordes bytwene theym: they knewe well ynough wherfore they were come: they were bothe well armed and horsed, and toke their sheldes. Than they toke their speares with sharpe heedes well fyled, and spurred their horses and ranne toguyder: the fyrst course they fayled, wherwith they were bothe sore displeased. At the seconde juste they mette so toguyder, that the lorde of Clary strake the Englysshe knyght throughe the targe and throughe the shulder a handfull, and therwith he felle fro his horse to the erthe. The lorde of Clary passed forthe and kepte his course, and turned and stode styll, for he sawe well howe the Englysshe knight was unhorsed, and howe that many men were about hym. He thought surely than that he was hurt, for his speare was brokenne in peces. Than he rode to them. And the Englysshemen came to the lorde of Clary, and sayd, Sir, ye be no courtesse juster. Wherfore? quod the lorde of Clary. Bycause, quod they, ye have hurt this knightes shulder; ye might more curtesly have justed. Sirs, quod he, that curtesy laye nat in me, seyng I was apparelled to juste, for the same case or worse myght have fallen to me as well as to hym. Howebeit, sir, I requyre you demaunde of hym, or elles wyll I, whyder he wyll do any more or natte. Than sir Johan Bernes sayde: Nay, naye, sir knyght, ye may departe whan ye lyste, ye have done ynough. Than the lorde of Clary departed with his company, and the Englysshemen ledde sir Peter Courtney to Calays, to be healed of his hurtes. And the lorde of Clary retourned into Fraunce, thynkynge that he hadde right well done, and that he shulde have had for that dede great laude and prayse. But I shall shewe you what fell therof.

Whan tidynges came to the Frenche kyng, and to the duke of Burgoyne, and to their counsayle, howe that the lorde of Clarye had done armes with sir Peter Courtney, in retournynge to Calais, so that the sayde sir Peter was hurte, and in paryll of dethe, the kynge, and the duke, and specially sir Guye of Tremoyle, were sore dyspleased with the lorde of Clary: and sayde, howe he had done, at the leest, as moche as to lese his landes, and to be bannysshed the

realme of Fraunce for ever, without repele. And some other, suche as wolde hym no good wyll, sayde howe he hadde done lyke a false traytoure, seynge a straunge knyght under the kynges savegarde shulde be requyred by hym to do dedes of armes, and by that meanes to be brought to the jeopardye of dethe. They sayde suche a dede ought not to be pardoned. The lorde of Clary was sente for: he came to the kynge, and to the duke of Burgoyne. There he was examyned and layde to his charge, and demaunded howe he durste be so outragious to a knyght straunger that was come to the kynges court for good love and to exalte his honoure, to do feates of armes, and departed thens with good love and joye, and [to] the entente that he shulde nat be troubled by the way in his retournyng was delyvered to hym to conduyt: and than at the departynge of bothe realmes, he to be so bolde to do armes with hym in campe or justes mortall, without lycence of his soveraygne lorde of whom he holdeth his lande. It was shewed hym the trespasse was so great that it was nat to be pardoned, but to be punysshed so highely, that all other shulde take ensample therby. The lorde of Clary, whan he herde those wordes, he was abasshed, for he thought he hadde done well, and for to have had thanke. Than he sayde: My lordes, it is of trouthe, sir Peter of Courtney was delyvered to me, to conducte and to kepe hym company tyll he came to Calais, or to the fronters therof: and of all that I hadde in charge I have well and truely acquyted myselfe, and if nede be I shall prove it by the wytnesse of hymselfe. And trewe it was, that by the waye whan we came to Lucyen to the countesse of saynt Poule, who receyved and made us good chere, there sir Peter Courtney hadde certayne wordes, as I shall shewe you. The countesse demaunded of hym and sayde: Sir Peter of Courtney, howe are ye contente with the lordes of Fraunce, and with the maner of Fraunce? He answered courtesly and sayd: Madame, the maner of Fraunce is ryght noble and goodlye; as for the lordes of Fraunce I am right well content with their chere, excepte in one thyng, and that is, with great payne and traveyle and great coste, I have issued oute of Englande to do dedes of armes, and so came to the Frenche kynges court, but there

CAP. CLVII

How sir Peter Courteney came into Fraunce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle.

CAP. CLVII

How sir Peter Courteney came into Fraunce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle.

I knew nat with whom to do armes. Thus my lordes, whan I herde hym saye so in the presence of so noble a lady as the countesse of saynte Poule, suster to the kynge of Englande, the wordes were right hevy to me to beare; howbeit, I suffred them for that tyme, bycause I had the charge of the conveyaunce of hym; I never made semblaunt therof to hym as longe as we were in company togider within the realme of Fraunce. And at our leave takynge in the marchesse of Calais, trewe it is, than I layde unto hym the sayde wordes and sayd, howe they were nat courtesly spoken, nor honorably: for the wordes sounded that the chivalry of Fraunce was so abated, that none durst do dedes of armes with him. Than I sayd if he wolde abyde therby, that I was one of the knyghtes of Fraunce, borne of the nacyon: and I sayd I wolde nat that he shulde make his avaunte in Englande, that he coude nat fynde in Fraunce, nor by the waye, with whome to do armes. Therfore I sayde I was redy, and desyred to do armes with hym, and to fulfylle his pleasure and desyre, as to rynne thre courses with a speare, the same daye or the nexte. Certaynly my lordes, I sayde these wordes for the honour of the realme of Fraunce, and the chyvalry therof. And me thought he had great joye therof, and accepted to do armes with me the nexte day, and so dyde I; and the nexte day we mette at the same place; he was acompanyed with them of the garyson of Calais, and with me there were certayne of the fronters there, knyghtes and squyers, as the lorde of Mountcarell, and sir Johan of Longvyllers. There we justed toguyder as well as we coude, and the adventure of armes fell so that at the seconde course I strake him through the shulder, so that he fell to the erthe. Than I retourned againe to knowe if he wolde do any more. Than the capitayne of Calis said it was suffycient that was done, and that I myght departe whan I lyst: and than I retourned; I beleved I had ryght well done, and well defended the honour of the realme of Fraunce, and of the knightes therin. Thus I have shewed you the very trouthe of this dede, for my well doyng of this amendes shall folowe; I reporte me and wyll abyde the jugement of my lorde the constable, and my lordes the highe marshalles of Fraunce, and besyde that to

CAP. CLVII

How sir Peter Courteney came into Fraunce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle.

the voice and discrecion of the knyght hymselfe sir Peter Curtney, at whose request I dyde these armes. And also I reporte me to all knyghtes and squyers of honour, bothe of Fraunce and of Englande, credably enfourmed of the hole mater.

Whan the lorde of Clary had shewed the mater, and sagely made his excusacions, as ye have herde, it greatlye aswaged the yre and displeasure of them that had complayned of hym. Howebeit, for all his wordes and excusacions he coude nat be delyvered, but was commytted to prisone, and there taryed a long season in great daunger of lesyng of all his landes, and to be banysshed for ever. But the lorde of Coucy, and the duke of Burbon, they labored sore for his delyveraunce, and with moche payne they made his peace, with the ayde of the countesse of saynt Poule, before whom the wordes were spoken. Than at his deliveraunce it was said to hym: Sir of Clary, ye supposed to have done ryght well; howebeit, ye dyde shamefully, whanne ye offred to do armes with sir Peter Courtney, who was under the kynges savegarde, and delivered to you to conducte to Calays by the kynges commaundement. Ye dyde a great outrage whan ye renewed the wordes, the whiche were spoken but in sport before the countesse of saynt Poule. Or ye had done it ye ought to have returned to the kyng, and have shewed hym the wordes that shulde have sowned agaynst the honour of the knyghtes of Fraunce, and than what counsayle the king had gyven you, ye ought to have folowed; and bycause ye dyde nat thus, ye have hadde this payne. Beware better another tyme, and thanke the lorde of Burbone, and the lorde of Coucy, of your delyveraunce, for they have sore labored for you, and also the lady of saynt Poule. Quod the lorde of Clary, My lordes, I thanke you all; howebeit I thought I hadde done well. Thus he departed.

CAP. CLVIII

Howe the justes of saynt Inguelbert,[1] otherwise called Sandyngfelde, were enterprised by sir Reynolde of Roy, the yonge sir Boucyquaut, and the lorde of saynt Pye.

[1] *Inguelyert* P.

THE Frenche kyng lay at the good towne of Mountpellyer in gret myrthe and sport: and at a banket that the kynge made to the ladies and damoselles of the towne, there was rehersed all this sayd mater of the lorde of Clary, and of sir Peter Courtney. True it was, I began to speke of thre valyaunt knightes, of the yonge sir Bauciquaut, sir Reynolde of Roy, and the lorde of saynt Pye. The whiche thre enterprised to do dedes of armes in the fronter besyde Calais, in the tyme of somer nexte after: abyding all knightes and squiers straungers the terme of xxx. dayes, whosoever wolde juste with them in justes of peace or of warre. And bicause thenterprice of these thre knyghtes semed to the Frenche kyng and his counsayle to be an high enterprice, there it was said to them, that they shulde putte it in writyng, bycause the kyng wolde se thartycles therof: that if they were to hygh or to outragyous, that the kyng might amende them, bycause the king nor his counsayle wolde nat susteyne any thynge that shulde be unresonable. These thre knyghtes answered and said: It is but reasone that we do thus, it shall be done. Than they toke a clerke and caused him to write as foloweth.

For the great desyre that we have to come to the knowledge of noble gentlemen, knightes and squiers, straungers, as well of the realme of Fraunce, as elswhere of farre countreys: we shall be at saynt Ingylbertes, in the marches of Calays, the twenty day of the moneth of May nexte commyng, and there contynewe thyrty dayes complete, the Frydayes onely excepte, and to delyver all maner of knyghtes and squyers, gentlemen, straungers of any maner of nacyon, whatsoever they be, that wyll come thyder for the breakynge

of fyve speares, outher sharpe or rokettes at their pleasure. And without our lodgynges shall be the sheldes of our armes, both on the sheldes of peace and of warre, and whosoever wyll just, lette hym come or sende the day before, and with a rod touche whiche shelde he please; if he touche the shelde of warre, the nexte daye he shall just with whiche of the thre he wyll. And if he touche the shelde of peace, he shall have the justes of peace and of warre. So that whosoever touche any of the sheldes, shew or cause to be shewed their name to suche as shal be there lymyted by us to receyve their names: and all suche knyghtes straungers as wyll juste, to bringe some nobleman on their partye, who shall be instructed by us what ought to be done in this case. And we requyre all knyghtes and squyers straungers, that wyll come and juste, that they thynke nor ymagyn in us that we do this for any pride, hatred, or yvell wyll, but all onely we do it to have their honorable company and acquayntaunce, the whiche with our entier hartes we desyre. Nor none of our sheldes shall be covered with yron nor steel, nor none of theirs that wyll come to just with us, without any maner of fraudes, advauntage, or male engyn, but every thynge to be ordered by them that shal be commytted by eyther parte to governe the justes. And bycause that all gentlemen, noble knyghtes and squiers, to whom this shall come to knowlege, in that it shulde be reputed ferme and stable, we have sealed this present writynge with the seales of our armes: written at Mountpellier, the twenty daye of Novembre, in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore and nyne: and signed thus: Raynolde du Roy, Boucyquaut, saynte Pye.

CAP. CLVIII

Howe the justes of saynt Inguelbert were enterprised.

Of the high courage and enterprise of these thre knyghtes the French kynge was ryght joyefull therof; and or the mater went forwarde, every thynge was well examyned and sene, that no faulte shulde be therin founde. Some of the kinges counsayle thought it was nat reasonable that these armes shulde be doone so nere to Calays, For the Englysshemen might take it for a presumpcyon, the whiche wolde be eschewed, bycause of the treuce that is taken bytwene Englande and Fraunce, to endure for thre yere; wherfore, they

CAP. CLVIII

Howe the justes of saynt Inguelbert were enterprised.

sayde, there ought nothynge to be wrytten nor doone, that shulde be occasyon of any dyscensyon to be had bytwene the realmes. The kynges counsayle rested on this mater a hole day, and wyste nat what to do: they wolde fayne have broken it. Suche as were sage, sayde, it were nat good alwayes to consente to the purpose of yonge people, for oftentymes therby maye growe incydentes, rather yvell thanne good. Howebeit, the kynge, who was yonge, inclyned greatly to these knyghtes, and sayd: Lette them do their enterprise, they are yonge and coragyous, they have promysed and sworne to do it before the ladyes of Mountpellyer; we wyll that the mater go forwarde; let them pursewe their enterprise. Whanne every man sawe that it was the kynges pleasure, there were none durste say agaynst it, wherfore the knyghtes were ryght joyfull. And so it was concluded and agreed that the matter shulde go forwarde as the knightes had written and sealed. Than the kynge sent for the thre knyghtes into his chambre aparte, and said to them: Syrs, in all your doynge regarde wysely the honour of us and of our realme, and to mayntayne your astate spare nothynge, for we shall nat fayle you for the expence of ten thousande frankes. The thre knyghtes kneled downe before the kynge and thanked his grace.

Thus the Frenche kynge toke his sporte in the good towne of Mountpellyer a fyftene dayes, moste parte with ladyes and damosels. And the kynge and his counsayle had parfytely regarded the busynesse and necessyties of the towne, for princypally he was come thyder for the same cause. And by the advyse of his counsayle every thynge was well refourmed and brought to good astate, and their oppressyons doone awaye, wherby the good people had been sore traveyled. Than the kynge toke his leave of the ladyes and damoselles, and in a mornynge he departed and wente to dyner to Alipyam,[1] and at nyght lay at Ubere,[2] the nexte day to Besyers, where he was goodly receyved; for the good men of the towne greatly desyred to se hym, and so dyd all the countreys, bothe of Pesenas, of Cabestan, and of Narbone: for they were redy to make complayntes to the kynge of the duke of Berreys offycer, called Betisache, who had pylled the countreys. This Betysach, fro that

[1] *Loupian.*
[2] *Saint Thibéry.*

tyme the kynge came fro Avignon, he rode alwayes in his company, but no man shewed hym as they thought, for they myght have gyven hym warnynge if they had lyste: but they drave hym forthe with fayre wordes, and suche promysed hym nothynge but honoure, as thought the contrary. The kynge entred into Besyers bytwene thre and foure at afternoone; he was met with processyon without the towne with all the clergy and burgesses, and ladyes and damoselles. As the kynge came rydynge, they were a bothe sydes of the waye, and dyd their reverence. So he came to the cathedrall churche and there alyghted at the dore, where there was an auter made, rychely garnysshed with jewelles and relykes. There the kynge kneled downe and dyd his prayers, and than entred into the churche with the bysshoppe of Besyers, and his uncle the duke of Burbone, and other lordes folowed after. Thanne the kynge wente to his lodgynge to the Palyce, whiche was nat farre thence, and his brother the duke of Thourayne, and the duke of Burbone with him: and the other lordes were lodged abrode in the towne, where as they were well and easely lodged, for Besyers is a good cytie.

CAP. CLVIII

Howe the justes of saynt Inguelbert were enterprised.

CAP. CLIX

Of the complayntes made to the kyng by the people of Languedoc, in the towne of Besyers, agaynst Betysach, treasourer to the duke of Berrey, of the great extorsyons that he had made; and of the confession that he made, and of the cruell dethe that he had in the sayde towne.

THRE dayes the kynge was at Besyers in greate joye and revell amonge ladyes and damosels, and all that tyme Betysache was nothynge spoken unto: but the enquisitours who wer ordeyned by the kynge, dyd secretly enquyre of his dedes, and they founde by enquest dyvers cases horryble, nat to be pardoned. The fourth day that the kynge had ben there, this Betysache was called before

CAP. CLIX

Of the complayntes made to the kyng by the people of Languedoc.

the kynges counsayle in a chambre, and there straytely examyned, and it was sayd to hym: Betysache, aunswer wysely to these writynges that ye se here. There was shewed hym a greate nombre of bylles of complayntes that were put up to the kynge agaynst hym, makyng mensyon of the extorcyons that he had done to the people. All these bylles of complayntes were redde before hym one after another: to some he aunswered wysely, makynge his excuse, and to some he playnly denyed them, and sayde: I knowe nothynge of those maters: laye them to the seneschalles of Beaucayr, and of Carcassone, and to the chauncellour of Berrey; it partayneth to theym to aunswere to those matters. Howebeit, fynally it was shewed him that he muste kepe prysone for a tyme, tyll the mater were better examyned. He obeyed bycause he myght nat chuse. As sone as he was in prison the inquysitours wente to his lodgynge, and toke into their handes all suche writynges and acomptes as they founde there, whiche partayned to such maters as he had intermedled withall before, and they avewed them at leysure, and founde in theym the rekenynges of great sommes of money, suche as had ben raysed and levyed of the people. Than he was demaunded where all that money was become, and whether the sommes were trewe or nat. He aunswered and sayde, As for the sommes are trewe, and the money delyvered to the duke of Berrey, and so paste throughe his handes and his treasourers, wherof I have good quyttaunces in my lodgynges in suche a place; the whiche quitaunces were sente for before the counsayle, and there they were redde, and they agreed with the sommes of his receyte. Than the counsayle and the enquysytours were apeased, and Betysache sente agayne to a curtesse prysone. Than the counsayle communed togyther on that matter, and sayd: It semeth that Betysache is clere of suche causes as are layde to his charge, for the money that hathe been reysed, the duke of Berrey hathe had it, howesoever it hath ben spente.

All thinges consydred, Betysache excusacyons were lawfull, for the duke of Berrey was the moste covetouse man in all the worlde; so he myght gette good, he cared nat where nor howe he hadde it, and whan he had it he wolde bestowe it

but symply, as many lordes do and have doone in tymes paste. Thus the kynges counsayle sawe no faute in Betysache, wherby he shulde lese his lyfe. Some were of that opynyon, and some contrary, and said: Betysach hath done so many cruell dedes, and hathe so sore impoverysshed the people for to acomplysshe the desyre of his lorde the duke of Berrey, that the blode of the poore people cryeth out, and sayeth, howe he hathe deserved dethe. For he that is a manne borne of these partyes, and counsayler with his maister, and seynge the poverty of the people, he ought in good maner to have shewed the trouth to the duke his mayster; and if the duke wolde nat have herde hym, than he shulde have come to the kynge, and to his counsayle, and have shewed theym the povertie of the people, and howe the duke of Berrey had daulte with them; than he had ben well excused. So Betysache was sente for agayne to the counsayle, and straytely examyned where the money that hadde been gathered was become, for they founde the somme of thyrty hundred thousande frankes receyved. He answered therto and sayd: My lordes, it were herde for me to tell where my lorde the duke of Berrey hathe bestowed it: moche he hath layde out on byldynges and reparacyons of castels and houses; also he hath bought certayne landes in the countye of Boloygne, and in the countye of Estampes; also he hathe spente moche in byenge of precyous stones and jewelles, the whiche ye knowe well he hathe alwayes been desyrous to bye; also he is well stuffed to mayntayne the astate that he hathe alwayes kepte; also he hath gyven suche gyftes and rewardes to Thybaulte and Morynot, and to his servauntes aboute him, in suche wyse that they be ryche men. Well, Betysache, quod they of the counsayle, and ye have had for your parte to your synguler profyte a hundred thousande frankes. My lordes, quod he, that I have hadde was by the consente of my lorde the duke of Berrey, for he wolde that his servauntes shulde become ryche. Than the counsayle sayde all with one voyce, A, Betysach, that worde is folysshly spoken: that rychesse is nat good nor resonable that is yvell gotten; ye shall retourne agayne into prison, and we shall take further advyse on that ye have sayd and spoken: ye must abyde the pleasure of the kynge, to whome

CAP. CLIX

Of the comsplayntes made to the kyng by the people of Languedoc.

CAP. CLIX
Of the complayntes made to the kyng by the people of Languedoc.

we shall shewe all your excusacions. My lordes, quod he, all shall be as God wyll. Than he was agayne sette in prisone, and there remayned four dayes or he was sente for agayne.

Whan these tydynges were spredde abrode in the countrey, that Betysach was in prison, and that inquyre was made of his dedes, and that it was publysshed that whosoever had any matter to hym shulde come forthe; therby moche people came to Besyers, and put up supplycacions to the kynge of the cruell dedes of Betysach. Some complayned of hym that he hadde dysheryted them without cause or reason. And other complayned of hym that he hadde by force taken their wyves and doughters. Whan the kynges counsayle sawe so many gret causes laide to Betysache, they were wery therof. And besyde all these complayntes he was sore behated with the people, and all this came to hym by reason to fyll the duke of Berreys purse; he dyd ever what he wolde have hym to do. The kynges counsayle wyste nat what to do, for than there was come thyder two knightes fro the duke of Berrey, the lorde of Nantouelet[1] and syr Peter Mespyn, who had brought letters to the kynge fro the duke: and they in the dukes behalfe avowed all that ever Betysach had doone before, and the duke requyred the kynge and his counsayle to have agayne his man and treasourer. The kynge had greate hatred to Betysach, bycause of the yvell name and fame that ranne upon hym. The kynge, and the duke of Thourayne his brother, inclyned greatly to have had hym hanged, sayenge howe he hadde well deserved it. But the kynges counsayle durste nat judge hym for dought of the duke of Berrey. They sayde to the kynge: Syr, if the duke of Berrey avowe all his dedes whatsoever they be, we canne nat se by no waye of reason that he hath deserved dethe: for the seasone that he medled in these countreys by cessynge of tayles, subsydyes, and aydes, and receyvynge of them, he dyd it at the instaunce of the duke of Berrey, who had at that tyme there puyssaunce royall, as well as ye have nowe. But sir, acordynge to the desertes of his dedes ye maye sease into your handes all his movables and herytages, and leave hym in the same case as the duke of Berrey founde hym fyrste; and with his goodes make restytucion to suche

[1] *Trémoille.*

poore men as be undone by hym. What shulde I make longe processe. Betysache was at the poynte of his delyveraunce with the losse of his goodes, tyll at the laste other tydynges came in place. I shall shewe you what.

CAP. CLIX
Of the complayntes made to the kyng by the people of Languedoc.

I knewe nat, nor I coulde nat knowe, but by knowledgyng of himselfe, if he were indede so yvell as he judged himselfe; he sayd he was an herytyke and had done many horryble dedes. As it was shewed me there came some to hym on a nyght beynge in prisone to put hym in feare, whether they were his frendes or fooes I knowe nat; they sayde: Betysach, thou art in a harde case: the French kyng, his brother, and the duke of Burbone, dothe hate you mortally; there be so many complayntes put up agaynste you fro dyvers places, of suche oppressyons as ye have doone whan ye had rule in Languedoc, so that they all judge you to be hanged, for ye canne nat scape with the losse of your goodes, the whiche hath been offred to the kynge. But the kynge who hateth you mortally, hath aunswered howe that all your goodes are his, and your body also, the whiche he sayeth he wyll nat kepe longe; I shew you this for good wyll, for tomorowe it is thought ye shall be delyvered to be judged to dye. Those wordes greatly afrayed Betysach, and sayd to them: Ah, saynt Mary, is there no remedy. Yes, quod they; tomorowe, say how ye wolde speke with the kinges counsayle, and than outher they wyll come to you, or sende for you to them; and whan ye be in their presence, than say thus: My lordes, I knowledge myselfe I have greatly displeased God, and for the displeasure he hath to me, this false slaunder is reysed on me. Than they wyll demaunde of you wherin. Than ye shall aunswere, howe ye have a longe season arred in your faythe, and that ye be an herytyke, and kepe styll that opinyon. Whan the bysshop of Besyers shall here that, he wyll than chalenge to have you in his kepynge; than ye shall be delyvered to hym, for suche causes ought to be declared by the lawe of the churche: thanne ye shall be sente to Avignon, there wyll be none against the duke of Berrey, the Pope wyll nat displease hym; and by this meanes ye may be delyvered, and nother lese body nor goodes. But if ye byde styll in the case that ye be in, ye shall nat skape paste tomorowe, but that ye shall be hanged, for the kynge

CAP. CLIX

Of the complayntes made to the kyng by the people of Languedoc.

hateth you bycause of the slaunder of the people. Betysache, who trusted on that false infourmacyon, for he that is in parell of dethe knoweth nat well what to do, wherfore he aunswered and sayde: Ye be my frende, and counsayle me truely, wherof God thanke you, and I trust the tyme shall come that I shall thanke you. The next mornynge he called the gayler, and sayde: Frende, I requyre you cause suche menne and suche to come to speke with me; and named suche as were the enquysitours over him. The gayler shewed theym howe Betysache wolde speke with them. They came to hym and demaunded what he wolde. He aunswered and sayd: Sirs, I have serched my conscience; I knowledge myselfe I have hyghly displeased God, for longe tyme I have arred agaynst the fayth; I never beleved of the Trinyte, nor that the sonne of God wolde come so lowe as to come fro Heven to come into this worlde to take humayn kynde of a woman, for I beleve and saye, that whan we dye there is nothynge of the sowle. Ah, sainte Mary, quod they: Betysach, ye are greatly against Holy Churche, your wordes demaundeth for a fyre; advyse you better. I canne nat tell, quod Betysache, whether my wordes demaundeth fyre or water, but I have holden this opinyon sythe I have had knowledge, and shall holde it tyll I dye. The enquysitours wolde here no more of hym at that tyme, and were gladde to fynde suche a mater against hym therby to put him to deth. Than they commaunded the gailer to kepe him straytely, and to suffre no man to speke with hym, to the entente that he shulde nat be tourned fro that opynyon. Thanne they wente to the kynges counsayle and shewed them all the mater. Than they wente to the kynge and shewed hym all the maner of Betysache, as ye have herde, wherof the kynge had great marveyle, and sayd: We wyll that he be put to dethe: it is an yvell man, he is a false herytyke and a thefe; we wyll he be brynte and hanged, than he shall have as he hath deserved: he shall nat be excused for all myne uncle of Berrey. Anon these tydynges were spredde abrode in the cytie of Besyers, howe Betysache hadde of his owne voluntary wyll, without any constraynt, confessed howe he was an herytyke, and had used longe the synne of bowgery, and howe the kynge had sayde howe he

shulde be brynte and hanged, wherof moche people were right joyouse, for he was sore hated. The two knyghtes that were come thyder fro the duke of Berrey were greatly abasshed, and wyst nat what to suppose. Than syr Peter Mesquyn sayde to the lorde of Nantouelet: Syr, I feare me Betysache is betrayed; peradventure some persone hath ben with hym secretly in the prisone, and hathe borne hym in hande that if he holde that horryble erroure, that the Churche than shall chalenge hym, and so be sente to Avignon to the Pope, and therby be delyvered. Ah, fole that he is, he is dysceyved, for the kyng sayeth he wyll have hym bothe brente and hanged; lette us go to the prisone to hym and reforme hym, and bringe hym to another state, for he is farre out of the waye and yvell counsayled. They wente strayte to the prisone, and desyred the gayler that they might speke with Betysache. The gayler excused hymselfe and sayde: Syrs, ye muste pardone me, for I am straytely charged to suffer no manne to speke with hym: and also here be four sargeauntes of armes sente by the kynge to kepe hym; and we dare nat breke the kinges commaundement. Than the two knyghtes sawe well howe they labored in vayne, and howe there was no remedy by all lykelyhode, but that Betysache shulde dye. Than they retourned to their lodgynge and rekened and payed, and toke their horses and retourned to their lorde the duke of Berrey, and shewed hym all the case.

CAP. CLIX
Of the complayntes made to the kyng by the people of Languedoc.

The conclusion of Betysach was suche, that the nexte daye aboute tenne of the clocke he was taken out of prysone, and brought to the bysshoppes palays. And there were redy the judges and offycers spyrituall; and the bayly of Besyers brought forthe the prisoner, and sayde: Beholde syrs, here is Betisache, whome I delyver to you for an herytyke, and a synner in bowgery; and if he had nat ben a clerke, he had been judged or this acordynge to his desertes. Than the offycyall demaunded of Betysach if it were with hym acordynge as he was acused, and to confesse the trouth there openly before all the people. And Betysache, who thought to have said well, and to have scaped by reason of his confessyon, he aunswered and sayde, that all was trewe. He was demaunded this thre tymes, and at every tyme he

CAP. CLIX

Of the complayntes made to the kyng by the people of Languedoc.

confessed it to be trewe before all the people. Thus ye maye knowe whether he was dysceyved or nat, for if he had made no suche confessyon he had been delyvered: for the duke of Berrey had fully avowed all his dedes, the whiche he had doone at his commaundemente in the countrey of Languedoc. But it was to be supposed that fortune played her tourne with hym, for whanne he thought to have been moste assuredest on the heyght of fortunes whele, he was tourned up so downe fro her whele, as she hathe doone a hundred thousande mo sythe the worlde began. Than Betysach was delyvered agayne by the spirytuall judge to the bayly of Besyers, who under the kinge ruled the temperalte, the whiche Betysache without delaye was brought to a place before the palays. He was so hasted forwarde that he had no leysure to aunswere nor to saye nay. For whan he sawe a fyre redy prepared in the place, and sawe that he was in the handes of the hangman, he was sore abasshed, and sawe well than that he was dysceyved and betrayed. Than he cryed out aloude, requirynge to be herde; but than was no hede taken to his sayenge, but the hangeman sayde: It is ordeyned that ye shall dye, for your yvell warkes hathe broughte you to an yvell ende. He was hasted forwarde to his dethe, and the fyre made redy: there was also reysed a payre of galowes, and therto tyed a chayne of yron, and at the ende therof a coler of yron, the whiche was put aboute his necke, and than the chaine drawen up a hye, and tyed rounde aboute the galowes. Than he cryed and sayde, Duke of Berrey, they cause me to dye without reason; they do me wronge. As sone as he was tyed to the galows, there was sette rounde aboute drye segge, rede, and fagottes, and fyre put therto, and incontynente the faggotes were afyre. Thus Betysache was hanged and brente, and the Frenche kyng out of his chaumbre myght well se hym if he wolde. To this poore ende came Betysache, and so the people were revenged of hym. And for to saye the trouthe, he had doone many extorcions and domages to the people whyle he had the governynge of the countrey of Languedoc.

CAP. CLX

Howe the Frenche kynge beynge at Tholouse sente for the erle of Foiz, who came thyder and dyd homage to the kynge for the countie of Foiz.

AFTER this cruell justyce the French kyng taryed nat longe after at Besiers, but departed and toke the way to Carcassone; and always sithe his departure fro Avygnon, his marshall, sir Loys of Xancere, rode in his company. The kynge rode so longe by his journeys, that he vysited the countreys and kepte nat the right hyghe wayes: he was at Cabestan, at Narbone, at Lymous, at Mounte Royall, and at Fougaux, and than he retourned to Carcassone, and there taryed foure dayes. Than he rode and passed Vyle Franca, Avygnollet, and Mongiscarte, and so came to Tholouse; and the burgesses there, who greatly desyred to se the kynge, receyved hym joyfully, and mette the kyng without the towne, all in a lyvery, and so with greate solempnyte he was brought to the castell of Thoulouse. They of the cytie gave the kinge many fayre presentes, wherwith the kynge was greatly rejoysed. Whan the kynge had been there thre dayes, than he was counsayled to sende for the erle of Foiz, who was come out of Byerne into the countie of Foiz, and was in the towne of Masiers, four leages fro Thoulouse, for he knew of the kinges state and ordynaunce. The marshall of Fraunce and the lorde de la Ryver were apoynted to go for the erle of Foize. They departed on a Wednysday, and laye at a cytie in Thoulosyn, called Jordayn, and the next day they came to Masyers.[1] The erle of Foiz, who knewe well of their comynge, receyved theym nobly for the love of the kynge, and also he knewe the lordes well, he had sene them before. Syr Loys of Xancere had the wordes, and said, Syr, my lorde of Foiz, the kynge our soveraygne lorde hath sente us to you, commaundyng you to come to se hym at Thoulouse, or els he wyll traveyle so farre that he wyll come and se you in your owne countrey, for he greatly desyreth to se

[1] *Nasyers* P.

CAP. CLX
Howe the Frenche kynge sente for the erle of Foiz.

you. The erle of Foyze aunswered and sayd, Syr Loys, I wolde nat the kynge had so great traveyle to me; it is more mete I have it for hym; wherfore, if it please you, ye shall shewe hym that I shall be at Tholouse within foure dayes. That is well sayde, syr, quod they; we shall returne and shewe him these tydynges fro you. So be it, quod he; howebeit, ye shall abyde here all this daye and refresshe yourselfes, and to morowe ye shall departe. They obeyed and taryed that daye and the nyght at their pleasure. And the erle devysed with theym sagely and craftely, for he was a man, by reason of his fayre langage, to drawe out by one meanes or other the secretes of ons herte. The nexte daye they toke leave eche of other, and rode so long that the same day they came to Tholouse, and founde the kinge playenge at chesse with his uncle the duke of Burbone. Than the kynge demaunded of them alowde and sayde, Syrs, howe saye you, wyll the erle come or no. Yes, sir, quod the lorde de la Ryver, he hath get affection to se your grace; he wyll be here with you within these foure dayes. Well, quod the kynge, and we wyll gladly se hym. The two knightes departed fro the kynge, and lefte hym playeng and went to their supper and to reste them, for they had rydden that daye a great journey. The erle of Foiz, who was at Masyers, remembred well the voyage that he had to do. He made hym redy, and sente before to Tholous for his provisyon acordingly: he had sent into Bierne for knightes and squiers, for mo than two hundred, to serve and to accompany hym that voiage.

The daye that the erle of Foiz had apoynted, he entred into the cytie of Tholous with mo than syxe hundred horses, and well acompanyed with knyghtes and squyers. There was with hym Bonnuquell[1] and sir Johan his brother, sir Roger of Spaygne his cosyn, the lorde of Courase, the lorde of Valentyne, the lorde of Quare,[2] the lorde of Buruge,[3] sir Espaygne du Lyon, the lorde of Roquepayre,[4] the lorde of Lane, the lorde of Besache, the lorde of Perle, sir Peter of Cabestayne, sir Monaunt of Novalles, sir Richarde de la Mette, sir Arnolde of saynt Basyll, and dyvers other; sir Peter of Byerne and sir Arnolde his two bretherne, and his two bastarde sonnes, sir Jobbayne[5] and sir Gracyen of Foiz.

[1] *Bruniquel.*
[2] *Queo.*
[3] *Barèges.*
[4] *Caupenne.*
[5] *Yvan.*

CAP. CLX

Howe the Frenche kynge sente for the erle of Foiz.

The entencion of the erle was to enherite those two his sonnes into the moost parte of all the lande of Bierne, of the whiche lande he myght do therwith at his pleasure, for he helde it franke and free, holdynge of no man but of Godde. Thus the erle toke his lodgynge at the Freers Preachers; there he kept his house, and his men lay as nere there about as myght be. The burgesses of Tholous made him great chere, for they loved him well, for alwayes he had been their good neyghbour, curtesse and tretable, for he never suffred any of his company to do them any displeasure nor vyolence, wherfore they loved hym moche the better. They gave him many fayre presentes of wyne and other thynges, so that he was well contente. He entred into Tholous whan it was nere nyght. The nexte daye, about ten of the clocke, he toke his horse, and suche other of his company as pleased hym, mo than two hundred knyghtes and squyers, men of honour. And in that estate he rode along through the stretes to the castell where the kynge was. Than he alyghted in the fyrst court entryng into the castell. Than the erle mounted up the greces into the great hall. The Frenche kyng was come out of his chambre into the hall, and there taryed for the erle, and had great desyre to se hym, for his great valure and renome that ran on hym. Therle of Foiz, who was a goodly prince and of a formall stature, beare heeded entred into the hall. And whan he sawe the kynge and other lordes of Fraunce, the kynges brother and his uncle, he made his reverence to the kyng and to none other, and kneled downe on his one knee; than he arose and passed forthe, and at the thirde tyme he kneled nere to the kynge. The kyng toke hym by the hande and enbrased him, and toke hym up and sayde: Erle of Foiz, my fayre cosyn, ye be right welcome; your commyng greatlye rejoyceth us. Sir, quod the erle, I thanke your grace that it please you to say so. There the kynge and the erle talked toguyder, the whiche wordes I herde nat all. Thane the kynge went to dyner. At the kynges table at the upper ende sate tharchebysshop of Tholous, than the kynge and his uncle the duke of Burbone, than nexte the erle of Foiz, than sir John of Burbone erle of Marche and of Vandone.[1] At that table sate no mo. At the seconde table satte sir Johan de la

[1] *Vendôme.*

CAP. CLX
Howe the Frenche kynge sente for the erle of Foiz.

Brethe erle of Harcourte, sir Philyppe of Bare, and foure knightes of the erle of Foiz. And at another table there sate the marshall sir Loyes of Sanxere, sir Roger of Spayne, and eyght other knightes of the erles. This was a great dyner and well stuffed of all thynges; and after dyner and grace sayd, they toke other pastymes in a great chambre, and heryng of instrumentes, wherin the erle of Foiz greatly delyted. Thane wyne and spyces was brought. The erle of Harecourt served the kynge of his spyce plate, and sir Gerrarde de la Pyer served the duke of Burbone, and sir Monnaunt of Nouvalles served the erle of Foiz. Thus about four of the clocke the erle tooke leave of the kyng and of the other lordes. He issued out of the hall, and in the courte were his horses redy and his men: the erle mounted, and all suche as accompanyed hym, and so retourned to his lodgynge, and was well contente with the chere that hadde ben made to hym and his, and praysed it moche to his knightes.

Thus bytwene the Frenche kynge and the erle Gascoyne of Foize beynge at Tholous, there was dyvers treaties and apoyntmentes of love, and the marshall of Fraunce and the lorde de la Ryver dyde their payne to helpe it forwarde. The erle of Foiz made a dyner to the duke of Thourayne and to the duke of Burbone, to therle de la Marche, and to other great lordes of Fraunce. This dyner was great and sumptuous, and syttyng at the tables mo than ii. hundred knightes; and or the dyner was fullye ended, the Frenche kyng, who had dyned in the castell, and with hym sir Charles de la Brethe and sir Philyppe of Bare, and his two cosyn germayns. Than the kyng sayde, Go we thyder; and so he dyde but with xii. in his company. The erle of Foiz was greatlye rejoysed in that it pleased the kyng to come to his lodgyng, and so was all the company. There was sporte after dyner of wrestlyng and castynge the barre, the stone, and the darte, bytwene the Frenchemen and the Gascoyns: thus they passed the tyme tyll it was nere hande nyght; than the kynge and the other lordes retourned. The erle of Foiz gave the same daye to the kynges knightes and squyers, and to the duke of Thourayne and to the duke of Burbone, mo than threscore coursers, palfrayes and mulettes,

CAP. CLX

Howe the Frenche kynge sente for the erle of Foiz.

all with whyte sadels redy drest to apoynt. Also he gave to the kynges mynstrelles and other two hundred crownes of golde, and to the heraudes and offycers of armes other two hundred crownes; so that every man praysed the larges of the erle of Foiz. The fourthe daye after, the erle came to the kynges palais, well acompanyed with lordes and knyghtes of Byerne and of Foiz, to se the kynge and to do as he was requyred; that is to saye, to do his homage for the countie of Foiz, with the appendauntes, reservyng the lande of Bierne. Before that secretely there had been great treaties bytwene the kynge and the erle of Foiz, by meanes of the lorde de la Ryver and sir Johan Mercier, and the bysshoppe of Noyon, who was newly come thyder fro Avygnon. It was sayd, that the erle desyred of the kyng that his sonne Jobbayne[1] of Foiz myght after the erles discease enheryte the countie of Foiz; by that, the erle, whansoever he dyed, shulde leave to the kyng a hundred thousande frankes in money; and sir Gasyon his brother to have the lande of Ayre in Bierne with the cytie and the Mounte of Marcen, and all other landes that the erle of Foiz hadde bought in Bierne shulde retourne to the herytaunce of the vycount of Castyllon.[2] These assygnementes were in debate and in dyfference bytwene the erle and the barones and knightes of his countrey. Some sayde he coude nat do thus with[out] a general consent of all Byerne and Foize. And bycause that the meane homage of the countie of Foize was dewe to the Frenche kyng, therfore the kyng sayde to the erle and to the barons of Foiz: Sirs, I holde in my handes the homage of the lande of Foiz; and if it be so in our dayes that the lande of Foiz be vacant by the dethe of our cosyn the erle of Foiz, than we shall so determyne and apoynt, by the advise of good counsayle, that Jobbayns of Foiz, and all other men of the countie of Foiz, shall holde them content. Those wordes well contented therle of Foiz, and the other lordes and knyghtes of Foiz that were there present. These ordynaunces written and sealed, the erle toke his leave of the kynge and of all other great lordes; but that daye he dyned with the kyng and than went to his lodgyng. The nexte day he departed fro Tholous, and lefte his furriers behynde hym to paye for every thyng. The erle passed the ryver of

[1] *Yvain.*

[2] *et messire Gratien devoit tenir... toutes les terres acquises que le conte tenoit; et la terre de Berne devoit retourner à l'iretier, le conte de Chastelbon.*

CAP. CLX
Howe the Frenche kynge sente for the erle of Foiz.

Gyronde by the bridge of Tholous, and retourned into his countrey by the mount of Marsen, and so to Ortayes. Than he gave leave to every man to departe, savyng his ordynarye. It was shewed me, and I beleve it well, that the commynge of the Frenche kyng into Languedocke, into Tholous, and into those marchesse, cost the erle of Foize more than threscore thousande frankes. The erle was so lyberall, that whatsoever it cost hym he payde it wyllyngly.

CAP. CLXI

Of the feate and covenaunt that was don bytwene the kyng and the duke of Thourayn his brother, whiche of them shulde sonest come to Parys fro Mountpellyer, whiche is a hundred and fyftie leages asondre, eche of them but with one knyght.

THE Frenche kynge being at Tholous, he ordred all his businesse, and removed and renewed seneschales and officers, and reformed the countrey into good estate, so that every man was well contented. And on a day the kyng, present his brother, his uncle of Burbone, and the lordes of Fraunce and Gascoyne, to thentent to have a perpetuall memorie, gave to his cosyn germayne, sir Charles de la Brethe, for the augmentacion of his honour, two quarters of armes of Fraunce, with floure delyces: for afore the lordes de la Brethe bare alwayes in their armes a felde of goules playne without any other thyng; nowe they be quartred with the armes of Fraunce, whiche thyng the lorde de la Brethe toke for a great gyfte. Whiche lorde made the same daye a great dyner, whiche cost hym more than a thousande frankes; and he gave to heraudes and mynstrels ii. hundred frankes. Anone after, it was ordayned that the kyng shulde departe fro Thoulous to retourne into Fraunce: every man made hym redy and toke leave of the kynge, the bysshop of Tholous, the seneschall, and the burgesses, and lordes and damoselles of the towne. The kynge departed and rode that nyght to the newe castell

of Alroy,[1] and so forwarde every daye, so that he came to Mountpellyer, where he was joyfully receyved, and there taryed thre dayes, for the ladyes and damosels there pleased hym moche. Than he had gret desyre to returne to Paris to se the quene. On a daye as he communed in sporte with his brother of Thourayne, he sayde, Fayre brother, I wolde that you and I were at Paris, and all our estate here styll as it is, for I have great desyre to se the quene and your fayre suster of Thourayne. Than the duke sayd, Sir, we can nat be there with wysshing; it is a farre journey hens. That is true, quod the kyng; yet I thynke I might be soone there, and I wolde. Ye, quod the duke, with helpe of good horses; for so coude I be, but my horse must beare me. Well, quod the kyng, laye a wager you and I who shall be there sonest. I am content, quod the duke; for he was ever redy to wyn money of the kyng. The wager was layde bitwene the kynge and the duke, that whosoever of them twayne came sonest to Paris shulde wyn fyve thousande frankes of other, and to departe the nexte day all at one hour, and eche of them to take but one knight or servaunt with them. There was no man that durst breke their wager. The nexte day they departed as it was ordayned: the lorde of Garanciers rode with the kyng, and the lorde of Viesvyll was with the duke of Thourayn. Thus these four rode night and day, lyke yong lusty galantes; they chaunged many horses; thus they rode in post. The duke of Burbone retourned by Puy in Auvergne, and rode to se his grauntfather by the way, therle Dolphyn of Avergne, and the countesse and their chyldren, of whom there were to the nombre of eight, what sonnes what doughters, all bretherne and susters to the duches of Burbone his wyfe: but that was by reason of two maryages. Thus the Frenche kyng and his brother the duke of Thourayne rode in great hast, eche of them to wyn the wager. Consyder well the great payne of these two great and riche lordes: youthe and lybertie of corage made them to do that enterprice: their estates abode behynde. The Frenche kynge made it foure dayes and a halfe or he came to Paris, and the duke of Thourayne no more but four dayes and a quarter of a day, they folowed eche other so nere. The duke wan the wager,

CAP. CLXI

Of the feate and covenaunt that was don bytwene the kyng and the duke of Thourayn.

[1] *Castelnaudary.*

CAP. CLXI
Of the feate and covenaunt that was don bytwene the kyng and the duke of Thourayn.

by reason that the Frenche kynge rested himself about viii. of the clocke at Trois in Champayne, and the duke toke a barge in the ryver of Seyne, and went alonge the ryver to Melyn: and there toke his horse and rode so tyll he came to Paris, and so wente to saynt Poule to the quene and to his wyfe, and demaunded tidinges of the kyng, for he wyst nat wheder he were come or nat. And whan he knewe that the king was nat come he was joyfull, and said to the quene: Madame, ye shall shortly here tidynges of the kyng. He sayd trouthe, for the kyng came soone after. Whan the duke of Thourayn herde that the kyng was come, he went and met hym, and sayd, Sir, I have won my wager; let me be payd. It is reason, quod the kyng, and so ye shall. There they shewed before the ladies all their jorney, and how that in four dayes and a halfe they were come fro Mountpellier to Paris, whiche was a C.l. leages asondre. The ladyes tourned all the mater to sporte and laughing, but they well juged that they had endured moche payne: and juged that youthe and corage of herte caused them to do it. And the duke of Thourayn was truely payd for his wager.

CAP. CLXII

Of the dethe of pope Urbayne of Rome, called the Antepape; and howe pope Clement wrote to the Frenche kyng and to his uncles, and to the universite; and of the election of pope Boniface by the cardinalles of Rome.

ABOUT the sayd season dyed at Rhome pope Urbane the VI.: the Romayns were sore displeased with his dethe, for he was well beloved. He was buryed in the churche of saynt Peter, and after his obsequy done well and reverently. Than the cardynalles went into the conclave to chuse a newe Pope, and so they dyde, or that pope Clement knewe therof in Avynon, for it was ten dayes past or they knewe it. And assone as pope Clement and his cardynalles knewe therof, they assembled togyder at the

CAP. CLXII
Of the dethe of pope Urbayne of Rome.

Popes palays, and had great communycacion toguyder, and were in great hope that the busynesse of the churche shulde leve and be concluded, and to come to a full unyon, for the errour had longe endured. They thought that the cardynals at Rome shulde nat agre so soone to entre into conclave, but rather to submitte themselfe to pope Clement at Avignon. They sent also worde to the Frenche kyng of the dethe of Urban, called the ante-pape, and desyred hym, the soner to come to their purpose, that he wolde write to his cosyns the kynge of Almayne and the kynge of Hungry,[1] to therle of Vertues, and to the duke of Austrych, who had ever holden with pope Urbane, that they shulde nowe cease, and helpe to make rest and peace in the churche: and to shewe them by his letters that in our faythe there ought to be no varyacion: for as there is but one God in hevyn, so ther ought to be but one God in erthe. The same season the duke of Burgoyne was with the kyng at Paris, to whom pope Clement and the cardynals wrote in lyke maner. Than the kyng shewed his uncle these newes, and was right joyfull, and saide: Fayre uncle, we have had gret desyre to go with great puissaunce to Rome to distroy thenfidels; but as nowe our journey is well shorted, for Urbane the antepape is deed, as Clement hath written to us: and he thynketh that the cardynals wyll nat entre into conclave to chuse any newe Pope, but rather to come to Avignon and to submyt themselfes under pope Clement; and we are desyred by hym and by the cardynals at Avignon, for the more suretie, to write pleasaunt letters to our cosins the kyng of Almayne and to his brother the kyng of Hungry, and to the erle Vertues and to the duke of Austriche. What counsayle wyll ye gyve me to do? The duke of Burgoyne sayd, Sir, trewe it is pope Urbane is deed, but as yet we knowe nothynge of the state of the cardynals at Rome, nor of the Romayns, nor whether they wyll kepe their olde opinyon or nat. I feare it wyll be harde for them to leave it, for the Romayns are maysters over the cardynalles: by force they made them to chuse the archebysshoppe of Bare, and made hym Pope, and so maynteyned hym to thende; and so if nowe by perforce they cause the cardynalles to entre into conclave, and to chuse a Pope at

[1] *Hungy* P.

CAP. CLXII Of the dethe of pope Urbayne of Rome.

their pleasure; wherfore, sir, ye shall nat nede to entre so farre into the mater, as to desyre them that wyll do but lytell for you, as they have shewed yet hyderunto. Suffre, sir, tyll ye here other newes: and paradventure it maye so be that the cardynalles at Rome shall nat be all of one accorde, and paradventure wyll dissymule with the Romayns, and chuse none other Pope but Clement; and to apease their furour, to promyse them to cause Clement to come to Rome, whiche he wyll do right gladlye on that condycion. And if the mater go so, than shall it be tyme for you to write to all the princes cristned that are of the opinyon contrarye to you, in the best maner ye canne to avoyde the scisme, and to bring the churche to an unyon and peace, as by reason every man ought to do. But as yet ye be nat sure howe the mater gothe; it is best ye abyde the adventure therof. It shall nat be longe or we here other tidynges.

Whan the duke of Burgoyne hadde sayde these wordes to the kyng and to his counsaile, there was none that spake contrarye therto. The kynge thought his wordes were resonable, and sayd, Fayre uncle, we beleve it is good reason that ye saye: ye se more clerer in the mater than we do; and as for the busynesse of the churche, we wyll do nothynge therin but by youre counsayle and advyse: thus they cessed of that communicacion. Great murmuracyon there was amonge the clerkes of the universite of those tydinges, wherby they cessed to rede or to study, and entended to nothynge but to herken and to knowe howe the cardynalles of Rome maynteyned themselfe; wheder they wolde elect a new Pope, or els to retourne to the Pope at Avignon. They dyde cast many doughtes, and argued one with another. They knewe well howe Clement had written to the kynge, and to the duke of Thourayne, and to the duke of Burgoyne, and to the kynges counsayle; in lykewise letters were written generally to the unyversite, that they shulde conclude to an unyversall peace in the churche. Thus the clerkes devysed amonge themselfe, and suche as wolde the advauncement of Clement sayde: Nowe it is tyme that the kyng and the lordes of Fraunce write to the great princes of Christendome, as to the kynge of Almaygne, the

kynge of Hungry, the lorde of Myllayne, and to the duke of Austryche, and to suche other as are of our opynion, to thentent that they shulde retourne to the same state: suche writyng maye moche aveyle. In thre dayes, thre tymes the notable clerkes of the universyte of Parys assembled togyder, and at last came to saynt Poules to speke with the kyng and his counsayle, to desyre hym to set to his hande to oppresse the cysme of the churche, and to entende to the ordynaunce of pope Clement, who had humbly written to hym. But whan they came to saint Poules they were nat answered; the kynge dissymuled the mater with them, so that they were yvell content. Finally, the kyng contented them: sayeng howe shortely they shulde here other newes; and so they dyd, for the cardinals of Rome entred into the conclave and made a newe Pope, the cardynall of Naples, a noble and a valyant clerke; he was called Bonyface. Whan the Frenche kyng and his counsayle herde therof they were pensyve, for than they well ymagined howe that the cysme was lykely to endure longe. Than the duke of Burgoyne sayde to the kyng, Sir, nowe regarde wheder your writynges hadde nat ben loste or no: it is nowe fallen, as I sayd. Fayre uncle, quod the kyng, ye saye trouthe. Thane graces were opyned to all clerkes at Rome by Bonyface, and all promyses certifyed there, of suche as were under his obeysaunce; and suche as wolde receyve suche graces wente towardes Rome. And whan they approched the marchesse of Danconne, they rode in great paryll, for sir Bernarde de la Salle, who kepte the fronters there, and made warre to the Romains in the quarrell of pope Clement, toke suche clerkes as paste by, and dyde them moche trouble, and many slayne and loste.

CAP. CLXII
Of the dethe of pope Urbayne of Rome.

Nowe lette us leave spekynge of these popes, and tourne to other maters.

CAP. CLXIII

Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn, of olde parteyning to syr Geffray Tete Noyre.

YE have herde here before howe sir Geffray Tete Noyre, who had ben longe capitayne of the castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn, raigned valiauntly: and howe he helde his fortresse agaynst all men as longe as he lyved, and in his lyfe dayes had patesed the countrey more than xxx. myle long about hym. Also ye have herde howe he dyed, and by what incydence: and howe on his dethe bedde he ordayned his ii. nephues, Alayne Roux and Peter Roux, to be capitayns of that castell of Vanchadore[1] after his dethe, and caused in his presence all the companyons of that garison to swere faythe, trouthe, and homage, servyce and trewe obeysaunce to the sayd two capitayns. And after the dethe of this Geffraye Tete Noyre, these two bretherne raigned there a certayne space, and held alwayes the countrey in warre and in composycion of patesyng. And bycause that castell parteyned to the herytage of the duke of Berrey, for he had bought it of the erle of Mountpensyer, and his sonne Johan of Berey bare his name therby, therefore the duke was sore displeased that it was out of his handes, but he coude nat amende it. Yet he had layd siege therto dyvers tymes by bastides and none otherwyse; but they within sette lytell therby, for they wolde issue out and ryde abrode in the countrey at their pleasure. This Alayne nor Peter wolde in no wyse obey any peace or truce that was taken bytwene Englande and Fraunce. They sayde they were nat bounde to obey, but wolde make warre at their pleasure: wherby the countreis of Auvergne and Lymosyn were sore traveyled. And the duke of Berrey, to resyst them, caused sir Wyllyam Butler, a gentyll knyght of Auvergne, and sir Johan Boesme Launce, and sir Loyes Daubier, with dyvers other knyghtes and squyers of Auvergne and Lymosyn, to laye siege by

[1] *Ventadour.*

bastydes to the castell of Vanchadore, and laye there at the cost of the countrey. There they laye a longe season.

CAP. CLXIII
Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

So it fell the same season as it was shewed me: Alayn and Peter Roux toke their advyce toguyder, and devysed to attrappe and to take by crafte sir Wyllyam Butler and sir Johan Boesme Launce, who hadde done them dyvers displeasures. These two bretherne ymagined bytwene them, and sayde one to another, howe they wolde secretely say howe they wolde yelde up their fortresse for a certayne somme of floreyns: and to say howe they are wery and wyll kepe the garison no lengar, but to retourne into their owne countreis; to the whiche devyse, they sayde, surely the duke of Berrey wyll gladly leane unto. Also they devysed to demaunde no more but tenne thousande frankes, bycause that somme myght soone be made; and also they sayde they wolde have agayne their money and the two knyghtes also prisoners, by reason of a busshment that they wolde laye in a great towre. Beholde nowe what a folisshe ymaginacion these two Bretons were of to betray these two knyghtes, and to have their money: if any ivell came to them therby, it ought nat to be complayned. Upon this determynacion they putte out of the castell one of their varlettes, and sayde to hym: Go thy waye to the Frenche bastydes, and suffre them to take the; than requyre to be brought to sir Wyllyam Butler and to sir Johan Boesme Launce; than delyver them this letter fro us, and demaunde for an answere, for the mater toucheth us and them also greatly. The varlet sayd it shulde be done, for he thought none yvell: and so went to the Frenche bastides. And whan he came nere to the bastydes he was demaunded what he wolde: he answered and sayd he wolde gladly speke with sir Wyllyam Butler or with sir Johan Boesme Launce. He was brought to them, for as than they were toguyder. Whan he sawe them, he made his reverence and drewe them aparte, and delyvered to them the letter that Alayne and Peter Roux had sente them. Of that tydinges they had great marveyle, and so toke the letter and reed it, and therin they founde how that Alayne and Peter Roux wolde speke with them for their profite. Whan they herde that, they had more marveyle thane they had before, and

CAP. CLXIII douted of trayson. Howebeit, they sent them worde, that if they wolde come out of the castell, and speke with them without, they wolde assure them to entre agayne into their fortresse without daunger or trouble. This was the answere that the varlet brought to their maister. Thanne Alayne and Peter Roux said, We thynke we may be sure ynough by these wordes, sythe their faythes and seales be at the writyng; they are true knyghtes, and also we shall speke with them for a treatie, wherunto we thynke they wyll gladly entende. The nexte mornynge they opynned a wycket joynyng to the gate, and aveyled downe a planche borde hangyng by two chaynes, and issued out and stode on the planche. Than sir Wyllyam Butler and sir Johan Boesme Launce came thyder and lyghted of their horses, and made their menne to drawe abacke. Than the two capitayns within said, Sirs: may we surely come out and speke with you? Ye, surely, quod the knyghtes: shall we be as sure agayne of your parte without trayson? Ye, sir, surely, quod they, without doute. Than Alayne and Peter Roux passed the bridge and came to them; so they four were toguyder without other company. Than the two Frenche knightes said, Sirs, howe saye you? What communycacion wyll ye have with us? Are ye in mynde to yelde up your castell to us? Ye, truely, sirs, quod they, on a condycion: and that is, to gyve us ten thousande frankes for the provisyons that is in the castell, for we are wery of the warre; we wolde drawe into Bretayne. These two knyghtes were ryght gladde of those wordes, and sayd, Ah, ye speke to us of marchandyse, and we shall here you gladly; but as nowe we have nat here the money redy; we shall provyde for it. Well, sirs, quod they of Vanchador, whan ye are redy gyve us knowledge, and we shall kepe covenaunt. But, sirs, kepe this mater secretly and sagely, for if it were knowen amonge myne owne company, they wolde take us perforce and slee us; than shulde bothe you and I fayle of our ententes. Syr, quod they, dought nat therof; we shall so convey the mater that ye shall take no domage. Therwith they departed one fro another: the Bretons entred into Vanchador, and the Frenche knyghtes retourned to their bastydes.

Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

CAP. CLXIII
Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

Sir Willyam Butler and syr Johan Boesme Launce in this mater thought nothynge but good, supposynge that the Bretons wolde nat dysceyve theym, as to have their money and to betraye them also. Incontynente they wrote to the duke of Berrey, who was as than at Ryon in Auvergne. They sent with the letter a gentleman named Guyomell of Saynte Wydall, and infourmed hym of all the mater, thynkyng howe it shulde be joyouse tydynges to the duke, for he greatly desyred to have that castell. This squyer tooke the letter and departed fro the bastydes, and rode so longe through Lymosyn and Auvergne that he came to Ryon, and there he founde the duke of Berrey, and delyvered hym his letters fro the two knyghtes. The duke reed the letters, and whan he had well understande the contentes therof the duke was gladde: and anone after the duke called his counsayle and his treasourers, and said, Sirs, beholde here is newe tydynges; our knyghtes that kepeth the bastydes before Vanchador have written to us that they are in certayne treatie with the capytayns within the castell: they offer to yeld up the fortresse for the somme of tenne thousande frankes: that is no great somme, for every yere it coste them of Lymosyn and of Auvergne to kepe warre against them more than threscore thousande frankes: we wyll accepte their offre betymes, leste they repente them herafter; therfore, my treasourers, make up the somme of tenne thousande frankes; we wyll lende them to the countrey, and whan I am in possession of the castell, I wyll rayse a tayle in Lymosyn and in the fronters, whiche were under their patesynge; they shall pay me the double. Sir, quod the treasourers, it shall be made redy within these fyve or syxe dayes. Well, quod the duke, I am contente. Thus that matter was concluded. The tresourers made redy the money in crownes of the sonne,[1] and put it into foure cofers. The same daye that the money shulde have been sente, there came to Ryon to the duke of Berrey the Dolphyn of Auvergne and the lorde of Reveyll, for certayne maters touchynge themselfe. They were welcome to the duke, and the duke was so joyfull of the treatie for Vanchador, that he coude nat kepe it secrete, but shewed to these two knightes the letters sente to hym fro syr Willyam

[1] *en couronnes et en frans de France.*

CAP. CLXIII Butler and syr Johan Boesme Launce. Whan they herde it they studyed a lytell. Than the duke sayde, Syr, wheron do ye muse? Se you any suspectiousness in this mater? I pray you shewe me or I sende the money. Syr, quod the erle Dolphyn, ye know well howe therle of Armynake and I were ordeyned to by and to gette agayne as many fortresses as we coude in the countreys of Auvergne, Carnesyn,[1] Rouergue, and Lymosyn. With dyvers we made treatyes, but for all that ever we coulde do, we coulde never brynge them of Vanchador to herkyn or to leane to any maner of treatie, nother to gyve it up nor to selle it: whan we spake therof they wolde skante make us an aunswere. And syr, I knowe if they nowe wyll make this treatie with you, it is nat for defaute of vitayles, for if none came to theym this eyght yere, yet they have ynough; wherfore we have marvayle what shulde move them therto at this presente tyme; therfore it maketh us to doute of traysone: for men of warre inclosed in fortresses are sore imagyners, and whan their imaginacion inclyneth to any yvell dede, they wyll craftely colour it; wherfore, sir, take good advyse. Well, syrs, quod the duke, ye have sayd well; we shall provyde for the mater more substancyally than I thought to have done.

Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

[1] *Quercy.*

Thanne the duke of Berrey called to hym one of his knyghtes, called syr Peter Mespyn, and sayde to hym: Syr, ye shall go with this money to the bastydes before Vanchadore, and saye to syr Wyllyam Butler and to syr Johan Boesme Launce, that in the mater they wrote to me of, that they deale therin substancyally, and that they trust nat to moche in the Bretons within Vanchador; and shewe them that we have herde more tydinges than they be ware of; wherfore lette theym be well advysed of all poyntes. Thus this knyght departed fro Ryon with the money; he rode with his company tyll he came to the bastydes, whyther he was welcome. The somers with the money were dyscharged and put in savegarde. Than syr Peter Mespyn opened his message and said: Syrs, my lorde the duke of Berrey sendeth you worde by me, that as touchynge the treatye that ye are in hande withall, touchyng the garyson of Vanchador, he commaundeth you to worke wysely, that

ye lese nat bothe your bodyes and the money that he hath sent you. Also he sayth he hath herde tydynges that pleaseth hym nothynge; wherfore he wyll ye take good hede and be well advysed, for he douteth of trayson; he sayeth that oftentymes the countrey of Auvergne and Lymosyn wolde have gyven for the fortresse of Vanchadore threscore thousande frankes, and nowe to offre it for ten thousande, causeth my lorde the duke and his counsayle to have suspecte. The two knightes, whan they herde that, they were pensyve, and aunswered and sayde, We se well double wytte is better than syngle: ye say well; we thanke you of your advyse, and ye shall abyde here styll with us, and helpe to counsayle us as it is reason; within these two daies we shall se howe the mater shall come to passe. He sayde he was contente so to do. Thanne anone after these two knyghtes sente a varlet to the castell of Vanchador, for it was as than treuce bytwene the parties, and signyfyed to Alayne Roux and to Peter Roux, that the tenne thousande frankes were redy, and desyringe theym to kepe their promesse. And they answered the varlet, that they wolde kepe their promesse surely, and that whansoever they wolde come, to sende theym worde therof.

CAP. CLXIII
Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

Alayne and Peter Roux, who thought no good, as it was knowen and proved whan their purpose was broken and knowen, for they had devysed to have taken sir Willyam Butler and syr Johan Boesme Launce, as they shulde have entred into the castell of Vanchador, by reasone of a great towre that was within the castell, the whiche was always able to beate the castell, these two knyghtes Bretons, who entended nothynge but malesse, layde in busshement in this towre thyrty men in harnesse, to the entent that whan the Frenchemen were entred into the castell, thynkynge to be lordes therof, that in the night these thyrty shulde issue out, and slee and take the Frenchemen at their pleasure. Whan they had thus ordayned, than they sente to syr Willyam Butler and to sir Johan Boesme Launce, that they shulde come and bringe with them their money, and they shulde have the castell opened. Of these newes the Frenchemen were joyous, and sayd to the messanger: Retourne to your maysters, and shewe them that to morowe

CAP. CLXIII Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the strongecastell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

in the mornyng we shall come thyder. The messanger retourned, and shewed this to his maysters. The Frenche knyghtes wente to counsayle togyder, and dyd cast more doutes than they dyd before, by reason of the wordes that the duke of Berrey had sente them by sir Peter Mespyn. Than they ordeyned and concluded to lay a busshemente of their men nere to the castell, and than they with thyrty of their men harnessed under covert shulde go before and entre into the castell, and to regarde wyselye the castell within, and to cast all maner of doutes: and than if they se any thynge to suspecte, than one of them to blowe a horne, and to kepe the bridge and gate open: and at the sowne of the horne the busshement to come to the gate as faste as they canne, and to entre and take season of the castell. Thus as it was ordayned so it was done. The next mornyng every man was redy, and the busshement layde of a syxe score speares; and the two knyghtes, with thyrty in their company covertly armed, came to Vanchador. And syr Peter Mespyn was with them, with the money trussed properly in thre panyers upon two somers. They founde the two Bretons redy at the barryers, who opened the barryers agaynste their comyng. Whan they were entred and within the gate, than the two Bretons wolde have closed the gate after them, but the Frenche knyghtes said, Nay syrs, nat so; be ye true marchauntes or nat? Ye knowe well ye muste yelde up to us this castell for the payeng of the somme of tenne thousande frankes, the whiche is here redy; ye maye se them here upon this somer; if ye kepe trouth with us, so shall we do with you. With those wordes Alayne and Peter Roux wyste nat what to say; but to bringe the Frenchemen out of suspecte, they aunswered, Syrs, ye saye well; we are contente as ye please. Thus they wente forthe and left the barryers open, for if it hadde ben closed the busshment coulde nat have entred to have come tyme ynough to have resysted the false turne that the Bretons had devysed. For ymagyners shulde have every thyng as they lyst, and if there were nat counter ymaginers agaynst them. Bothe the Frenchemen and Bretons entred in at the gate; than Alayne and Peter Roux wolde have closed the gate, but than the Frenche-

men sayd, Syrs, let the gate alone; we wyll have it open; it is reason; we are redy to delyver you our money acordynge to our promesse. Well, syrs, quod the Bretons, lette se laye forthe the money. With a good wyll, quod the Frenchemen. There they layde forthe a coverlet, and the florens layde abrode. In the meane season, whyle Alayne and Peter Roux behelde the fayre somme of florence, the Frenche knyghtes went aboute to se the maner of the castell: thanne syr Peter Mespyn came to syr Willyam Butler, and sayd, Syr, cause this great towre to be opened or ye paye all your money, for there may be within it a busshmente, wherby we maye be atrapped and lose bothe our bodyes and the money also. Than syr Willyam sayd to Alayne, Syr, open this towre; we wyll se it open or we delyver our money. Syr, quod Alayne, I canne nat do so; the keyes be lost. With those wordes the Frenche knightes had more suspecte in the mater than they had before, and said: Alayne, it can nat be that ye shulde lese the keyes of the soveraygne towre of this castell; open it with fayrenesse, or els we shall open it perforce, for ye have promised and sworne to rendre to us the castell as it is, without fraude or male engyn, and therfore you to have ten thoushande frankes, the whiche somme is here redy to be delyvered. Than Alayne aunswered agayne and sayd, I wyll nat open it tyll I have receyved the money, and layde it in savegarde; than whan I have receyved the money, I shall serche for the keys. Sirs, quod they, we wyll nat abyde so longe; we se clerely by your wordes that your meanyng is nat good, for you wyll dysceyve and betraye us; wherfore we lay our handes on you Alayne and on your brother Peter, in the name of the kynge our soveraygne lorde and the duke of Berrey; we wyll have this towre incontynent opened perforce, and serche every place within this castell, bothe above and beneth, to se if ye have layde any busshemente or nat; and if we fynde in the castell any thyng done by you, that ought nat to be done, ye are loste without redempcyon or pardone, for reasone wyll so; and if we fynde the castell as it ought to be, we shall kepe our bargayne with you well and truely, and shall conducte you whyder ye lyste; to the gates of Avignon, if ye wyll. Whan Alayne

CAP. CLXIII
Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

CAP. CLXIII and Peter Roux sawe howe the mater wente, and that they were arested, they were sore abasshed, and were as halfe deed, and repented them that they had doone so moche, for they sawe well they were dysceyved. Than the Frenche knightes perceyved well howe they were culpable, and that the mater was nat well. Than they made a signe to hym that bare the horne to blowe, and so he dyd. Whan the French busshement herde it, they came to the castell as faste as their horses coulde ryn, and sayd, Go we to Vanchadore; they blowe for us; it semeth our men hath nat founde the castell acording as it was promysed; we thynke there be some trayson. Anon they were come to the castell, for they were nat farre of; the barryers were open and kept by the Frenchmen, for the Bretons within were nat maysters of the castell, for their busshemente were within the towre. The Frenchemen entred, and founde the capytaynes in the courte, comunynge with the Bretons.

Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the strongecastell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

Than Alayne and Peter were sore abasshed, seynge so many of their enemyes aboute them; and as for them that were within the towre knewe nothynge of the besynesse, nor coude se nor here nothyng, the towre was so thycke. Some that were within sayde: Harke, syrs, me thynke I here moche murmurynge without; we may be dysceyved; Frenchemen be subtyle; we thought to take, but I feare we be taken; our capitayn Alayne is dysceyved and we to; I feare we shall nat issue out without their congye. Thus whan the Frenchemen sawe howe they were lordes of the castell, they were than bolder than before, and tooke and put up agayne their floreyns, and sayd to Alayne, Delyver us the keyes of this towre, for we wyll se what is within. The Bretons prolonged the mater and sayde, Syrs, begynne fyrste to serche in other places, and than returne to this towre. The Frenchmen answered, Alayne, ye do but prolonge the mater, for we wyll begynne here fyrst: and outher at ones delyver the keyes, or els thou shalte be slayne with these daggers. Whan the two bretherne herde that they douted the dethe; they fledde fro it as longe as they myght; howebeit, to saye the trouth, it had been more honorable for them to have been slayne there than to have taryed any lenger, for afterwarde they dyed a shamefull dethe, as ye

shall here. And Alayne Roux beyng in this daunger, yet practysed another crafte, if it wolde have served, and sayd: Syr Willyam and you syr Johan, it is of trouth that within this toure are thirty men in harnesse; my brother and I dyd sette them there with moche payne, for we knewe well they wolde never agree to our apoyntemente, therfore we have closed theym within this towre to be sure of them, tyll we have the full possessyon of the castell, and there ye may have them and ye wyll; they are all good prisoners: and delyver us our money as ye have promysed, and lette us go our wayes. Whan the French knightes herde that they were somwhat better content than they were before, and studyed a lytell: than sir Willyam Butler saide, Howsoever it be, or we delyver our money we wyll have knowledge of all the keyes of this castell; therfore shew us where they be. Whan Alayne sawe it wolde be none otherwyse, he sente for them into his chambre: whan they were brought to the place, than it was demaunded whiche keyes served for the towre. Alayne, full sore agaynste his wyll, shewed forthe the keyes of the great towre: than they opened the towre, and founde within the thyrty companions in harnesse hydde prively within the towre. Alayne and his brother were sore abasshed whan they sawe the Frenchmen entre into the towre, and harde the wordes that sir Willyam Butler sayd, whiche were these: Syrs, issue out fayre and easely one by one; if nat, ye are all but deed; we take you as prisoners: feare nat the dethe, ye shall have no hurte, so ye wyll shewe the trouth of that we shall demaunde of you. Whan they sawe the Frenchemen, and understode that they shulde nat be slayne, but taken as prisoners, they layde downe their weapons and harnesse, and yelded themselfes, for they sawe well defence coulde nat aveyle them. There the thyrty men were taken and put aparte and examyned, and there they justyfyed the trayson before Alayne and Peter Roux, who coulde nat denye it. Than the knyghtes of Fraunce sayde to them, Syrs, it greatly dyspleaseth us to fynde you in this defaulte; we canne nat punysshe the mater, the cause is so weighty; we shall put it to the discrecyon of the duke of Berrey; if he wyll have pytie on you we shall be gladde therof; we trust he wyll, for the joye that he wyll have for the recover-

CAP. CLXIII
Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

CAP. CLXIII Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

ing of this castell, for it was the place that he most desyred to have agayne of all the worlde. These wordes somewhat comforted theym: they were put into a chambre under sure kepynge, and other into dyvers chambres and towres. Than the castell was serched above and beneth; there they founde great provysyon, and lefte it all there styll, and toke away nothynge therof at their departynge; and as for golde, sylver, and harnesse, therof was made a boty, and every man had his parte: and the prisoners, the knyghtes had them for their parte.

Thus as I have shewed, the stronge castell of Vanchadore was taken by the Frenchemen in this season. And than syr Wyllyam Butler sette there a capytayne, a squyer of Lymosyn, a valyaunt man, called Pier Madych, and with hym a thyrty speares of good men of warre; and they raunsomed their prysoners, suche as were worthy to be raunsomed; and suche as were great pyllers and robbers, and Frenchmen borne, they strake of their hedes and hanged them upon gybettes, newe made before the castell gate. Than the Frenche knightes departed to go to Ryon to the duke of Berrey, and toke with them Alayne and Peter Roux. Tydinges sprange abrode howe the stronge castell of Vanchadour was taken, wherof the countrey of Auvergne and Lymosyn and those marchesse were greatly rejoysed, for the castell had been out of the Frenchemennes handes more than fyftene yere, and durynge that season that garysone had done great domage to the countrey. Sir Willyam Butler founde in the castell a yonge squier of Bretayne, a fayre yong man named Monadich, and was cosyn to Geffray Tetenoyre, and he was but newely come thyder to lerne to exercyse dedes of armes; he had ben brought up in an abbaye in Bretayne, and was come out of the house bycause he wolde be no monke. The Frenchemen wolde have stryken of his heed amonge other, but sir Willyam Butler had pytie on hym, and saved his lyfe, with that he wolde become Frenche and serve hym. Thus the Frenchmen rode to the duke of Berrey, and brake up their bastydes. The men of armes departed and went every man to their owne, and the capytaynes came to Ryon to the duke of Berrey, and led with them the Bretons, who desyred them on the waye that they

shulde nat enfourme the duke of Berrey to sore agaynst them. The Frenchmen promysed to fulfyll their desyre. So longe they rode that they came to Ryon, and there founde the duke and the duchesse, who receyved them with great joy, for he rekened it to be a gret acte the conquering of the castell of Vanchadore, and gave them fayre gyftes and presentes. Than they demaunded of the duke what his pleasure was shulde be done with Alayne and Peter Roux. He answered, he wolde take advyse in that matter; and so toke counsayle: and there it was determyned that he shulde sende them to the kyng. And so they were delyvered to the seneschall of Auvergne, and he conveyed them to Parys, and there they were put in prison in the castell of saynte Anthony, in the kepynge of the vycount of Asser,[1] who as at that tyme had the kepynge of that castell. And they had nat ben longe there but that they were delyvered to the provost of Parys, and put into the chatellet, and there judged to dye as traytours and robbers of the realme of Fraunce. Than they were delyvered to the hangman, and fast bounde and layde in a carre, and brought with trompettes to the place of execucion, named the halles, and there set on the pillery, and turned four tymes aboute in the syght of all the people: and there was openly red and publysshed all their dedes, and than beheeded and quartered, and their quarters sent to the four chefe gates of the cytie. Thus Alayne and Peter Roux lost shamfully their lyves and the castell of Vanchadore.

[1] *Acy.*

CAP. CLXIII Of the yeldyng up and takyng of the stronge castell of Vanchadore in Lymosyn.

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes contynuyng thyrty dayes agaynste all commers of the realme of Englande and other countreys: every man thre courses.

IN this seasone and in the meane tyme that the treuse was thus bytwene Englande and Fraunce, bothe by lande and by see, though the kinges and their subjectes helde well the peace, yet was there certayne pyllers

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

and robbers in Auvergne, who made warre to the poore men on bothe sydes the ryver of Dordone; but the capytayns that had gyven up their fortresses by reason of that treatie dyssymuled the matter. By reason of their dissymulacion the countrey of Auvergne receyved great domage, so that the complaintes therof came to Parys. Than the French kyng was counsayled to sende to the kynge of Englande, signyfyenge hym of the state of these robbers that made warre thus in the countrey, under coloure of their patesynge, the whiche ought nat to be done. I thinke the king of Englande excused hymselfe of the mater, and to provyde therfore. The same season the thre foresayd knyghtes, that is to say, the yonge Bouciquaut, Raynolde of Roy, and the lorde of Saint Pye, who had enterprised to do armes about the marches of Calays, neare to saynte Ingilbertes, made them redy to acomplysshe their desyre, and to fulfyll their promesse and the right of armes: for it was openly declared and publysshed, and specyally in the realme of Englande, in the which realme there were knyghtes and squyers quyckened to the mater, and were in gret imagynacions to knowe what they might best do. Some said it shulde be greatly to their blame and reproche, such an enterprise taken so nere to Calays, without they passed the see, and loke on those knightes that shulde do armes there. Suche as spake most of the mater was, first, syr Johan of Holande erle of Huntyngdon, who had great desyre to go thyder; also sir Johan[1] Courtney, sir Johan Traicton, sir Johan Golouffer, syr Johan Russell, syr Thomas Shyrborne,[2] syr Willyam Clyfton, sir Willyam Clynton, sir Willyam Taylboys, sir Godfrey Seta, syr Willyam Hacquenay, sir Johan Vobeas,[3] syr Johan Dambretycourt, syr Henry Beamond, and dyvers other, mo than a hundred knightes and squiers. All these sayd: Let us provyde to go to Calays, for the knightes of Fraunce hath nat ordayned that sporte so nere our marches, but to the entent to se us there; and surely they have done well, and do lyke good companions, and we shall nat fayle them at their busynes. This mater was so publisshed abrode in Englande, that many suche as had no desyre to do dedes of armes theymselfe, yet they sayd they wolde be there to loke on them that shulde. Suche as thought to be there, sent

[1] *Peter.*
[2] *Swinburn.*
[3] *Boulewas.*

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

afore to Calays to make provysion to kepe their astate, and sente over their horse and harnes bothe for peace and warre. Whan the day aproched, sir John Holande, brother to the kyng of Englande, fyrst passed the see, and mo than lx. knyghtes and squiers with hym, and aryved at Calays, and there toke up their lodgynges.

At thentryng in of the joly fresshe moneth of May these thre yong knyghtes of Fraunce, suche as shulde do dedes of armes at saynt Ingilbertes, thus first they came to Boloyne and taryed there a season, and than came to thabbay of saint Ingilbertes. Than they understode how there were a great nombre of knyghtes and squyers come out of Englande to Calays, wherof they were ryght joyfull. And to the entent that the brute shulde come to Calays, they ordayned in a fayre playne bytwene Calays and saynt Ingilbertes thre fressh grene pavilyons to be pyght up; and at the entre of every pavylyon there hanged two sheldes with the armes of the knightes; one shelde of peace, another of warre; and it was ordayned that suche as shulde ryn and do dedes of armes shulde touche one of the sheldes, or cause to be touched, whiche as pleaseth them, and he shulde be delyvered acordyng to his desyre. To speke of this mater, I shall shew you. The xxi. day of the moneth of May, acordyng as it had ben publisshed, these thre French knyghtes were redy in the place to furnisshe their interprice; and the same day knightes and squyers issued out of Calays suche as wolde just, and also suche other as had pleasure to regarde that sporte: and they came to the sayde place apoynted, and drewe all on the one parte. The place to just in was fayre, grene and playne. Syr Johan Holande first sente to touche the shelde of warre of sir Boucyquaut, who incontynent issued out of his pavylyon, redy mounted, with shelde and speare. These two knightes drewe fro other a certayne space: and whan eche of them had well advysed other, they spurred their horses and came togyther rudely; and Boucyquaute strake the erle of Huntyngton through the shelde, and the speare heed glente over his arme and dyde hym no hurt: and so they passed forthe, and tourned and rested at their pase. This course was greatly praysed. The seconde course they met without any hurte doynge; and the thyrde

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

course their horses refused and wolde nat cope. The erle of Huntyngton, who had gret desyre to just, and was somwhat chafed, came to his place, abydynge that sir Boucyquaut shulde take his speare: but he dyd nat, for he shewed that he wolde no more rynne that day agaynst therle. And whan the erle sawe that, he sent his squyer to touche the shelde of warre of the lorde of Saynt Pye; and he that wolde nat refuse, issued out of his pavylion, and toke his horse, shelde, and speare; and whan the erle sawe that he was redy, [he] spurred his horse, and Saynt Pye in lykewyse; they couched their speares, but at the metyng their horses crossed, but with the crossynge of their speares the erle was unhelmed. Than he retourned to his men, and incontynent he was rehelmed and toke his speare, and Saynt Pye his, and than ran agayne, and met eche other with their speares in the myddes of their sheldes, so that nere hande they were bothe borne downe to the erthe; but they gryped fast their horses with their legges, and so saved themselfes, and retourned to their places and toke their brethes. Syr Johan Holande, who had great affection to do honorably, toke agayne his speare and spurred his horse; and whan the lorde of Saynt Pye sawe hym comyng, he dashed forth his horse to encountre hym; eche of them strake other on their helmes, that the fyre flasshed out: with that ataynt the lorde of Saynt Pye was unhelmed: and so they passed forthe and came agayne to their owne places. This course was greatly praysed; and both Frenche and Englysshe sayd that those thre knyghtes, the erle of Huntyngton, sir Bouciquaut, and the lorde of Saynte Pye had right well done their devoyrs, without any domage eyther to other. Agayne the erle desyred, for love of his lady, to have another course, but he was refused: than sir Johan Holande went out of the renke, to gyve place to other, for he had ronne all his sixe courses well and valyauntly, so that he had laude and honoure of all partyes. Than stept forth a gentle knight of Englande, called the erle Marshall; he sent to touche the shelde of warre of sir Raynolde of Roy, who issued out of his pavylyon, armed at all peces, and toke his horse, shelde, and speare. And whan these two knyghtes were asonder, they spurred their horses and came fyersly togyther: the first course they fayled, by

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers

outragyng of their horses, wherwith they were sore dyspleased; at the ii. course sir Raynolde was stryken and the spere broken; the iii. course, eche strake other on their helmes with suche force, that the fire flewe out, and therle Marshall was unhelmed, who passed forthe and retourned to his place and justed no more that day, for he had done ynough. Than came forth the lorde Clyfford, a right apt and a valyant knight of Englande, cosyn germayn to sir John Chandos, who was a noble valiant knight in his dayes; he sent to touche the shelde of warre of sir Bouciquaut; incontynent the knight issued out of his pavilyon with shelde and spere. These two knightes came rudely togider, and strake eche other on the helm, that the fyre sparcled. Their speares brake nat, nor the knightes lost no styropes: so passed by, and came to their places, and made them redy to ryn the ii. course, and so came togyder without any sparing: sir Bouciquaut brake his spere, but he was unhelmed and yet fell nat; they passed forthe and came to their places. Sir Loyes Clifforde made hym to just agayne, but Bouciquaut dyd nat put on agayne his helme; that seyng, the lorde Clifforde advysed to performe his course with another. Than he sente his squyer to touche the shelde of warre of the lorde of Saynt Pye, who came forthe redy to juste. They ran toguyder, and met eche other; the lorde Clifforde brake his speare in thre peces on the lorde of Saynt Pyes shelde; and the lorde of Saynt Pye strake the lorde Clyfforde on the helme, so that he was dishelmed: and so passed forthe: eche of them drewe to their place, and the lorde Clyfforde ran no more that day, for it was shewed hym howe he had right honorably borne hymselfe that daye. Than came forth a noble knight of Englande, called sir Henry Beamonde; he caused to be touched sir Bouciquautes shelde of warre, who was soone redy to answere; they ran togyder. The lorde Beamonde crossed, and Bouciquaut strake hym so rudely, that he bare hym to therthe and passed forthe: the knight was releved by his men, and set agayne on horsbacke, and so ran again togyder two other courses without any dommage. Than sir Peter Curtney, who had great desyre to ryn sixe courses, caused his squyer to touche all thre sheldes of warre, wherof the Frenchmen had marveile, and

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

demaunded what he entended therby: he answered, that it was his pleasure to ryn with eche knight ii. courses, without he were lette by the way. His desyre was graunted. Than sir Raynolde du Roy ran first; they came togider with good advysement; howbeit, the first course they fayled, for their horses refused at the cope, wherwith they were sore displeased; they failed nat at the ii. course, but sir Raynold dishelmed the Englisshe knyght, and passed forth and retourned to his place and held him styll, for he had ron his two courses. Than the lorde of Saint Pye came forthe to just, and ran eche agaynst other and brake their speres; and the ii. course the lorde of Saint Pye strake sir Peter Courtney acrosse, and sir Peter strake hym on the helme and unhelmed hym, and so came to their owne places. Than sir Bouciquaut, to acomplisshe sir Peters desire, came forthe, and ran and met eche other in the myddes of their sheldes so rudely, that both their horses stakered in the place; more hurt there was nat; the ii. course they unhelmed eche other. These vi. courses done, sir Peter Courtney desyred to ryn one course more with one of the thre knightes, which as pleased them; but he was refused, and it was sayd to hym that he had done ynough for that day; so he rested. Than preced forthe a gentylman of Englande, called sir John Gouloufer; he sent to touche the shelde of sir Raynolde du Roy, who was redy to answere: they ran frely togider, and ataynted ech other of the helmes, without dishelmyng or brekyng of their speres, and so passed by: the seconde course their horses refused to mete: the iii. course they met in their sheldes and brake their staves: the fourth course they mist: the v. course they unhelmed eche other and retourned to their places. Than a valiant knight of Englande, called sir John Rosseau,[1] who was a well travelled knight and well knowen, he touched the shelde of the lord of Saint Pye; the knight was redy to answere: they ran togyder and met so rudely that their horses stayed with the cope: the ii. course their horses swarved asyde and myst eche other, wherof the knightes were displeased: and the iii. course they met and strake ech other in the viser of their helmes, so that they were bothe unhelmed: the Englysshe knyght retourned to his company and justed no more.

[1] *Russell.*

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

Than came forthe sir Peter Shirborne, a yong knight, and touched the sheld of sir Bouciquaut; that knight was redy, and ran togider and myst by outraging of their horses; they taried nat long, but ran togider agayne the ii. course, and strake eche other in the syght of their helmes: sir Bouciquautes spere brake; thenglysshe knyghtes spere helde; so that therby sir Boucyquaut was unhelmed so rudely, that the blode ran out at his nose, and so he returned to his pavilyon and ran no more that day, for it was nere night. But sir Peter Shirborne wolde nat leve so, but wolde ryn out his iii. course; he sent to touche the shelde of the lorde of Saint Pye, who was incontynent redy: they ran togider, and tainted eche other on the helmes, but their speres grated nat; if they had, by moost lykelyhod they had taken hurte: the ii. course they strake eche other on the sheldes, and brake their staves in thre peces, and thenglisshe knight was borne to therthe: they ran no more that day, for it was nere night. Than the Englysshmen drewe togider, and departed and rode to Calays, and there devysed that nyght of that had ben done that day: in lykewise the Frenchmen rode to saynt Ingylbertes, and communed and devised of that had ben done the same day.

The Tuesday after masse, all suche as shulde just that day, or wolde gyve the lokyng on, rode out of Calis and came to the place apoynted: and the Frenchmen were redy there to receyve them: the day was fayre and hote. Whan thenglysshmen were armed, than sir Wyllyam Clyfton,[1] an expert knight of Englande, caused his squier to touche the targe of sir Bouciquaut; incontinent the knight issued out of his pavylion, armed at all peces: the two knightes came toguider, and taynted eche other on the shelde, and passed by without brekyng of their speares: the ii. course they crossed on their helmes: the iii. course they encountred ech other so on the sheldes, that their horses stode styll: the iiii. course was well enployed; they unhelmed eche other. The Englisshe knight ran no more; it was said to hym he had done ynough. Than on thenglisshe parte came forthe a lusty yong knight, called sir Nicholas Clynton;[2] he touched the lorde of Saynt Pies shelde; the knight anon was redy: they met togider so evyn that eche of them brake

[1] *Clynton.*

[2] *Clifton.*

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

their speres in iii. peces, with suche force that the knightes were in daunger to have taken domage; but they passed by and came to their places: the ii. course they tainted eche other on the helmes and passed by: the iii. course their horses crossed and fayled: the iiii. course the lorde of Saynt Pye unhelmed the Englysshe knight, who ran no more that daye, for men said he had well and valiantly done and quited hymselfe, and how other must have place to just. Than a kynsman of therle of Huntingdon came forthe, called Wyllyam Stamert; he caused to touche the shelde of sir Raynold of Roy; they ran togider with fre wyll, and tainted eche other; the Englysshe knight lost his spere: the ii. course they met, but thenglisse knight swarved aside; I can nat tell wheder the faut was in the knight or in the horse; but sir Raynolde strake hym so rudely on the targe, that he sore reversed, and so passed by, and made them redy to ryn the third course: and so tainted eche other on the helmes, that the fire sprang out and lost both their speres: the iiii. course they ataynted ech other in the sight of their helmes; with that course sir Willyam Stamert was dishelmed and nigh borne to therthe; howbeit, he fell nat, and returned to his company and ran no more that day. Than another squier of Englande came forth, called Lancastre; he sent to touche the shelde of sir Bouciquaut: they ran togider, and tainted ech other on the helmes that the fire flewe out, and marveyle it was that they had nat ben unhelmed: it was nat long tyll they ran the ii. course, but their horses crossed: the thirde course they were both unhelmed; and the Englysshe squyer justed no more that day. Than a yonge knight, called sir John Taylboise, justed with the lorde of Saynt Pye, and encountred eche other on the sheldes, and brake their staves: the ii. course their horses crossed; and the iii. course they were bothe unhelmed: the Englisshe knight ran no more that day. Than stepte forthe sir Godfray of Seta, a gentyll knight and a good juster, and that was well sene by hym; he encountred with sir Raynolde du Roy. They came right toguyder and mette in their sheldes; the speres were good and wolde nat breke, so that it made their horses to recule, and than recovered and kepte styll their speres, and than

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

ran agayne the seconde course; the ressed[1] in faute[2] of the horses and nat of the knyghtes, and they lost bothe their staves: they ran agayne the iii. course; the Englysshe knight strake sir Raynolde on the helme that he was unhelmed: and sir Raynolde strake the Englysshe knight on the targe so rudely and with suche strength, (for he was called one of the best justers in all the realme of Fraunce: also he lyved in amours with a yong lady, whiche aveyled hym in all his businesse,) that he perced thenglisshmans targe clene through, and the speare heed entred into the arme, and the spere brake, and the tronchon stacke styll in the shelde and in the knyghtes arme: yet for all that, the knyght made his turne, and came to his place fresshly. Than his company drewe out the tronchyon, and bounde his arme, and sir Raynolde retourned to his company.

[1] *sic* P.

[2] *fante* P.

Of that course sir Raynolde du Roy was greatly praysed on bothe parties, for all the hurtyng of the knight, for suche is the adventures of armes: to some good, to some yvell. Than came forthe an esquyer of Englande, called Blaquet, and sent to touche the shelde of the lorde of Saynt Py, who was redy to answere. They couched their speares and ran toguyder. The first course they taynted eche other on their helmes, and loste their staves; they toke their staves agayne, and in the aprochyng their horses crossed, and so passed by, and retourned agayne to their places: they taryed nat long, but ran eche at other: with that course Blaquet strake the lorde of Saynt Pye a hye on the helme, and gave hym a sore stroke, and Saynt Pye strake him in the sight of the helme a sorer stroke, so that therwith he was so unhelmed, that the bocle behynde brake, and the helme fell to the grounde: than Blaquet retourned to his company, and justed no more that day: and the lorde of Saynt Pye sate styll on his horse abyding other comers. Than a gentyll knight of Englande, called sir John Bolcas, touched the shelde of the lorde of Saynt Pye, who was there redy to answere: they strake eche other on the shelde that it was marveile they were nat perced, for their speres were strong; howbeit, they passed by, and lost their speares without any other dommage: the ii. course they taynted on the helmes without any hurte, and passed by: the iii.

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

course they crossed: the iiii. course the lorde of Saynt Pye unhelmed rudelye sir Johan Bolcas: after that course the Englisshe knight ran no more. Than a yong knyght of Englande, richely armed, named Thomelyn Massydone, he touched the shelde of warre of sir Bouciquaut: he was incontynent answered: the first course they crossed on the helmes: the ii. course they met, and Thomelyn brake his spere in tronchions, and Bouciquaut strake hym so sore that he bare hym to the erthe over his horse backe; than his companyon toke hym up and he justed no more. Than another squier of Englande, called Naverton,[1] touched the shelde of sir Bouciquaut, sayeng howe he wolde revenge his company, whom Bouciquaut had overthrowen in his presence, who was redy to answere: the first course they strake eche other in the viser of their helmes, without any other dommage: the ii. course they strake eche other in their sheldes, so that their horses reculed, and brake their speares in thre peces: than they retourned to their places, and toke newe speares, and met agayne togyder: sir Bouciquaut receyved a great stroke on the shelde, but he strake Naverton in suche wyse that he was unhelmed, who ran no more that day, for every man sayde he had well acquyted hymselfe. Than another squyer, called Sequaqueton, an experte man of armes, sente to touche the shelde of Raynolde du Roye; the knyght was redy to answere, well mounted with shelde and speare: they mette so rudely that Sequaqueton bare hymselfe well fro fallynge, for he had suche a stroke that he sore reversed; howbeit, he releved and passed forthe, but he lost his spere: the next course they mette rudely on their helmes, so that the fyre flasshed out: the iii. course Sequaqueton was unhelmed, so that bothe he and his horse were astonyed and retourned to his company, and justed no more that day, nor no man els, for the night aproched. Than the Englysshemen retourned to Calys, and the Frenchmen to saynt Ingylbertes.

[1] *Warneston.*

Ye may well knowe that Charles the Frenche kyng was sore desyrous to be at those justes; he was yonge and lyght of spiryte, and glad to se newe thynges. It was shewed me, that fro the begynning to thendyng he was there present, disgysed as unknowen, so that none knewe hym but

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynst all commers.

the lorde of Garansyers, who came also with hym as unknowen, and every day returned to Margison.[1] Than on the Wednisday the Englisshmen rode fro Calais, and came to the place of the justes: than a squier of Englande, called John Savage, sente to touche the shelde of warre of sir Raynold of Roy: the knight was redy in his pavylion, and issued out and mounted on his horse. Than they came togider with great randon, and strake eche other on their sheldes, in suche wise that if their sheldes had nat broken, outher one of the men or bothe had ben striken to the grounde; this was a goodly and a daungerous course; howbeit, the knightes toke no domage. Their speres brake to their handes, and the heedes stacke styll in their sheldes; every man fered they had ben hurt: so every partie came to their company. And whan it was knowen that they had no hurt, every man was joyfull and sayd, howe they had done ynough for that day. But those wordes pleased nothyng Johan Savage, for he sayd he was nat come over the see to ryn but one course. Those wordes were shewed to sir Raynolde du Roy, and he answered and sayd: It is reason that he be aunswered, outher by me or by some of my company. Than they toke newe sheldes and speares, and ran agayne togyder, but at the cope their horses crossed and so fayled ech other, wherwith they were sore displeased, and for angre cast awaye their speres and toke newe; and at the thirde course they taynted eche other in the syght of their helmes, in suche wyse that bothe were unhelmed; every man praysed that course. The Englysshemen came to Johan Savage, and said, howe he had ryght honorably acquyted hymselfe that daye, and howe he had done ynough, for there were other to ryn. He obeyed and ran no more, and alyghted of his horse, and lept on a small hackeney to se other rynne.

[1] *Marquise.*

Than a squyer of Englande came forthe, cosyn to the erle Marshall, called Wyllyam Hasquenaye:[2] he touched the shelde of sir Bouciquaut; the knyght was redy to answere. They came togyder as streyght as they coude devyse, and strake eche other in the syght of the helmes, in suche wyse that bothe were unhelmed; they passed forthe their course franke and frely: anone, they were agayne helmed, and ran

[2] *Basquenaye* P.

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

togider and strake eche other on their sheldes, and brake their speares withoute any other dommage; the thirde course they crossed, wherwith they were sore displeased; the fourthe course Wyllyam Basquenay was agayne unhelmed, and so ran no more that daye. Than another Englysshe squyer, called Scot, ran agayne the lorde of Saynt Pye; the fyrst course they encountred so rudely, that their horses stakered, and the speres helde, yet they lost their speres; than they made them redy to ryn the seconde course: and they met in suche wyse that the lorde of Saynt Pye was unhelmed, and the squier moche praysed for that course: agayne the thirde course they encountred eche other on the sheldes, in suche wyse that John Scot was stryken downe over his horse crope. Thus the lorde of Saynt Pye was revenged; thenglyssh squyer was releved and brought to his company, and ran no more that day. Than another Englysshe squyer, called Bernarde Stapleton, he touched the shelde of the lorde of Saynt Pye; they came togider and taynted eche other on their helmes that the fyre flasshed out, and so passed by without any other dommage, and kepte styll their speres; the ii. course they mette in their sheldes rudely, yet they kept their horses, and so passed forth their course: the thirde course they unhelmed eche other: thenglyssh squyer ran no more that day. Than stepte forthe a gentyll knyght of Englande, yonge and fresshe, a jolly dauncer and synger, called sir John Arundell: he ran agayne sir Raynold du Roy; at the first course they mette rudely, and strake eche other on their sheldes, but they helde themselfes without fallynge, and passed forthe their course, but they lost their staves: the ii. course they attaynted eche other on their helmes, that sparcles of fyre flewe out without other dommage: the iii. course they crossed and loste their staves: the iiii. course they taynted on their helmes: the v. course they brake their speres on their sheldes, and than sir John Arundell ran no more that day. Than another squyer of Englande, called Nicholas Seon,[1] a proper man of armes, ran agaynst sir Bouciquaut: the first course they strake eche other on their helmes a great attaynt: the ii. course they strake eche other on their sheldes, in suche wyse that their horses were astonyed, and they lost their

[1] *Stone.*

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Inglybertes agaynste all commers.

speares: the iii. course they strake eche other on the helmes, and Nicholas Seon was unhelmed, and ran no more. Than another squyer came forthe, called John Marshall, and ran agaynst sir Bouciquaut, for he was redy lokyng for nothyng but to just; he toke his speare and couched it in the rest: the first course they mette rudelye on their sheldes, and lost their staves: the seconde course they taynted on their helmes: and the third course they advysed well eche other and met rudely; Johan Marshall brake his staffe in thre peces, and sir Boucyquaut strake hym on the helme, in suche wyse that he was unhelmed, and so returned and ran no more that day. Than came forthe a lusty yonge knight of Englande, who desyred greatly to wyn honour, called sir John Clinton: he bare sylver broken with azure, a molet sylver in the chefe. He touched the shelde of sir Reynold du Roye, who was redy to answere, and was gladde of the commynge of that knyght; they came to their places and toke their speares: the fyrst course they taynted on the helmes and passed forthe: the seconde course they strake eche other on their sheldes, and passed by and lost their staves: the thirde course they taynted on their helmes, so that the fyre flewe oute: the fourthe course they crossed: the fyfthe course was well enployed, for eche of them brake their speares. The two knyghtes were sore chafed, and shewed well howe they had gret desyre to prove their selfes: the sixte course eche of them unhelmed other; that course was greatly praysed: the Englysshe knight ran no more that daye, for he had done ynoughe.

Thanne Roger Leau,[1] another Englysshe squyer, avaunced forthe. He bare sylver and sables quarterly, in the myddes a crosse goules. He touched the shelde of the lorde of Saint Pye: the first course they encountred so rudely that their horses were astonied, for their speares helde: the seconde course they taynted on their helmes and passed forthe: at the thirde course Roger Leau was unhelmed, and ranne no more.

[1] *Lamb.*

Than avaunsed forthe a ryght gentyll knight of the nacyon of Heynaulte, in the marchesse of Ostrevaunt, but fro his youthe he had been brought up in the courte of the noble kynge Edwarde of Englande; this knyght was called

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

sir Johan Dambretycourt: he was brother to the good knyght sir Eustace: he bare in his armure partie golde and ermyne; he touched the shelde of sir Raynolde du Roye. The fyrste course they taynted on their helmes, that the fyre folowed: the seconde course they entred so rudely, that it was marveyle howe they scaped without dommage, for eche of them were noble justers, and feared nother payne nor dethe: the thirde course sir Raynolde du Roye was rudely unhelmed, and sir Johan Dambretycourt passed forthe his turne and came agayne to his place; and sir Raynolde du Roye retourned to his company, and shewed howe he wolde no more juste that daye. Than the Englysshe knight desyring to just more, sent to touche the shelde of sir Boucyquaut: they ran toguyder so fiersly, and strake eche other in their sheldes, that it was marveyle they had nat ben pearced throughe: the seconde course they taynted on their helmes, and passed forthe and lost their speares: the thirde course they mette so rudely, that eche of them was unhelmed. Than the Englysshemen drewe toguyder and sawe that it was nerehande nyght, toke their leaves and departed towarde Calais. That nyght there was none other communynge but of the justes that hadde ben done that day. The Frenchemen wente to Margyson, and devysed there at their pleasure.

On the Thursdaye the fourthe day of the weke, the Englysshemen being at Calais, assembled togider all suche as had nat justed, and were come over the see for that entent; they concluded to returne agayne to saynte Ingylbertes to do armes; so they mounted on their horses and rode out of Calays, and came to the place where as the justes shulde be done; there was redy the thre knightes of Fraunce in their pavylions, and suche other as shulde serve them. Fyrst, there came into the place a knight of Englande, called sir Godfray Eustace: he touched the shelde of sir Boucyquaut, who incontynent issued out of his pavylion redy to answere. The knyghtes advysed eche other, and ran toguyder and taynted on their helmes, and passed forthe their course, and kept styll their staves: the seconde course they strake eche other in the myddes of their sheldes, and their speares brake without any dommage, and passed

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

forthe and came agayne to their places: the thirde course eche unhelmed other. The Englysshe knight justed no more, for it was sayd to hym he had right valyauntly acquyted hymselfe, and also that he must suffre other to juste.

Than an Englysshe squier came forthe to juste, called Alayne Borowe: he touched the shelde of the lorde of Saynt Pye: the knyght was redy to answere: the fyrste course they taynted on their helmes that the fyre flewe out, they passed forthe their course and returned agayne to their places: the seconde course they brake bothe their staves: the iii. course they unhelmed eche other. The Englysshman ran no more, for it behoved other to just after. Than another Englysshe squyer, called Scrope, touched the shelde of sir Boucyquaut: the fyrste course they crossed: the seconde course they taynted on their helmes: the thirde course Scrope was overthrowen; than he was releved and brought to his company, and ran no more.

Than a knyght of Behaygne, one of the quene of Englandes knyghtes, called Herchaunce,[1] who bare in his armes sylver, thre gryffens fete sable armed azure, he was demaunded with whome he wolde juste; he answered: With Bouciquaut. Than they made them redy and ran toguyder, but the knyght of Behaygne made a forfaite, wherof he was greatly blamed that he demeaned his course so yvell; the Englysshemen sawe well howe he had forfaite his armure and horse, if the Frenchemen wolde. Of this course there was great communycacyon bytwene the parties, but fynally it was pardoned, the better to please the Englysshemen. Than Herchaunce requyred agayne to juste one course: he was demaunded against whome he wolde ryn: he sente to touche the shelde of sir Raynolde du Roy, and he was redy to answere: the fyrst course they mette in the myddes of their sheldes, and sir Raynolde du Roye, who was one of the best justers in the realme of Fraunce, strake thother knight clene fro his horse, in suche wyse, that menne thought he had been deed. Herchaunce with moche payne was releved and broght to his company. The Englisshemen were nat displeased in that he was overthrowen, bicause he ran the fyrste course so ungoodly. So he ran no more that daye.

[1] *Herre Hans.*

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

Than came in a squyer of Englande, called Robert Storborne.[1] He touched the shelde of the lorde of Saynt Pye, who was redy to answere: the fyrst course they taynted on their helmes: the seconde course they strake in their sheldes and lost their speares: the thirde course eche unhelmed other: the Englysshe squyer ran no more. Than John Morlande touched the shelde of sir Raynold du Roy, who was redy to answere: the first course they taynted on their helmes: the seconde course they encountred eche other that their horses were astonyed, and loste bothe their staves: the thirde course Johan Morlande was stryken to the grounde, he was releved and justed no more. Thanne another squyer, called Johan Moten, he touched the shelde of Bouciquaut: the knyght was redy: the first course they taynted and passed forthe: the seconde course they taynted on their helmes and lost their staves: the thirde course Johan Moton was unhelmed: he ranne no more that daye, but gave place to other.

[1] *Swinburn.*

Than Jaquemyne Scrope touched the shelde of the lorde of Saynt Pye, who was redy mounted: the fyrst course their horses crossed, wherwith they were sore displeased: the seconde course they taynted on their helmes, that the fyre flewe out, and lost their speres; the thirde course Jaquemyne Scrope brake his speare, but the lorde of Saynt Pye strake hym so rudely that he fell over his horse crope to the erthe: he was releved and ranne no more that daye. Than another squier came forthe, called Guyllyam Maquelee; he ran agaynst sir Boucyquaut, who was redy to answere: the firste course they taynted on their helmes, that the fyre flewe out; that course was praysed of every partie: the seconde course they strake eche other in the sheldes and loste their staves: the thirde course they unhelmed eche other, so that bothe sate bareheeded in their coyfes; they ran no more that daye, for they had done ynough. Than another squyer of Englande, called Nycholas Leau, he touched the shelde of the lorde of Saynt Pye, he was redy to answere: the first course they strake eche other so sore on the sheldes, that if their staves had nat broken, it had ben to their great dommage, but they helde themselfes well fro fallyng: the seconde cope they attaynted eche other on the helmes,

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

that the fyre flewe oute, for their strokes crossed, and so passed by: the thyrde was a goodly course, for they strake eche other so evin in the sight of their helmes, that eche of them unhelmed other so clerely, that their helmes flewe into the felde over their horse cropes. The justers ceased for that daye, for there was none Englissheman that offred to just any more that day. Than the erle of Huntyngdon, and the erle Marshall, and the lorde Clyfforde, the lorde Beamont, sir Johan Clynton, sir Johan Dambretycourt, sir Peter Shyrborne, and all other knyghtes that had justed those four dayes with the French knightes, thanked them greatly of their pastaunce, and said: Syrs, all suche as wolde juste of our partie have accomplisshed their desyres, wherfore nowe we wyll take leave of you: we wyll returne to Calays, and so into Englande; and we knowe well that who soever wyll just with you shall fynde you here these thyrty dayes, acordynge to the tenoure of your chalenge; and we ones come into Englande, such knightes as desyre to do dedes of armes, we shall desyre them to come to vysite you. The thre knyghtes thanked them, and sayd: They shall be right hertely welcome, and we shall delyver them acordynge to the ryght of armes, as we have done you; and moreover we thanke you of the curtesy that ye have shewed to us. Thus in curtes maner the Englysshemen departed fro saynte Ingilbertes, and rode to Calays, where they taryed nat longe: for the Saturdaye after, they toke shyppynge and sayled to Dover, and was there by noone: and the Sondaye they rode to Rochester, and the nexte day to London, and so every man to his owne. The thre Frenche knyghtes kepte styll their place at saynt Ingylbertes. The Frenche kinge, and the lorde of Garancyers, who had ben there all that season, was unknowen, whan the Englysshemen were departed, they never seased rydynge tyll they came to Crayll, on the ryver of Oyse, where the quene was at that tyme. After that the Englysshemen came into Englande, I herde nat that any mo came over to do any dedes of armes at saynte Ingylbertes; howebeit, the thre Frenche knyghtes helde styll their place tyll their thyrty dayes were accomplysshed; and than at their leysar they retourned every manne, and came to Parys to se the kyng, and the

CAP. CLXIIII

Of the dedes of armes at saint Ingylbertes agaynste all commers.

duke of Thourayne, and other lordes that were at Parys at that tyme, who made them good chere, as reason requyred: for they had valyauntly borne themselfe, wherby they atcheved gret honour of the kyng, and of the realme of Fraunce.

CAP. CLXV

Of the enterpryse and voyage of the knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande, and of the duke of Burbone, who was chefe of that army, at the requeste of the Genovoys, to go into Barbary, to besiege the strong towne of Auffryke.

I SHALL nowe declare the maner of an hygh and noble enterprise that was done in this season, by knightes of Fraunce, of England, and of other countreys, in the realme of Barbary. Syth I have concluded the armes that was doone at saynt Ingylbertes, nowe wyll I shewe of other maters, for to me it is great pleasure to declare them: for if pleasure had nat inclyned me to write, and to enquyre for the trouthe of many matters, I had never come to an ende as I have done. Nowe sayeth the texte of the mater that I wyll procede on, that in this season newes spredde abrode in Fraunce, and in dyvers other countreys, that the Genovoys wolde make an army to go into Barbary, with gret provysion, as well of bysquet, as fresshe water and wyneger, with gales and vesselles for all knyghtes and squyers that wolde go in that voyage. The cause that moved them thus to do, I shall shewe you. Of a longe tyme the Affrycans had made warre by see on the fronters of the Genovoys, and pylled and robbed their ilandes, suche as were obeysant to them, and also the ryver of Genes lay ever in parell and daunger of them of Auffryke, whiche was a stronge towne on that parties, garnysshed with gates, towres, and hyghe and thycke walles, depe dykes. And lyke as the stronge towne of Calays is the key, wherby whosoever is lorde therof may entre into the realme of Fraunce, or into Flaunders, at his pleasure, and maye by

see or by lande sodenly invade with great puyssaunce, and do many great feates; in lykewyse by comparyson this towne of Auffryke is the key of the Barbaryns, and of the realme of Auffryke, and of the realmes of Bougie,[1] and Thunes, and of other realmes of the Infydeles in those parties. This towne dyd moch dyspleasure to the Genovoys, who are greate marchauntes: and by them of Aufryke they were oftentymes taken on the see, as they went or returned fro their feate of marchaundyses. Than the Genovoys, who were ryche and puyssaunt bothe by lande and by see, havyng great sygnories, they regarded the dedes of the Affrycans, and also consydred the complayntes of suche isles as were under their obeysaunce, as the isle Dable,[2] the isle of Syre,[3] the isle of Guerse,[4] the isle of Bostan,[5] the isle of Gorgennem,[6] and unto the Gulfe of Lyon, and to the isles of Sardonne, and Finisse,[7] and unto the isle of Mayllorke, whiche thre isles be under the obeysaunce of the kynge of Aragon. Than the Genovoys by comon acorde agreed to sende into the Frenche courte, and to offre to all knightes and squiers that wolde go with them to besiege this towne of Aufryke, to fynde them galees, and other vessels, charged with bysquet, swete water, and wyneger, at their coste and charge: so that one of the Frenche kynges uncles, or els his brother the duke of Thourayn, who was yong and lusty, and lykely to conquere honour, shulde be capytayne generall. And the Genovoys furthermore promised xii. thousande crosbowes Genovoys well furnysshed, and eyght thousande of other with speares and pavesses, at their cost and charge. This the Genovoys dyde, bycause they knewe that there was a trewce bytwene Englande and Fraunce for thre yere, wherfore they supposed that knyghtes and squyers, as well of Fraunce as of Englande, wolde be glad to be doynge in some parte.

CAP. CLXV
Of the enterpryse and voyage of the knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande.

[1] *Bougne* P.
[2] *Elba.*
[3] *Ischia.*
[4] *Corsica.*
[5] *Volcano.*
[6] *Gorgona.*
[7] *Sicily.*

Whan tydynges came first into Fraunce of this voyage, the knightes and squiers of the countrey were right joyfull; and the messangers fro Genne were aunswered that they shulde nat departe tyll they were well herde, and so to have socour, their request was so reasonable, as to the augmentynge of the Crysten faythe. Thus they were caused to tary a season at Parys, there to debate that mater, and to se who

CAP. CLXV
Of the enterpryse and voyage of the knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande.

shulde be chefe soverayne of the armye for that voyage, and to whome every man shulde obey. The duke of Thourayne of his owne voluntary wyll offred hymselfe to go: but the kyng and his uncles wolde in no wyse agree therto, sayenge, howe it was no voyage for hym, and they consydred well howe the Genovoys desyred outher to have him, or els one of the kynges uncles. Than it was agreed that the duke of Burbone, uncle to the kynge, shulde be soveraygne and chefe of that armye, and shulde have in his company the lorde of Coucy. Whan the ambassadours of Gene were aunswered, that it was concluded without fayle that they shulde have ayde of knightes and squyers of Fraunce, and the kynges uncle, the duke of Burbone, to be soverayne and chefe capytayne: wherof these ambassadours were well contente, and toke their leave of the kynge and of his counsayle, and retourned into their owne countrey. Tydinges anon spred abrode in the realme of Fraunce of this voyage into Barbary. To some it was plesaunt, and to some nat delectable, and many that wolde have gone, wente nat: there was none that went but on their owne charge and coste: no lorde sente any but of their owne servauntes. Also it was ordeyned that none shulde passe of the nacyon of Fraunce, without lycence of the kynge, for the kynge wolde nat that so many shulde have gone, to leave the realme destitute of knyghtes and squyers. Also it was agreed that no varlettes shulde passe, but all gentlemen, and men of feate and defence. Also to please all other nacyons, knyghtes and squiers, straungers, had fre lyberty to come and to entre into this honorable voyage, wherof all knyghtes straungers greatly praysed the Frenche kynge and his counsayle for that dede. The duke of Burbone, who was one of the chefe of the realme, sent incontynent his officers to Gennes, to make provysyon acordynge to his astate. The gentle erle of Auvergne sent also to Gennes to make his provysions, and the lorde of Coucy was nat behynde; also syr Guy de la Tremoyle, and sir Johan of Vyen, admyrall of Fraunce, and all other lordes and knightes, suche as were ordeyned to go in that voyage, sent to make their provysions, every man after his degree; also so dyd sir Philyppe de Arthoys, erle of Ewe, and sir Phylip of Bare, the lorde of

Harcourt, sir Henry Dantoinge. Also out of Bretayne and Normandy, many lordes and other aparelled themselfes to go into Barbary; also of Haynalt, the lorde of Ligne, the lorde of Havrech; and for them of Flaunders there was great provysion made. Also the duke of Lancastre had a bastarde sonne, called Henry of Lancastre: he had devocion to go in the same voyage, and he provyded him of good knightes and squyers of Englande that acompanyed hym in that voyage. The erle of Foiz sent his bastarde sonne, called Jobbayne of Foiz, well provyded with knightes and squiers of Bierne. Every man provyded themselfes nobly, and eche for other: and about the myddes of May, they that were furthest of fro Gene set forwarde to come to Gennes, where as the assemble was apoynted, and where as all their galees and vesselles were assembled: it was a moneth or they coude all assemble there. The Genovoys were right joyfull of their comyng, and gave great presentes to the chiefe lordes, the better therby to wynne their loves: they were nombred whan they were togyther by the marshals xiiii. hundred knyghtes and squyers. Than they entred into the galees and vesselles that were provyded for them, well furnisshed of all thynges necessary. Thus they departed fro the porte of Gennes aboute the feest of mydsomer, in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and ten.

CAP. CLXV
Of the enterpryse and voyage of the knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande.

Great pleasure it was to beholde their departynge, and to se their standardes, getorns, and penons, wavynge in the wynde, and shynynge against the sonne, and to here the trompettes and claryons sownyng in the ayre, with other mynstrelsy. The fyrste night they lay at ancre at the entryng into the high see; all varlettes and horses abode behynde; a horse that was worthe fyfty frankes at their departyng was solde for ten frankes, for there were many knyghtes and squiers that wyste nat whan they shulde returne; they coulde nat have fyve horses kept at Gennes for a franke a daye, and therfore at their departynge they made money of them, and that was but lytell. There were a hundred galees garnisshed with men of warre, crosbowes, and pavesses, and mo than a C. of other vessels laden with provysion and other necessaryes. The next day at the breke of the daye they weyed ancres, and rowed all that day by force

CAP. CLXV
Of the enterpryse and voyage of the knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande.

of owers, and the nyght folowynge, costyng the lande. The thyrde day they came to Portefyn, and there cast ancre, and taryed there all that night: and the next day they came to another porte and towne, called the porte Vender, and there taryed and refresshed them. The next day they passed further into the gret see in the name of God and Our Lady and saynte George; and firste they founde the isle of Dable,[1] and than the isle of Guerfe,[2] the isle of Argenen,[3] and the isle of Sardyns, and passed the Gulfe of Lyon, which was a daungerous and a doutfull passage, but they coulde nat eschewe it the waye that they toke: they were there in great parell all to have ben lost. The season was so troublus, and tempestes so terryble, that the wysest maryner that there was coude gyve no counsaile but to abyde the adventure, and the wyll of God, wherby the flete departed asonder, some here and some there, they wyst never where: this tempest endured a day and a night. Whan this tempest was sest, and the wyndes pacifyed, than the patrons and pylottes set their courses to drawe to the isle of Commeres,[4] a xxx. myle fro Auffryke, and fro the towne thyder as they entended to go. For at the goynge out of the Gulfe of Lyon, the patrones sayde one to another, If it fortune that we be driven asonder by force of wynde and wether, than lette us drawe to the isle of Commeres, and there lette us tary eche for other. And as they hadde devysed so they dyd, for the fyrst that came thyder taryed tyll the last came, and or all coulde assemble there togyder it was a nyne daies. This isle of Commeres is a pleasaunt isle, though it be nat gret: there the lordes refresshed theym, and thanked God whan they sawe they had loste none of their company. Thanne the lordes and patrons toke counsayle what was best for them to do, consyderinge they were so nere the towne of Aufryke.

Nowe I wyll leave to speke of these lordes of Fraunce for a season, and speke of other maters that was done in that season in Fraunce, and specyally in the countrey of Auvergne, in the marches of the lande of the erle Dolphyn, who was forthe in the sayd voyage.

[1] *Elba.*
[2] *Corsica.*
[3] *Gorgona.*
[4] *Conigliera.*

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, a robber and a pyller of the countrey, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue, called the Roche of Vandois: and howe it was besieged by the vicount of Meaulx, and of the takynge therof; and howe Aymerygotte was taken and brought to Parys.

IN this season whyle this assemble was a making to go into Barbary for a good entente, as to exalte the Crysten faythe, certayne robbers and pyllers in Auvergne, and Rouergue, and in Lymosyn, were of contrary myndes: for though the countreis thought themselfe in suretie, by reason of the chartre of the treuce that was taken bytwene Englande and Fraunce, whiche had ben proclaymed and publysshed in all fortresses, and before all the capitayns that made any warre, or helde any fortresses of the Englissh parte: and an artycle there was, that whosoever brake or violated any poynt or artycle comprised in the treaty shulde receyve punyssyon of dethe, without hope of any remyssion: and specially Perot le Bernoys, capytayne of Caluset, Amergot Marcell, Olyve Barbe, capytayne of Dousac, in the marches of Auvergne, were enclosed by name in the charter of the treuse, to the entent that if they or any of theirs dyd or consented to do any thynge contrary, that they shulde nat excuse themselfe. Some of the capytayns that feared to dye a shamefull dethe, or to rynne into the indygnacion of the Frenche kynge, helde surely all the poyntes of the charter; but some dyd nat so, whiche they derely bought, as ye shall here after.

Ye shall knowe, as it hath ben here before rehersed, howe Johan, erle of Armynake, and Bernarde, dolphyn of Auvergne, and therle Clermounte, were in treatye with certayne capytayns that helde fortresses in the said countreys agaynst the Frenche kynge. These sayd lordes made suche dylygence that they brought dyvers of these capytayns to

CAP. CLXVI

Ofacapytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

composycion, and to the sellyng of their fortresses. Their treaty and composicyon was that they shulde renounce the warre bytwene Englande and Fraunce, and durynge the treuce they to go with the erle of Armynake into Lombardy, or whyder as he wolde leade them, to ayde hym in his warre agaynst the lorde Galeas erle of Vertues, who had disheryted his cosyn germayns, chyldren to his uncle the lorde Barnabo, as it hath ben shewed here before; and so, what to have their ayde, and to avoyde the countrey of these robbers and pyllers, (who had done so moche hurte in the countrey, bothe to men and women,) the sayd erle of Armynake, and the erle Dolphyn his cosyn, toke gret payne in that mater. And at the instant requestes and prayers of the good menne of the cyties and townes of the playne countreys aforesayd, so that there was a tayle gadred in Auvergne, Guynaldan,[1] Rouergue, Carnosyn, and in Lymosyn, to the somme of two hundred thousande frankes, so that poore and riche payed so moch, that dyvers solde and layde to pledge their herytages, and were glad so to do to lyve at reste in their countreys. And the good men thought by reson of payeng of this money, and advoydyng of the sayd fyve robbers and pyllers, that they shulde than have ben quyte for ever of them: but it proved nat so in dyvers places, and specially of Aymergot Marcell, and of his men. For after that the castell of Aloys was yelden up and solde by Aymergot Marcell, to the erle of Armynake, whiche fortresse stode in the herte of all Auvergne, this Aymergot was well worthe in redy money a hundred thousande frankes, whiche he had goten by robory and pyllage, and by raunsominge of men, and patesynge of the countrey, and he had kept that rule more than ten yere. Therle of Armynake desyred gretly to have in his company the sayd Aymergot Mercell, and thought nat to leave him behynde him for two reasons. One was, bycause he wolde gladly have the counsayle and advyse of hym, for he was experte and subtyle in all feates of armes, both in sautynge, scalynge, and stealynge of fortresses. The seconde reason was, the erle feared that if this Aymergot shulde abyde behynde in the countrey, thoughe he hadde solde to hym the fortresse of Aloyse, and other fortresses, yet he might do moche domage in the countrey of Auvergne, and Rouergue:

[1] *Gévaudan.*

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

wherfore therle made great labour to have him. But alwayes Aymergot dissymuled the mater, and said: Whan I se the certaynte[1] of the erle of Armynakes departyng, than I knowe myne owne wyll is so good that I wyll nat byde behynde. Other aunswere the erle coulde nat get of hym. The erle of Armynake laye at Commynge, and aboute Tholousyn, in his countrey, and there made his assemble, whiche voyage had been more hasted, and the voyage into Auffryke hadde nat been, that letted hym a season: for dyvers knyghtes and squyers that went in that voyage had promysed hym, and this voyage into Barbary came so sodenly, that it hyndred his voyage. Whan tydynges was knowen in Fraunce of the treaties that the erle of Armynake had made with the sayde capytayns in Auvergne, there was made as moche haste as myght be to pay the money to the capytayns.

[1] *certayne* P.

Aymergot Marsell was sore dyspleased with hymselfe in that he had solde and delivered the stronge castell of Aloyse: for he sawe his owne auctorite therby greatly abated, and parceyved well howe he was the lesse feared. For all the season that he kept it, he was doubted and feared, and honoured with all men of warre of his parte, and had kept a great astate alwayes in the castell of Aloyse: the patesynge of countreys that he helde under subjection was well worth yerely twenty thousande florayns. Whan he remembred all this he was soroufull; his tresour he thought he wolde nat mynysshe; he was wonte dayly to serche for newe pyllages, wherby encresed his profyte, and than he sawe that all was closed fro hym. Than he sayde and imagyned, that to pyll and to robbe, all thynge consydered, was a good lyfe, and so repented hym of his good doing. On a tyme he said to his olde companyons: Sirs, there is no sporte nor glory in this worlde amonge men of warre, but to use suche lyfe as we have done in tyme past; what a joy was it to us whan we rode forthe at adventure, and somtyme founde by the way a ryche priour or marchaunt, or a route of mulettes of Mountpellyer, of Narbone, of Lymous, of Fougans, of Besyers, of Tholous, or of Carcassone, laden with clothe of Bruselles, or peltre ware, comynge fro the fayres, or laden with spycery fro Bruges, fro Damas, or

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

fro Alysaunder; whatsoever we met all was ours, or els raunsomed at our pleasures; dayly we gate newe money, and the vyllaynes of Auvergne, and of Lymosyn, dayly provyded and brought to our castell whete mele, breed redy baken, otes for our horses, and lytter, good wynes, beffes, and fatte mottons, pullayne, and wylde foule: we were ever furnysshed as though we had ben kinges: whan we rode forth all the countrey trymbled for feare, all was ours goynge or comynge. Howe toke we Carlaste, I and the Bourge of Compayne, and I and Perot of Bernoys tooke Caluset. Howe dyd we scale with lytell ayde the stronge castell of Marquell, pertayning to the erle Dolphyn. I kepte it nat past fyve dayes but I receyved for it on a fayre table fyve thousande frankes, and forgave one thousande for the love of the erle Dolphyns chyldren. By my faythe this was a fayre and a good lyfe, wherfore I repute myself sore disceyved in that I have rendred up the fortres of Aloys: for it wolde have ben kepte fro all the worlde; and the daye that I gave it up, it was fournysshed with vytayles to have been kepte seven yere without any revytaylynge. This erle of Armynake hathe dysceyved me; Olyve Barbe, and Perot le Bernoys, shewed me howe I shulde repente myselfe: certayne I sore repent me of that I have done. And whan suche of his companyons as had served hym longe, herde hym speke those wordes, they parceyved well howe he spake them with all his herte unfayned. Than they sayd to hym: Aymergot, we are all redy yet to serve you: lette us renewe agayne our warre, and lette us gette some stronge holde in Auvergne, or in Lymosyn, and let us fortifye it, and than syr we shall soone recover our domages. We shall make a goodly flyght in Auvergne, and in Lymosyn, for as nowe the erle Dolphyn, and Hugh his brother, are out of the countrey, and dyvers other knightes and squyers in their company into the voyage of Barbary, and specyally the lorde of Coucy, who hath the soverayne regarde under the kynge of all those marches; therfore we shall nat nede to feare hym, nor the duke of Berrey, for he is at Parys, so thus we shall have nowe a good season. Well, quod Aymergot, I have good wyll thus to do, savynge I ame by name expressed in the chartre of the treuce. What for that syr, quod his company:

ye nede nat care therfore if ye lyste; ye are nat subgiecte to the Frenche kynge, ye owe hym nother faythe nor obeysayunce: ye are the kynge of Englandes manne, for your herytage, whiche is all dystroyd and lost, lyeth in Lymosyn; and syr, we must lyve. And though we make warre to lyve, the Englysshmen wyll nat be myscontent with us, and suche as be in our case wyll drawe to us. And syr, we have nowe good tytle to make warre, for we be nat now in Auvergne, where the covenaunte was made that we be bounde unto: lette us sende to the vyllyans of the vyllages whanne we be ones in a stronge holde, and commaunde them to paye us a truage, or els to make theym sore warre. Well syrs, quod Aymergot, fyrst lette us provyde for a stronge place to abyde in, and to drawe unto whan we nede. Some of theym sayde, Syr, we knowe where there is a stronge holde, with a lytell newe fortifyenge, pertaynynge to the herytage of the lorde of the Towre: no man kepeth it: lette us drawe thyder and fortifye it, than may we at our ease rynne into Auvergne and Lymosyn. Where lyeth this place, quod Aymergot. Syr, quod they, within a leage of the Towre, and it is called the Roche of Vandoys.[1] It is trewe, quod Aymergot, I knowe it well: it is a mete place for us, lette us go thyder and fortify it. Thus on this purpose they concluded, and on a day assembled togyther and wente to the Roche of Vandoys. Than Aymergote avewed the place to se if it were worthe the fortifyenge therof: and whan he had well avewed the sytuacion therof, and the defences that myght be made there, it pleased hym ryght well. Thus they toke it and fortifyed it lytell and lytell, or they began to do any dyspleasure in the countrey: and whan they sawe the place stronge sufficyently to resyst agaynste syege or assaute, and that they were well horsed, and well provyded of all thynges necessary for their defence, than they beganne to ryde abrode in the countrey, and tooke prisoners and raunsomed them, and provyded their holde with flesshe, meale, waxe, wyne, salte, yron, and stele, and of all other necessaryes; there came nothynge amysse to theym without it hadde ben to hevy or to hote. The countrey all aboute, and the people, wenynge to have ben in reste and peace by reason of the truce made bytwene the

[1] *Vendat.*

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

two kinges and their realmes, they began than to be sore abasshed: for these robbers and pyllers toke them in their houses, and where so ever they founde them, in the feldes laborynge; and they called themselfes adventurers. Whanne the lorde of the Towre knewe that he had suche neyghbours so nere hym, he was nat well assured of hymselfe, but fortifyed and made good watche in all his townes and castelles. The countesse of Dolphyn, a ryght valyaunt lady, and of great prudence, beinge with her chyldren in a good towne and stronge castell of hers, called Sardes, she was nat well assured of herselfe whan she herde that Aymergotte and his company had fortifyed the Roche of Vandoys. She sent incontynente to all her castell, and furnysshed them with men of warre, as Marquell, Oudable,[1] Chyllac, and Blere, and into other places, to the entente they shulde nat be surprised, for she greatly douted this Aymergot, bycause he hadde of her before at one paymente fyve thousande florayns: surely all the countrey of Auvergne, and Lymosyn, began greatlye to be afrayde. Thanne the knyghtes and squyers, and men of the good townes, as of Cleremount, of Mounte Ferante, and of Ryon, determyned to sende to the Frenche kinge: and so they dyd.

[1] *Vodable.*

In the meane season, whyle the sayde countesse, and the other good men of the countrey, dyd sende to the Frenche kinge, and to the duke of Berrey, who as than were at Parys, Aymergot and his company fortifyed greatly the Roche of Vandoys: first, they made a lodgynge for their horses. Whan all other adventurers who were discharged out of wages herde howe Aymergot made warre agayne, they were ryght joyfull therof, and many came to hym: anone, he had mo of these robbers and pyllers than he wolde have; they demaunded no wages of hym, but all onely that they myght be of his bande, for all suche as myght be of his company, they knewe well they shulde lyghtly wynne somewhat, for they were habandoned to robbe and to pyll. Thus they rode up and downe and made themselfe to be knowen in dyvers places: there was no spekynge in Auvergne, and Lymosyn, but of them of Roche Vandoys: the countrey was sore afrayde. They of Caluset, wherof Perotte le Bernoys was capytayne, helde and kepte fermely the truce that was

made; and whan he sawe that Aymergot Marcell overranne so the countrey, he was sore dyspleased with hym, and sayde howe he dyd yvell, and sent hym worde that he nor none of his shulde come into Caluset, nor into none other place where he had any rewle. Aymergot cared nothynge for that, for he hadde places ynowe to drawe unto; besyde that he had menne ynowe, and dayly encreased, for suche as were mynded to do yvell, drewe to hym dayly. Perot of Bernoys charged suche as were under his reule, on payne of their lyves that none shulde ryde out to do any domage to his neighbours, for he sayde he wolde surely kepe the trewce. Olyve Barbe, capytayne of Ousac, dyssymuled the mater, sayeng, howe he wolde kepe the treuce; howebeit, as it was shewed me, some of his men somtyme wolde ryde forthe secretlye, and what they wanne, he wolde have the profyte therof. The men of the countreys of Cleremount, of Mount Ferant, and of Ryon, who were goynge in message to the Frenche kynge, and to the duke of Berrey, they sped so in their journeys that they came to Parys, and there founde the kynge, the duke of Berrey, the duke of Thourayne, and the constable of Fraunce, sir Olyver of Clysson. They came fyrste to the duke of Berrey, and to his counsayle, and shewed the cause of their commyng; howe Aymergot Marcell made warre, and dystroyed the countrey of Auvergne, and howe the yvell people daily multyplyed, wherfore they desyred for Goddessake to have some remedy; sayenge, if these yvell people shulde longe contynewe, they wolde distroy the countrey of Auvergne, and the fronters of Lymosyn. Whan these tydynges came to the kynge and to the duke of Berrey, they were sore dyspleased, for they had thought all had ben in peace by reason of the treuce: than the kyng demaunded if they of the garyson of Caluset, and Ousac, dyd any yvell or nat. They aunswered and sayd, they complayned of no man, but al onely of Aymergot Marcell, and of his company, who hathe fortifyed the Roche of Vandoys. Thanne the kynge and the duke of Berrey aunswered and sayd: Syrs, ye good people take good hede to yourselfes, and we shall provyde shortely a remedy, that ye shall well perceyve; retourne to your places, and shewe this aunswere to theym that sente you hyther. These good

CAP. CLXVI

Ofacapytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

men of Auvergne were well content with their aunswere, and taryed there two dayes, and thanne retourned and toke their leave, specyally of the duke of Berrey, and so departed.

The frenche kynge and his counsayle forgate nat these tydynges, nor the duke of Berrey, whome the matter touched greatly, bycause he helde great herytages in Auvergne: therfore he avaunced the busynesse. Ye have herde here before howe the lorde of Coucy was ordayned by the kynge and his counsayle to be capitayne and to have the soveraygne rewle of all the countrey, fro the see by Rochell unto the ryver of Dordone, and to Burdeaux on the ryver of Geron. As than the lorde of Coucy was nat in the countrey, he was goynge in the voyage to Barbary, with other lordes of Fraunce, and of other countreis. Howebeit, at his departynge he ordayned his cosyn sir Robert of Bethune, vycount of Meaulx, to be his lyeutenaunt in the sayde countrey. Than the kyng sayde, howe it was moost metest that the vycount of Meaulx shulde have the charge of that voyage to go into Languedocke, rather thane any other persone. He was at Counde,[1] on the ryver of Marne: the kynge wrote to him: the messangere founde hym with his wyfe at Counde, and there he delyvered his letters fro the Frenche kynge. The vycount receyved theym, and whane he knewe what they mente, he sayde he wolde obey the kynges commaundement. He prepared hymselfe, as soone as he myght, and departed fro Counde, and rode so long that he came to Parys, where he founde the kynge and his counsayle, who sayd unto hym: Vycount, make you redy, assemble the men of warre of your retynue, for ye must go into Auvergne; there be of thes pyllers and robbers, of whome Aymergotte Mercell is chiefe, as we be enfourmed, who distroyeth and sore traveyleth the good people there. Do ye so moche as to drive theym out of that countrey; and if ye maye attrap the sayde Aymergotte bring hym to us, and we shall have great joye therof. It is ordayned that there shal be delyvered to you suche sommes of money at Cleremount, that shall suffyce for your men of warre; and to go fro hens thider speke to oure treasourers, and they shall delyver you for your

[1] *Condé.*

expenses; make haste, for it requyreth dyligence. The vycount aunswered howe he was redy, and so went to his lodging, and there he wrote letters to knyghtes and squyers in Fraunce and Picardy, of his acquayntaunce and retynewe, that they in all hast shulde mete with hym at Charters, and there to make their musters. Such as he wrote unto obeyed, they loved the vycount, for they helde hym for a good capitayne. So they came to the cytie of Charters at their day prefyxed. There assembled a two hundred speares of good men of warre: whane they were assembled they departed fro Charters, and tooke the way towardes Auvergne, and so came into Burbonoys. Tidynges came into Auvergne, howe socours was commyng to them out of Fraunce, wherof all the countrey was rejoysed.

CAP. CLXVI

Ofa capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

It was nedefull that these men of warre came thyder so soone as they dyde, for and they hadde taryed but sixe dayes lengar, Aymergot Marcell and his bande had thought to have overrone the playne countrey bytwene Cleremount and Mountferante, and about Ryon, to Ganape.[1] And if they had made that voyage they hadde done great dommage to the countrey, more to the valewe than a hundred thousande frankes: for in those marchesse laye the rychesse of Auvergne, and no man shulde have resysted them, for the countrey as thane was voyde of any man of warre. And also the brute was, that Aymergotte Mercelles company was farre mo in nombre thane they were indede. Aymergotte was redy to have made this journey, but tidynges came to hym howesoever it was by pylgrimes or by espyes, that the vycount of Meaulx with a great company was comynge agaynst hym to make hym warre, and to putte hym out of his fortresse of the Roche of Vandoys. These newes letted his enterprice, and kepte hymselfe within his holde, and thought they shulde be besieged. Than Aymergot Marcell began to dought, and repented hym of that he hadde done, for he knewe well if that he were takenne, there shulde no raunsome go for hym. Thanne he sayd to some of his company, I am shamed; I have beleved yvell counsayle; covytousnesse shall distroye me, without I have conforte. Thane they sayde to hym, Sir, why dought ye thus? We have sene you the hardyest man of armes of all these

[1] *Gannat.*

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

marchesse; we have a good garyson and well provyded, and we are men of defence, and love as well to defende oure bodyes as ye do to defende yours; ye can lese nothynge but we must lese also: if by adventure ye be taken, ye shall make your fynaunce accordynge to reason; ye have good ynoughe, and we have nothynge: if we be taken, it lyeth on our heedes, we gette none other remission; we shall sell our lyves dere. Lette us defende ourselfe as well as we can; be nat abasshed with any thynge that we here or se: we thynke we shall natte nede to care for any siege: lette us warre wisely. Thus these companyons conforted Aymergot Marcell.

The vycounte of Meaulx with his company came forward tyll they came to Moleyns in Burbonoys. There the duchesse of Burbone, doughter to the erle Dolphyn, receyved the vycount and his knightes ryght honorably, and made theym to dyne. Than they passed forthe and laye that nyght at saynt Pursant, and fro thens to Ganape, and so to Argre Prose,[1] and than to Ryon, and fro thens to Cleremount, where they were well receyved with the bysshoppe and with theym of the towne. There the men of warre had money, for there was a tayle gadered and delyvered at Cleremont. Thanne they passed forthe and came to Our Lady of Dorcivall, a four leagues fro the Roche of Vandoyes. There the vycount rested, and sente for the knyghtes and squyers of Auvergne and of Lymosyn. There they assembled; they were than to the nombre of foure hundred speares one and other, and about a hundred crosbowes of Genowayes. There was with the vycounte of Meaulxe the lorde of Montague, Vermendisyens, and his brother the lorde of Dommart, and sir Bernard de la Ryver, sir Guyllyam Butler, the lorde of Domme,[2] the lorde de la Roche, the lorde of the Towre, sir Loys Daubyer, the lorde of saynt Ampysse, and sir Robert Dalphyn, and dyvers other. And capitayns of the Genowayes were two valyaunt squyers, the one named Aubert of Nespynolle,[3] and Callyvace. And as than chefe stewarde with the vycount of Meaulx was a gentyll squyer called Loyes of Lesglynell.[4] These Genowayes and crosbowes were armed at all peces, elles they shulde nat have past wages with the vycount.

[1] *Aigueperse.*

[2] *Donnée.*

[3] *Espinette.*

[4] *Glisuelle.*

CAP. CLXVI

Ofacapytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

Whane Aymergot Marcell and Guyot du Sall his uncle, understode that these men of war of Fraunce, of Picardy, of Auvergne, and of Gene, were come to Our Lady of Dorcyvall,[1] and were mynded to come and laye siege to their holde of Roche Vandoys, than they advysed what was best for them to do to make defence. Firste, they consydred well that it was nat for them to kepe any horse, seyng they shulde be besieged. Nat farre of fro the Roche of Vandois there was another stronge holde, called saynt Souperye, under the rule of Aymergotte Mercell, and there was his wyfe, and thyder he sente all his pages and horses and the moost parte of all his rychesse. This Roche of Vandoys was well fortifyed, and it stode in a stronge grounde. The lorde of the Towre was sore blamed of them of the countrey that he had lefte that place unfortifyed and unprovyded. It was commonly sayde in Auvergne, that they myght thanke the lorde of the Towre, for all the dommage they had taken, bicause he might well have kepte the Roche of Vandoys; or if he wolde nat have kepte it for cost, he myght have delyvered it to the men of the countrie, that they myght have rased it in suche wyse that it shulde nat have ben tenable; but he left the walles hole and entyer as he founde them. This Roche of Vandoys is sette amonge highe mountayns, and that rocke standeth aparte, and on the one syde the walles be of a rocke: they had so fortifyed it, that it coude nat be assayled but on the fore parte by scrymysshynge. The vycount of Meaulx departed fro Our Lady of Dorcynall, and knightes and squyers, and Genovoys crosbowes, and so came before the Roche of Vandoys; there, lyke good men of warre, they layde their siege, and lytell and lytell amended their lodgynges. Whane the countesse of Alfyne,[1] beinge at Sardes, knewe the trewe tidynges that the Roche of Vandoys was besieged, she was right joyfull. And bycause that she thought that the vicount of Meaulx was come so farre as out of Fraunce and Picardy, that he had brought with hym no tentes nor pavilyons, she ordayned for hym two fayre and good tentes, parteyning to therle Dolphyn, and sente them to the vycount, by maner of lendynge of them to hym, durynge the siege. The vycount toke the present in good gree, and recommaunded hym

[1] *Dornall* P.

[1] *la contesse dauffine.*

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

hertely to the countesse, thankyng her for the tentes that she had sente hym, for they shulde do hym good servyce. The lorde of the Towre was in his owne countrey, and was within a myle of a castell of his owne, so that he lacked nothyng: other knyghtes and squiers made provision as well as they myght. They had vitaylles plentie fro all partes at a resonable price: the season was fayre, drie, and hote, as in the moneth of August. The knyghtes and other companyons refresshed theymselfes under the grene bowes. Than tidynges came into the hoost that dyde put the lordes and their companyons in dout. It was shewed them that the garisons of their ennemyes, as of Calucet and of Dousacke,[1] assembled toguyder, and were determyned in a morenynge to awake the hoost or they were ware, and to reyse the siege. Than the vycount of Meaulx and his knyghtes toke counsayle togyder, and determyned to sende a heraude to Perot of Bernoys, capitayne of Calusette, and to Olyve Barbe, capitayne of Donsac, to knowe their myndes, to the entent that they were nat surprised, but that they myght be assured of the Englysshe garysons; and accordyng as they had aunswere agayne, therafter to provyde for themselfe. They sente an heraude, and enstructed hym what he shulde do and saye. The heraulde departed fro the hoost, and rode to Caluset, and there by adventure founde Perotte at the barryers with many of his company, who were there sportyng and castyng the stone. Than the messanger lyghted from his horse and demaunded for the capitayne: he was brought to hym, and whan he came before hym, he dyde his message fro poynt to poynt. Than Perot le Bernoys sayde: Heraude, saye to youre maysters, that we wyll holde and kepe as affermely and trewly the treuce that is taken bytwene Englande and Fraunce, in lyke maner as we wolde they shulde kepe with us; and if we knowe any of ours that wyll breke or vyolate the peace by any maner of incydent, if we maye take them, we shall do suche correctyon as aparteyneth to be doone, as we have promysed. And we wyll that ye saye to youre maysters, that loke what Aymergotte hath done was without our counsayle, for he never shewed us of his

[1] *Ousach.*

purpose: we dyde charge hym and all his that he shulde nat medyll in our seignorie; if he dyde, he shulde have an yvell ende. The heraulde was hadde into the fortresse, and there dyned. Than he tooke leave, and there was gyven hym ten frankes; than he departed, and demaunded the way to Dousacke, and founde there Olyve Barbe, capitayne of that fortresse. The heraulde spake to hym in lyke maner as he hadde doone to Perot le Bernoys. Olyve Barbe answered, that in no wyse he wolde breke the treuse, bycause he wolde nat be dishonored; and there he gave hym ten frankes: and than departed and retourned to his mayster before the Roche of Vandoys. Than the knyghtes were sore desyrous to here tidynges; they drewe about the vycount: there the heraude shewed how he had ben at Calyset and at Dousacke, and what answere he had of the capitayns. Than the vicount praysed moche Perotte le Bernoyes and Olyve Barbe, and was as than out of doute, and so contynued their siege.

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

The siege beyng before the Roche of Vandoys, every day there was scrimysshing, and oftentymes some hurte with shotte of the Genovoys crosbowes, for the Genovoys were good shoters. Thus the siege contynued a nyne wekes: thenterprice of the garyson was greatlye to the advauntage of them within; I shall shewe you the maner howe. At certayne places they might issue out at their pleasure, in dispyght of all their ennemyes, for and they shulde have kepte them fro their issues, they had nede to have had mo than sixe M. men. Thus durynge the siege Aymergot was ryght ymaginatife, and consydred all thynges, and sawe well howe he had nat done well; but to tourne his dede in good maner, and to thentent that the Roche of Vandoys shulde styll remayne with hym, he sent into Englande a varlet of his, with letters of credence to the kynge of Englande and to the duke of Lancastre; and of this purpose he brake his mynde to an uncle of his, called Guyot du Sall, a man of a threscore yere of age, who had greatlye used dedes of armes, and knewe moche of the worlde. Whan Aymergote had shewed hym the maner howe he wolde sende into Englande, this Guyotte was well agreed therto, and sayde howe to sende a wyse man thyder coulde do no hurte. Than

CAP. CLXVI

Ofa capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

they sente a varlet, who had ben brought up among them. Aymergot enstructed hym and sayde: We shall sette the out of this house in safe garde out of all peryll, and thou shalte have golde and sylver ynoughe: thou shalte go into Englande with these letters, one to the kynge, another to the duke of Lancastre, and the thirde to the kynges counsayle; and all these letters are of credence. Than they will demaunde of the the occasyon of thy commynge thyder; and after thou hast made thy recommendacion, thou shalte saye, that Aymergot Mercell, their poore soudyour and subjecte, and redy with good wyll to do them servyce, is enclosed and beseged in a lytell fortresse parteyning to the feaultie of Lymosyn, belongyng to the kynge of Englandes herytage. And they that lye at the siege traveyleth and taketh great payne daylye to wyn us that dothe defende the fortresse; and the capitayne of them without is a lorde, cosyn to the lorde of Coucy, called sir Robert vycount of Meaulx, set there by the Frenche kyng. Therfore desyre the kynge and his counsayle, and specially the duke of Lancastre, who hath the soverayne governaunce in Burdeloys, and of the kyng of Englandes heritage in these parties, that it wolde please them to write and to commaunde the vycount of Meaulx to departe fro the siege and to reyse his army; and to write to the vycount that he is about to breke the peace that was taken at Balyngham, bytwene Boloygne and Calays. And bycause I am in doute what aunswere the vicount wyll make to these letters, for he is somwhat stronge and frowarde, therfore desyre that I maye have in lykewyse letters fro the kyng and his counsayle, and fro the duke of Lancastre to the duke of Berrey; for if the duke of Berrey wyll, incontynent the siege shall be raysed. And for the more suretie, desyre to have with the some knight of honoure of the kynges house or of the duke of Lancasters, suche one as the duke of Berrey knoweth, and the other lordes of Fraunce, and shewe hym fro me that I shall gyve him a C. frankes. Remembre all these wordes, and do thy message acordingly, and shewe them that thou spekest withall, that this lytell fortresse that I have fortified, if it maye abyde styll Englysshe, it shall come well to

poynte, and specially to them that wyll make warre in these parties for the kynge of Englande: for the fortresse standeth on the fronters of the countrey, for therby maye be won at a season in Auvergne and Lymosyn two thousande frankes.

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

Whan Aymergot Marcell and Guyot du Sall his uncle had well enstructed this varlet, and that the letters of credence were written and sealed and delyvered, the varlet departed by nyght, and was well accompanyed and conveyed afote to another fortresse parteynynge to Aymergot, called saint Soupery. There he toke a horse, suche as he wolde chose, for he hadde a great journey to ryde. He rode forthe through the realme of Fraunce lyke a Frencheman of Auvergne, and so came to Calais and acquaynted hymselfe with the Capitayne, sir Johan Beauchampe, and shewed hym parte of his busynesse, to the entent to have the soner passage, as he had. So he came to Dover and than toke his journey to London. And it was his fortune that the kynge of Englande and his two uncles, the duke of Lancastre and the kynges counsayle were the same tyme at the palais of Westmynster in counsayling for maters of Northumberlande: for the Scottes helde nat well the truese, as complayntes were made. The same tyme Aymergottes varlet came to London, and there toke his lodgynge, and shewed his host parte of the cause of his commynge. His host brought hym to Westmynster, and caused hym firste to speke with the duke of Lancastre, who was in his chambre; it was or he went to the counsayle. There the varlet delyvered hym his letters; the duke toke and reed them. Than he drewe hym aparte, and demaunded what credence he had. Than the varlet shewed hym all the hole mater, as ye have herde here before. The duke herde hym well, and demaunded if he had any mo letters; and he sayd that he had letters to the kyng and to his counsayle. That is well, quod the duke; I shall cause the to have audyence. Than the duke went to the counsayle, and whan he sawe the hour and tyme he moved the varlettes mater, and by the dukes advauncement the varlet was sente for. Than he delyvered to the kyng and to his counsayle the letters; they were opyned and reed; and than he was demaunded what was his credence. And

CAP. CLXVI

Ofacapytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

the varlet, who was hardy and nat abasshed, shewed the businesse of Aymergot Marcell right sagely, and the better assured bycause every man gave hym good audience. Whan he had said as moche as he wolde, than he was answered, that the kyng wolde take counsayle in the mater and make an answere. Than he went out of the counsayle chambre, and taryed tyll he had an answere.

The aunswere was, that the kynge wolde write to the vycount of Meaulx and also to the duke of Berrey, accordyng as Aymergot had requyred, and in lykewise so promysed the duke of Lancastre. And whan the letters were writen, there was a gentylman of the duke of Lancastres apoynted to bere these letters. So they passed the see, and with them went Derby an heralde, the better to forther the mater, bycause he was aquaynted with the lordes of Auvergne, and specially with the duke of Berrey. The gentylman of the duke of Lancasters, named Herbery, went with the better wyll, bycause the varlette promysed hym in the behalfe of Aymergot a hundred frankes. Thus they thre departed and came to Dover, and fro thens at a tyde to Calis; and whan their horses were unshypped they toke the waye to Boloygne, and so throughe Picardy, and went to Parys, and fro thens into Auvergne. And whan they approched nere to Lymogines and to the countre where the Roche of Vandoyes was sette, they rode about the more secretely to come thyder.

Thus as I have shewed you these messangers dyde so moche that they came nere to the Roche of Vandoyes. Whanne they were nere where the siege laye, the squyer and the heraulde thought it for the best nat to entre into the towne at that present tyme; but they sent the varlet into the towne, sayeng they wolde do well ynough without his company: for they sayd if he shulde be sene with them, they at the siege wolde suppose that he had ben sente into Englande for them. The varlet obeyed, and in the night he entred into the towne without daunger. Than Aymergot Marcell and Guyot du Sall made hym good chere, and had marveyle that he had spedde his journey in so short a space. There he shewed howe he had spedde, and howe a squier of the duke of Lancasters and a heraude was come with him,

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

with letters fro the kyng and fro the duke of Lancastre, bothe to the vycount of Meaulx and to the duke of Berrey, if nede were. And why, quod Aymergot Mercell, are they nat come hyder into this castell? Sir, quod the varlet, they sayd they two wolde do their message well inough, nor they wold have no man sene in their company that shulde come fro you. They are the wyser, quod Guyot du Sall; therby it shall seme that the mater toucheth the kyng of Englande and the duke of Lancastre. Sir, it is trewe, quod the varlet. Of those tidynges Aymergot was joyfull, and sayde to the varlet: Thou hast well and dilygently spedde thy maters, and that in a shorte season; I shall well rewarde the for thy labour. Thus the squyer and the heraude came streight to the siege, and demaunded for the vycountes lodgynge. They were brought thyder, and there they founde the vycount beholding men castyng the stone. Than they kneled and saluted hym, and he them agayne, and demaunded fro whens they came. They answered and said, howe they came out of Englande, sent thyder by their kyng and by the duke of Lancastre. Ye are welcome, quod the vycount: what mater hath brought you into this wylde countrey? Sir, quod the heraude, beholde here this squier of the duke of Lancastres, who hath brought to you letters fro the kynge of Englande and fro the duke of Lancastre, if it please you to rede them; and bycause I somwhat knewe the countrey I am come in his company. Than the squyer delyvered his letters, and the vycount receyved them, and behelde the seales, and knewe well they came out of Englande. Than he tooke one aparte that coude rede, and there he reed the letters fro poynt to poynt two or thre tymes, tyll he knewe well what they ment. Than he studyed and regarded well the kyng of Englandes writyng, who sayd in his writynge, that he had marveyle that he wolde lodge, slepe, and reste hym, with an army of men of warre on his herytage; and that he dothe daylye all that he can to breke the peace, whiche he ought in no wyse to do, for it is greatly prejudiciall to them that have sette to their seales to the confyrmacion of the peace. And the conclusyon of the letter was, howe the kyng commaunded them incontynent after the sight of his letters, that he and his company shulde departe and reyse their

CAP. CLXVI Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

siege, and suffre Aymergot Mercell pesably to enjoye the house parteyning to his heritage, whiche hath cost hym great goodes the fortifieng. These wordes and suche other were enclosed in these letters, all to the ayde of Aymergot Marcell. In lyke maner as the kynges letters spake, the duke of Lancaster sange the same note, commaundyng lyke the excellent duke of Acquitayne and of all that duchy. And whan the vicount of Meaulx had well advysed hymselfe, he sayde, Fayre syrs, these tidynges that ye have brought requyreth counsayle and advyse; I shall take counsayle, and than ye shall be answered. Than they were made to drinke of the vycountes wyne. In the meane tyme the vycount toke counsayle, for he sent for the lorde of the Towre, and for sir Guyllyam Butler, sir Robert Dolphyn, sir Loyes Danbyer, and also for the lorde Montagny, and for sir Berat[1] de la Ryver, who was of his house. And whan they were all toguyder, he renewed the wordes, and shewed them the cause why he had sent for them, and there caused the letters to be reed before them. Whan these lordes herde that, they had great marveile how these letters coude be brought out of Englande, for as than they had nat layne at the siege past a moneth. I shall shewe you, quod the vycount, what I suppose. Aymergot Marcell is a subtell man: as soone as he sawe that he shulde be besieged, I thynke he sent incontynent some messanger into Englande to attayne these letters, the whiche I maye obey if I lyste: but I shall answere them shortely; but as in that the kyng of England and the duke of Lancastre commaundeth me to do, I wyll nothynge obey their commaundementes, for I am nat bounde to obey them, but all onelye the Frenche kynge, by whose commaundement I am sent hyder. Call forthe the squier and the heraude; I shall make them their answere. They were brought forthe. Than the vycount began to speke as foloweth:

[1] *Bernard.*

You Derby and Tomelyn Herbery, thus ye be named accordyng to the tenour of your letters, and as it apereth ye be sent hyther fro the kynge of Englande and fro the duke of Lancastre: they are enfourmed, I can nat tell howe, outher by Aymergot Marcell or by some other that wolde ayde him, and hath ben in Englande in his name, howe I am

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

at this present tyme with an army of men of warre lodged on the herytage of the kynge of Englandes: and he commaundeth me to departe and reyse my siege, and to suffre Aymergot Marcell peasably to enjoy this lytell fortresse, whiche hathe coste so moche the fortefyenge; and also they sende me worde howe I do put myselfe in parell of dyshonorynge, in that I shulde consent to breke the peace, sealed and confermed to endure thre yeres bytwene the two kynges and their alyes. Fayre sirs, I say unto you, that I wyll do nothyng that shall be against the charter of peace; I wyll kepe the treuce, and do nothynge agaynst it; and though I am lodged here, it breketh no peace nor treuce. I am subget to the Frenche kynge, who hath sent me hyther, and hath admytted me as his marshall of this small armye. For it came to the knowledge of the kynge my mayster and his counsayle, by grevous complayntes of the noble men and other of the countrey of Auvergne and Lymosyn, howe they had taken great domages and losses, by the meanes that Aymergot advysed a strong place bytwene the countreys, which was voyde and nat inhabyted; he toke and fortefyed it, and hath nat made it a house of peace or solace, but a stronge fortresse and a resortynge place of theves, robbers, and murderers; wherupon I am commaunded to be here to defende the countrey, and to the entent that suche as be assembled in this fortresse shulde nat multyply in their wickednesse, but to punysshe them by suche sentence as apartayneth to their trespace; and for that entente I do put to my payne, to take them if I can; the whiche commaundemente of my mayster I wyll obey, and shall do my devoyre to acquyte me truly; and fro hence I wyll nat departe whatsoever commaundemente I have tyll I have the fortresse and them that be within. And if Aymergot Marcell wyll say that I am avaunced to breke the peace, lette hym come forthe and he shall be fought withall, with one that is better than he, and shal cause to be proved by dyvers poyntes and artycles, that he hymselfe breaketh the peace. Sirs, all thynges consydred, I make you this aunswere: ye maye retourne whan it pleace you; and whan ye come there as ye wolde be, say none otherwyse nor no lesse than I have sayde to you: for oftentymes reportes nat truely set, enfourmeth

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

lordes oftentymes otherwyse than the trouthe is in dede. Syr, quod the squyer, we are come hyther for none other purpose but to reporte the trouth of that we here and se; and sythe ye wyll none otherwyse do, we nede no lenger to abyde here. And so toke their leave: and there was gyven to the haraulde ten frankes, for the honour of the kynge of Englande and the duke of Lancastre.

Whan they were departed they toke the hyghe way to Cleremount, and sayd they wolde agayne to Parys. And whan they were halfe a leage on their way, than they began to entre into their mater, and sayd: As yet we have done nothynge; it behoveth us to go to the duke of Berrey into Auvergne, who is lorde of this countrey, for he writeth hymselfe duke of Berrey and of Auvergne. The vycounte of Meaulx dare nat displease the duke if he commaunde hym to departe; and we have letters fro the kynge our mayster and fro the duke of Lancastre to hym; wherfore it is reason that we delyver them, and that we maye knowe his entente. They concluded on that purpose, and so rode to Cleremounte; thyder they were welcome, for the haraulde knewe the countrey; and whan they were demaunded what they were, they answered that they were messangers sent fro the kynge of Englande: and than they demaunded where the duke of Berrey was; and it was shewed them that the duke and the duches was in a castell of theirs, named the Nonette. The haraulde knewe it well; he had been there before. Than they departed fro Cleremount, and rode to Vyore,[1] and fro thens to Nonett: there is a hyghe mountayne to passe or one come to the castell. Whan they came there, the duke of Berrey with many other was sportynge without the gate: the harauld was knowen with dyvers: than they were brought to the duke, who for the love of the kynge of Englande and of the duke of Lancastre, made them good chere. The squyer delyvered his letters to the duke, who receyved them, and opened and red them at length two tymes over. Than he studyed a lytell, and answered them curtesly and sayde, Syrs, for the love of our cosyns in Englande we shall gladly do our power. Of the whiche aunswere the squyer and the haraulde were ryght joyouse, and thought than howe they had sped all their mater; but

[1] *Issoire.*

CAP. CLXVI

Ofa capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

it was nat so, as ye shall here after. Howebeit, the duke of Berrey at the begynnynge dyd his devoyre to have raysed the siege, to please therby the kynge of Englande and the duke of Lancastre, who desyred that the siege myght be reysed before the Roche of Vandoys, and that the lytell fortresse myght abyde styll to Aymergot Marcell; and if he have done any thyng to dysplease the Frenche kyng or his counsayle, the kynge of Englande wolde se that there shulde be amendes made. And the duke of Berrey, bycause he wolde acquyte him truely to the Englysshe mennes desyres, suche as were in his house, he wrote incontynente letters well endyghted to the vycount of Meaulx, and these letters were red or they were sealed, before the Englysshemen, who thought them well ordayned. These letters were sente by a notable squyer of the duke of Berreys to the vycount of Meaulx, who receyved them and opened them: than the vycount caused them to be redde before suche lordes as were there with hym, whyle the messanger was drinkynge, for they made hym good chere, for the love of the duke of Berrey, as it was reason. Sirs, quod the vycounte, we shall nat be in rest syth the duke of Berrey wyll beare Aymergot, who is the man of the worlde that this twelve yere hath moste greved and traveyled the countrey of Auvergne. I had thought that the duke had hated hym greatly, but it semeth nay, sythe he hath expressly commaunded that I shulde departe fro hence. But by my faythe at this tyme I wyll nat obey this letter, but I wyll make excuse by reason of the kynge and his counsayle, who sent me hyder: and at my departynge fro Parys he straytly commaunded me that for any commaundemente fro any persone, and if it were nat fro the kynge hymselfe, that I shulde nat departe fro hence tyll I had taken the stronge holde of the Roche of Vandoys, and Aymergot therin, whiche I wyll do if I canne; and nowe the duke of Berrey commaundeth me the contrary, for he chargeth me incontynent, his letters sene, that I shulde reyse the syege. By my faythe I wyll nat do it. Syr, quod they that were aboute hym, ye speke royally and truely, and we shall abyde with you; but we suppose the occasion that the duke of Berrey writeth thus for Aymergot is, that the Englyssh squier and the haraulde hath thus desyred hym to

CAP. CLXVI

Ofacapytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

write; we thinke also they have brought letters to hym fro the kynge of Englande and fro the duke of Lancastre, as they brought to you this other day. Ye say well, quod the vicounte; and I shall knowe it if I canne. Than the duke of Berreys squier was sent for to have his answere, and the vycount sayd to him: Pyer, I wyll well that ye knowe that I owe obeysaunce to the duke of Berrey, for he is so nere a kynne to the kynge that I dare nat dysplease hym: but I and my companyons, who have ben here these fyve wekes at this siege to wyn this fortresse, and to take the theves that be within it, by the strayte commaundement of the kynge and his counsayle, and we have great marveyle, and good cause why, howe my lorde of Berrey dothe commaunde us and maketh requeste for his enemyes that we shulde reyse our siege; by reason of that we say generally that we shal gyve ensample to all theves and robbers, suche as wyll overron the realme to do the worst they canne. Wherfore, Pyer, ye shall say to the duke of Berrey fro us all, that we are and shall be redy inclyned to do any thynge that he commaundeth us to do; but as in this case I am so straytely enjoyned and commaunded by the kyng and his counsayle to kepe this siege, and to contynewe it tyll I have the fortresse and them within at my pleasure, whiche commaundement I dare nat breke. And say that surely I wyll obey to no commaundement but alonely to the kynges, whose subget I ame, and by whome I am sente hyther. But, sir, I requyre you shewe me one thynge if ye can: who hath made this request for Aymergotte Marcell, who hath done so moche yvell and anoyaunce to the countrey of Auvergne and Lymosyn: and nowe he is atrapped lyke as a traytoure shulde be, and is nere come to an yvell ende, whiche he hathe well deserved, for he hath erred and done contrary to his othe. Syr, quod the squyer, there came to my lorde the duke of Berrey two men of Englande, an haraulde and another, who brought letters to my lorde fro the kynge of Englande and fro the duke of Lancastre, and they made greate request for Aymergotte. I beleve you well, quod the vycounte; it was Derby the haraulde and a squyer called Herbery; they brought me this other daye lyke letters; wherfore I suppose that the kynge of Englande and the duke of Lancastre wrote to the

duke of Berrey in this mater. Wherfore shewe to my lorde of Berrey that I desyre him to consydre all thinges well, for all these requestes that are come fro the other syde of the see are but desyres purchased by our enemyes, to the which no lorde on this syde the see, if he love the honoure and profyte of the realme of Fraunce, shulde enclyne nor condyscende. Sir, quod the squyer, I shall forget nothynge of that ye have shewed me, for I love nat Aymergot; I had rather se his punysshmente thanne his delyveraunce. So the squyer departed and rode to Nonette, where he founde the duke of Berrey, and dyd his message ryght sagely. The conclusyon was, that the vycounte of Meaulx sayde, surely he wolde nat departe fro the siege before the Roche of Vandoys, without the kynge sente hym strayte commaundemente so to do. With this aunswere the duke of Berrey was nat well contente; he had thought that as well his commaundement shulde have been obeyed, specyally in Auvergne.

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

Whan the Englysshe squyer and Derby the haraulde herde of the answere that was made to the duke of Berrey, and howe that the siege was nat raysed, they were sory, and sawe well they traveyled in vayne. Than they sayde to the duke: Syr, what wyll ye counsayle us to do? Shall we thus departe frome you without spedynge of any thynge to purpose. The kynge of Englande and the duke of Lancastre have great truste and affyaunce in you, that ye shulde cause this siege to be reysed, bycause the Roche of Vandoys is under your[1] signoury. Syrs, quod the duke, suffre a season; Aymergot Marcell is in a stronge place, he nedeth nat to feare takyng, without a great unhappe; and shortely I purpose to goo into Fraunce to the kynge, and thanne I wyll speke with the kynge and his counsayle: and for the love of my cosyns of Englande I shall do the beste I canne to bringe the matter to passe, and ye shall go with me and se howe I shall spede. With those wordes the squyer and the haraulde were contente. Than the fourth day after the duke departed fro Nonette, and lefte there the duchesse his wyfe with a gret parte of his householde, and so the duke rode to Ryon in Auvergne, and there he taryed more thanne eyght dayes, for the erle of Sanxere and the lorde Rule,[2] who

[1] *our* P.

[2] *Revel.*

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

were gone to Avignon aboute the dukes busynesse. And whan they were come they departed fro Ryon all togyther, and toke the waye throughe Burbonoys, and at laste came to Bourges in Berrey, and there the duke taryed two dayes. Than he rode to Mehun on the ryver of Yevre to a castell, one of the fayrest houses of the worlde; as thanne the duke had newly bylte it, and it had coste hym thre hundred thousande frankes. There the duke taryed fyftene dayes, wherwith the Englysshe messangers were sore troubled; howbeit, they coude fynde none other remedy. The duke as than made lytell force for the delyveraunce of Aymergot; I shall shewe you howe and by what meanes. So it was the erle of Sanxere and the lorde of Rule who were chefe of the dukes counsayle, with syr Peter Mespyn, they in fayre maner blamed the duke, and sayde howe he hadde nothinge to do to medell with the busynesse of Aymergot, sayenge that his lyfe hathe been alwayes dyshonourable, and howe that he was but a false palyarte, and alwayes agaynste the crowne of Fraunce: and had doone many vyllayne dedes and roboryes in Auvergne and in Lymosyn, and how that he was no mete parsone to be entreated for; Wherfore, syr, quod they, suffre the kynge and his counsayle to deale with hym as they lyste. These wordes and suche other refrayned the duke of Berrey to speke any further in the mater; howebeit, the two Englysshemen dyd their best to remembre the duke; and the duke dissymulynge, aunswered them curtesly, and sayde, Syrs, suffre a season; we shall be shortely at Parys. But for all his wordes he taryed styll at Mehun more thanne thre wekes, devysynge with his mayster workeman, as kervers and paynters, for therin he had great fantasy: he had a mayster workeman called maister Andrewe, as than one of the best workemen of the worlde, an Englyssheman borne, but he dwelte in Fraunce and in Haynalte a longe season.[1]

Nowe shall I shewe you what fortuned of Aymergot Marcell, and of the Roche of Vandoys. This Aymergot was a farre castynge man; and whan he sawe that the siege was nat reysed, he thought well that the kyng of Englandes messangers coude nat spede of their sute: than he thought on another turne, as to departe thens, and to ryde nyght and daye to speke with the capitaynes of Piergourt and

[1] *car dessus ce maistre Adryen n'avoit pas lors meilleur, ne le pareil en nulles terres, ne de qui tant de bons ouvrages fuissent demourés en France, ou en Haynnau, dont il estoit de nation, ne ou royaulme d'Angleterre.*

Pyerguyse, and with Guyot of saint Fayth, and Ernalton of saynt Colombe, and Ernalton of Rostem, John of Morsen, Pier Danchin, and Remonet of Compayne, and with dyvers other Gascoyns and Bernoyse in the Englysshe garysons. And he thought that with his fayre wordes he shulde cause them to assemble togyther, and to come into Auvergne on truste to wynne great botyes; and so on a mornyng or in the night to come and reyse the siege before Vandoys, and to take there the Frenchemen prisoners, whiche shulde be worthe to them a hundred thousand frankes, besyde other botyes. Thanne he shewed his uncle, Guyot du Sall, all his purpose; who answered him, and said, Sir, I se in this nothynge but good, for otherwyse we can nat be delyvered fro these Frenchemen. Well, uncle, quod Aymergot, I shall do this message myselfe, syth ye counsayle me therto; but I shall desyre you of one thynge or I departe. What is that? quod he. It is so, quod Aymergot, that whatsoever skrymysshe that the Frenchemen do make, issue you in no wyse out of the gates, nor open nat your barryers, for and ye do, ye may rather lese than wynne. Sir, quod Guyot, I shal be ware ynough therof; we shall kepe ourselfes close here within tyll your retourne, or that we here tydynges fro you. Well, fayre uncle, I requyre you so to do, for they canne nat displease us none other wayes; as for their assautes or skrymysshes ye nede nat feare, so ye kepe yourselfes close within. Thus within thre dayes after, Aymergote departed fro the Roche of Vandoys, all onely acompanyed with a page. He passed forth without daunger of the Frenchemen: his entensyon was to brynge thyder companyons adventurers to rayse the siege. Many of them that were within the house knewe nothyng of his departure, for he myght departe whan he lyst without knowlege. Every day there was skrymysshynge and assautes at the barryers; and within a fyve or sixe dayes after the departure of Aymergot there was a great assaute made by the Frenchemen in thre partes. This Guyot du Sall was a good man of armes, and longe tyme had used the exercisyng therof; howebeit, as on that day he fortuned yvell, by reason of a lytell pryde; for he brake the ordynaunce that his cosyn Aymergot had set, or he departed, for he had charged hym that for any maner

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

of assaute he shulde nat issue out of the barryers. At this assaute there were thre squyers of the French party, two of Auvergne and one of Bretayne, who were skrimysshing valyauntly upon a pane of a wall nere to the fortresse: these thre squyers above all other, that daye dyd moste valyauntly; they of Auvergne were called Rycharde de la Violette, and Lubinot of Rochfort; and the Breton was named Monadyke, who was taken before in Lymosyn in the castell of Vanchador, and was parteynynge to sir Willyam Butler. The assaute endured tyll nyght. These thre squyers atcheved there great laude and prayse; but for all their traveyle and payne they wan nothyng. Than at another assaute the vicount of Meaulx made a busshment of twelve men of armes and their companyes, and layde them in an olde house without the fortresse, and commaunded another sorte to go and skrymysshe at the barryers, sayenge: I thynke surely we shall se them within issue out, for they are covetouse to wyn; if they do so, than withdrawe yourselfe lytell and lytell tyll they be past our busshment; than they shall breke out, and also retourne you agayne; thus they shall be enclosed and taken or slayne. This is the best way that I can se for our advauntage. Thus as the vicount had devysed and ordeyned it was done; they were named that shulde lye in the busshment, as Loys of Lesglynell,[1] Robert of Bertencourte, Guylliam de Saulsoy, Pyer du saynt Vydall, Guyonet Villeracque, Pier of Colle, and John Salmage, with other, to the nombre of twelve: they layde themselfe in an olde house without the fortresse, and another sorte went and skrimysshed at the barryers, as Belynot[2] of Rochfort, Rycharde of Violette, and the Monadyke, with other. They were fresshly armed and aparelled, to thentent that they within shulde have the more corage to issue out to them; they were also twelve alonly. Whan they came to the barryers they began to skrymysshe but faintly, and lyke suche persones as coulde but lytell skyll of feates of armes; wherfore Guyot du Sall made lytell force of them, but issued out and sayde to his companyons: By saynt Marcell we wyll issue out, for at the barryers be a sorte of yonge companyons, for by that they shewe, they knowe but lytell of dedes of armes, but we shall teche them to knowe

[1] *de la Glisuelle.*

[2] *Lubinot.*

it; they shal be all our prisoners; they can nat escape us. Therwith they opened the barryers and issued out, fyrste Guyot du Sall, and remembred nothynge the charge that Aymergot had gyven hym at his departynge; for the great desyre that he had to do dedes of armes, and to wynne somwhat, made him to begyn the skrymysshe. Whan the Frenchmen sawe that Guyot du Sall and his company were come out of their barryers they were ryght joyfull; than they began to drawe backe lytell and lytell, and they of the fortresse pursewed them, and they wente so farre that they passed the busshment: and whan they sawe their tyme they brake out of their busshment bytwene them and the fortres, cryeng, Coucy the vycount. Thus they of the fortresse were inclosed both before and behynde. Whan Guyot sawe that, he knewe well he had doone amysse, and sawe well it was harde for hym to scape; than he reculed to get agayne to his garyson, but the Frenchemen were in his waye. Wherunto shulde I make longe processe? They were all taken, nat one escaped; they were brought to the vycountes lodginge before the knyghtes, who had great joye of their takynge.

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

Thus by the counsayle of the vycount of Meaulx, Guyot du Sall and his company were atrapped and taken and brought before the lordes of Fraunce and Auvergne. Whan the vycount sawe Guyot du Sall, he demaunded where Aymergot Marcell was, and charged hym to saye the trouthe, for he thought he had ben still in the fortresse. Guyot du Sall aunswered, howe he coulde nat tell where he was, for he was departed a twelve dayes paste. Than the lordes thought surely that he was gone to purchace some ayde. Than the prisoners were commaunded aparte, and the vycount demaunded of the knightes of Auvergne what were beste to do with Guyot du Sall and with his company: sayenge howe he wolde use hymselfe acordyng to their counsayle. Than syr Willyam Butler aunswered and sayde: Syr, quod he, I suppose that Aymergot is gone for socour and to rayse up the companyons in the garysons of Pyergourt and Pyerguyse, for he shall fynde some alwayes there to come upon us earely or late or we be ware of theym, wherby they maye do us domage for any peace or trewse that is taken. This

CAP. CLXVI Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

Aymergot is a subtyle man. Syr, let us do one thyng: shew unto Guyot du Sall and his company, that without they cause the fortresse to be rendred into your handes, that ye wyll stryke of all their heedes incontynente, and without they do thus let it nat be spared. This counsayle is good, quod the vycounte, for in dede the chefe occasyon that we be come hyder for is to have this fortresse; and though we can nat have at this tyme Aymergot Marcell, another season shall fortune ryght well. Than the vycount and the lorde of the towre, syr Roberte Dolphyn, and other, came before the fortresse as nere as they myght aproche; and thyder was brought Guyot du Sall and his company. Than the vycount spake, and sayd to Guyot du Sall: Guyot and all other of your company, knowe for trouthe that incontynent all your heedes shall be stryken of, without ye yelde up the fortresse of the Roche of Vandoys; and if ye wyll rendre it up, we shall suffre you to go quyte. Nowe advyse ye well what way ye wyll take, other lyfe or deth. Of those wordes Guyot and his company were sore abasshed; at last they thought it was best for them to save their lyves. Than Guyot answered and sayde, Syr, I shall do the best I canne that the fortresse may be yelden to you. Than he came to the barryer and spake with them that were within, who rekened themselfes clene dyscomfyted, seynge they hadde lost their two maysters and the best of their company. As soone as Guyot hadde spoken with them, and declared what case they stode in, they agreed to yelde up the fortresse condicionally, that they myght departe with bagge and baggage as moch as they coulde cary, and to have respyte for a moneth to withdrawe them whyther they lyste. All this was graunted to them, and a sure saveconducte made and sealed. Thus the Frenchemen had the Roche of Vandoys delyvered, by reason of their good fortune of their last skrimysshe; wherfore it is comenly sayde, that all fortunes good and yvell falleth often tymes in armes to them that foloweth warre.

Whan the Roche of Vandois was yelded up to the lordes of Fraunce and Auvergne, they of the countrey were ryght joyous therof, and the lordes helde well and truely the promesse that they had made to Guyot du Sall. Whan they had caryed away as moche as they coulde do, than they

departed with good assuraunce for a moneth to go whyder it pleased them. Than the vycount of Meaulx abandoned the Roche of Vandoys to the men of the countrey, who incontynente dyd rase it downe, in suche wyse that they lefte no wall hole, nor house, nor stone upon stone, but all was reversed to the erthe. The Frenchemen that were ther in the kinges service with the vycount toke their leves of the knyghtes and squyers of Auvergne: so they departed, and they of Auvergne and Lymosyn went to their own houses. The vycount of Meaulx gave leave to parte of his company, and he went to Rochell and lodged at saint Johans Dangle,[1] to kepe there the fronter, for in the countrey there were some pyllers and robbers that ran sometyme into Xantoigne whan they sawe their advauntage. In the maner and fourme as I have shewed you, the fortresse of the Roche of Vandoys was conquered and rased downe, wherof all the countrey was joyfull, for than they were in better suretie than they were before; for to say the trouth, if it had contynued, it wolde have done them many displeasurs. Tydynges of this dede came to the knowledge of the duke of Berrey to Cantelon,[2] a place of his owne, standynge bytwene Charters and Mount le Herrey, a nyne leages fro Parys: he cared nothing for it, for he was as than but colde to axe any grace of the kynge for Aymergot. Whan Derby the haraulde was infourmed by some of the dukes knyghtes howe the Roche of Vandois was taken and beten downe, than he sayde to the squyer that came thyder with hym: Syr, ye have lost a hundred frankes that Aymergot had promysed to you. Howe so? quod the squier. Surely, quod the harauld, the Roche of Vandoys is gyven up and rendred; the Frenchemen have wonne it; therfore lette us take our leave of the duke of Berrey, and retourne into Englande; we have nothynge here to do. Well, quod the squyer, sythe it is so, I accorde therto. Than they toke their leave of the duke. Than the duke wrote to the kynge of Englande and to the duke of Lancastre, and gave to the haraulde at his departynge xl. frankes, and to the squyer a horse: thus they departed, and toke the next waye to Calays, and so into Englande. Than tydinges came to Aymergot Marcell, where he was purchasyng of frendes to have reysed the siege before the fortresse of

CAP. CLXVI

Ofacapytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

[1] *St. Jean d'Angely.*

[2] *Chanteloup.*

CAP. CLXVI

Ofacapytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

Vandoys, that it was gyven up. Whan he herde therof he demaunded howe it fortuned: it was shewed hym howe it was by reason of a skrymysshe, and by the issuyng out of his uncle Guyot du Sall unadvysedly. Ah, that olde traytour, quod Aymergot; by saynte Marcell, if I had hym here nowe, I shulde sle hym with myne owne handes; he hath dyshonoured me and all my companyons. At my departynge I straytely enjoyned hym that for no maner of assaute or skrymysshe made by the Frenchmen he shulde in no wyse open the barryers, and he hath done the contrary. This domage is nat to be recovered, nor I wote nat whether to go. They of Caluset and they of Dousac wyll kepe the peace, and my companyons be spredde abrode lyke men dyscomfyted; they dare never assemble agayne togyther; and though I had them togyther, yet I wote nat whyder to bring them. Thus, all thynge consydred, I am in a harde parte, for I have gretly dyspleased the French kynge, the duke of Berrey, and the lordes of Auvergne, and all the people of the countrey, for I have made them warre the peace durynge; I had trusted to have won, but I am nowe in a great adventure to lese, nor I wotte nat to whom to resorte to axe counsayle. I wolde nowe that I and my goodes with my wyfe were in Englande; there I shulde be in surety; but howe shulde I get thyder and cary all my stufe with me? I shulde be robbed twenty tymes or I coulde gette to the see, for all the passages in Poictou, in Rochell, in Fraunce, in Normandy and in Pycardy are straytely kept; it wyll be harde to scape fro takyng; and if I be taken, I shall be sente to the Frenche kynge, and so I shall be loste and all myne. I thynke the surest way for me were to drawe to Burdeaulx, and lytell and lytell to get my good thyder, and to abyde there tyll the warre renewe agayne, for I have good hoope that after this treuce warre shall be open agayne bytwene Englande and Fraunce. Thus Aymergot Marcell debated the matter in hymselfe; he was hevy and sorowfull, and wyste nat what waye to take, outher to recover some fortresse in Auvergne, or els to go to Burdeaux, and to sende for his wife thider, and for his goodes lytell and lytell secretely. If he hadde done so, he had taken the surest waye; but he dyde contrary, and therby lost all, lyfe and godes. Thus

CAP. CLXVI
Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

fortune payeth the people whan she hath sette them on the highest parte of her whele, for sodainly she reverseth them to the lowest parte, ensample by this Aymergotte. It was sayde he was well worthe a hundred thousande frankes, and all was lost on a daye; wherfore I may well saye that fortune hath played her pagiaunt with hym, as she hath done with many mo, and shall do. This Aymergot in all his trybulacions, remembred hymselfe howe he had a cosyn germayne in Auvergne, a squyer named Tournemyne, and determyned to go to hym and to shewe hym all his trouble, and to take counsayle of him. As he devysed, so he dyd. He and his page all onely came to the castell where Tournemyne was, thynkyng to have ben there in suretie, bicause of lynage; but it proved contrary, for this squyer was nat in the duke of Berreyes grace nor favor. Whan he sawe his cosyn Aymergot in his house, he advysed to take hym prisoner and to advertyse the duke of Berey, that if he wolde forgyve hym his displeasure and yvell wyll, he wolde send hym Aymergot Mercell, to do with hym his pleasure. And as he had devysed so he dyde; for whan Aymergot was within his cosyns castell, and brought to a chambre, than he layde by his swerde and chaunged his aparyll; than he demaunded of the servauntes and sayd, Where is my cosyn Tournemyne; as yet I have nat sene hym. Sir, quod they, he is in his chambre; please it you to come and se hym. With ryght a good wyll, quod Aymergotte. And the servauntes knewe ryght well their maysters pleasure. Whan Aymergot had chaunged his aparell, and doone of a cote of defence that he was wont usualy to weare, and layde awaye his swerde, than he sayd, Sirs, lette us go; I wolde se my cosyn Tournemyne; it is long sithe I sawe hym. They brought him streight to Tournemyne, and whan he came to hym, Aymergot dyde salute hym, as he that thought none yvell. Than Tournemyne aunswered and saide: Howe is it, Aymergotte? Who sente for you to come hyder? Ye wolde dishonour me; wherfore I take and arest you as my prisoner; otherwyse I shulde nat acquyte myselfe truely to the crowne of Fraunce, nor to my lorde the duke of Berrey, for ye are a false traytour; ye have broken the truce, wherto ye must answere; and for your cause my lorde of Berrey hateth me deedly.

CAP. CLXVI Ofacapytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

But nowe I shall make my peace by you, for I shall delyver you to hym, outher quycke or deed. With the whiche wordes Aymergotte was sore abasshed, and saide, Howe so, sir? I am youre cosyn: is this for certaynte ye shewe me, or do you speke it to assaye me. I am come hyder on the great trust that I have in you, to shewe you my businesse, and you to make me such cruell chere and to gyve me so harde wordes, I have great marveyle therof. I can nat tell, quod Tournemyne, what ye wyll say; but this that I have said I shall fulfyll: and so layde handes on hym. And his servauntes, knowynge their maisters pleasure, toke Aymergot without any defence makyng, for he was without weapen or armure, and also enclosed in the castell; for any wordes that he coulde saye, there he was taken, and yrons putte upon his legges and layde in a towre, and sure kepars about hym.

Whan this was done he caused the castell gate to be shytte, and toke the keyes hymselfe, and commaunded all his servauntes, on payne of their lyves, none of them to be so hardy to go to the gate without he sent them thyder. His commaundement was upholde. Than he wrote letters at his pleasure, dyrected to the duke of Berrey, certifyeng hym howe he hadde Aymergot Marcell in prisone, and that if he wolde pardone hym his yvell wyll, he wolde delyver Aymergot into his handes. Whan this letter was written and sealed, he commaunded one of his servauntes, suche as he trusted, to go into Fraunce to the duke of Berrey, and to delyver hym his letter, and to recommende hym lowly to hym, and nat to retourne without an answere. The varlet toke the letter, and mounted on a good horse and so departed, and rode so longe that he came to Parys, where the duke of Berey was, and there delyvered to hym his maisters letter. The duke toke the letter and reed it and smyled therat, and sayd to suche knyghtes as were about hym: Sirs, wyll ye here newe tidynges? Aymergot Marcell is taken prisoner; his owne cosyn germayne, Tournemyne, hath taken hym. The knightes answered and sayd: Sir, it is good tidynges for the countrey of Auvergne and of Lymosyn, for they have had of hym a longe season an yvell neyghbour; he hath done so moche yvell, that if it please you he were worthy to peyse the gybet; he ought to have none other raunsome nor

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

pardon. I can nat saye, quod the duke, what the kyng and his counsayle wyll saye therto; I wyll speke with them therin. It was nat longe after but that the duke of Berrey toke a barge on the ryver of Seyne, and so came to the castell of Lour, where the kyng and his counsaile was; he shewed there these newes; he caused the letter that Turnemyne had sent hym to be reed, of the whiche tidynges every man was joyfull, and the lordes saide, It is well sene that suche maner of robbers and pillers can never come to a good ende. Than the duke of Berey was desyred to sende for hym by the seneschall of Auvergne, and to be brought to Paris, and to be put in the castell of saynt Antonies: furthermore it was ordayned, that Tournemyne, for the good service he hadde done to the crowne of Fraunce, that all displeasures shulde be clene forgyven hym; and therupon letters patentes were made and sent to hym by his servaunt, wherof he was well content, and trusted on those letters. Than within a shorte space after, the seneschall of Auvergne, by a commission fro the duke of Berrey, came to the castell of Tournemyne, and there Aymergot Marcell was delyvered to hym, wherof Aymergotte was sore abasshed whan he sawe hymselfe in the company of his enemies. Wherto shulde I make longe processe? The seneshall caried hym with men of armes along through the countrey, and passed the ryvers of Seyne and Marewe,[1] by the bridge of Charenton, and so fro thens to the castell of saynt Antonies. There the vicount Darchy[2] was charged with hym, who as thane was capitayne of that castell. He kepte hym nat long, but that he was delyvered to the provost of the Chatelet of Parys: and trewe it was, Aymergot offred for his raunsome threscore thousande frankes, but it wolde nat be taken; he was answered, the kyng was riche ynough. After that he was sente to the Chatelette, he was nat long kepte there, but that he was juged to dye shamefully lyke a traytour to the crowne of Fraunce. And soo on a daye he was caryed in a chariot to a place called the Halles, and there sette on the pyllary; than all his trespasses were reed before hym: and by hym was sir Wylliam of Trune,[3] who spake moche to hym: it was thought that it was to knowe the state of certayne capitayns in Auvergne, and whether they were

[1] *Marne.*

[2] *Acy.*

[3] *le Boutillier.*

CAP. CLXVI

Of a capytayne, called Aymergot Marcell, who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergue.

consenting to his dedes or nat. The lordes knewe well, but I coude never have knowlege therof. Thus he was executed, his heed stryken of, and his body quartred, and the quarters sette at every gate of Parys. To this ende came Aymergotte Marcell: as of his wyfe and of his goodes I knewe nat what became further of them.

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes beyng in the ysle of Conymbres at ancre, departed thens to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary, and howe they maynteyned the siege.

WHEREAS I have spoken at length of the lyfe of Aymergot Mercell, it was to furnysshe this hystorie: for the condycions bothe of yvell and good ought to be alwayes treated in a hystory, and specially whan it toucheth any great feate, for ensample of other, and to gyve mater and occasyon to do well. For if Aymergotte had ledde his lyfe in good vertues, he had ben a man of great valure: and bycause he dyde the contrary he came to an yvell ende.

Nowe let us leave spekyng of hym, and let us retourne to the hyghe enterprice that the Christen knyghtes of Fraunce and other nacyons dyd in that season in the realme of Aufryke, and I wyll begyn there as I lefte. The sayd lordes assembled in the ysle of Conymbres,[1] after they had passed the tempestes and paryls in the Goulfe of Lyon; there they taryed eche for other, for there were in the cytie of Aufryke a xxx. thousande. In this ysle of Conymbres they were a nyne dayes, and refresshed them; and there the patrons of the galees sayde to the lordes: Sirs, we be in the lande next aprochyng to the marchesse of Aufryke, whider by the grace of God ye are purposed to go and laye siege; wherfore it is behovable to take counsayle eche of other, howe we maye entre into the haven, and to take lande. To save ourselfe, it is best we sende formast our lytell shyppès,

[1] *Conigliera.*

called brigandyns, and let us tary in the mouthe of the havyn, the first day that we aproche and all the nyght after: and the nexte mornynge to take lande, by the grace of God at our leysar, and than lodge ourselfes as nere the cytie as we maye, without the shotte of their artyllary; and let us sette our crosbowes Genovois in order, who shal be redy to defende all scrimysshes. And we suppose well, that whan we shall take landynge ye have here in your companyes many yong squyers, who to enhaunce their honours wyll requyre to have the order of knighthode: instructe them wisely and swetely howe they shall mentayne themselfes. And, my lordes, knowe for trouthe, that all we seemen shall acquyte us unto you well and truely, and alwayes shewe you by what maner of order we shall moost greve our enemyes. And we shall take payne and study howe the cytie of Aufryke may be won, for ofte tymes they have done us great dommage. For on that coste it is the chiefe key of Barbary and of the realmes that foloweth: first, the realme of Aufrike, of Mallorques, and of Bougy. And if God of his grace wyll consent that we maye wyn this cytie of Aufrike, all the Sarazyns wyll trymble, to the realme of Liby and Sury, so that all the worlde shall speke therof; and by the ayde of other Christen realmes and ysles marchyng nere to Aufrike, we shall always be refreshed with vitayls and newe men: for this is a common voiage. For every man wyll desyre dayly to do dedes of armes, and specially on Goddes enemyes. And thus in the conclusion of their processe the patrons said, Lordes, we say nat this by no presumpcion, nor by maner as to teche you what ye shuld do; but this that we have sayd is all onely for love and by humilyte, for ye be all noble men sage and valyant, and can better order every thyng than we can devyse and speke. Than the lorde of Coucy said: Sirs, your good counsayle and advyse ought gretly to content us, for we se nothyng therin but good; and, sirs, be ye sure that we shall do nothyng without your counsayle, for ye have brought us hyder to do dedes of armes.

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

Thus in the presence of the duke of Burbone, the lordes and other counsayled toguyder in the ysle of Conymbres, how they myght aproche the strong towne of Aufryke. Whan every thyng was well advysed and sette in good

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

order by the admyrall and patrons of the galees, and that wynde and wether served them, every lorde entred into his galee among their owne men, havyng great desyre to encountre with their enemyes the Sarazyns. Than the trumpettes blewe up at their departyng: it was great pleasure to beholde their ores, howe they rowed abrode in the see, whiche was peasable, calme, and fayre, so that in maner the see shewed herselfe that she had great desyre that the Christen men shulde come before the stronge towne of Aufryke. The Christen navy was goodly to regarde and well ordred, and it was great beautie to se the baners and penons of silke, with the armes and badges of the lordes and other, wavyng with the wynde, and shynyng against the sonne. And within an hour of noone the Christen men perceyved the hygh towres of the towne of Aufrike, and the farder they sayled the nerer it shewed to their syghtes; wherfore every man rejoysed, and good cause why, seyng all they desyred to come thyder: they thought than in a maner their paynes released and their voyage accomplysshed. Thus as they aproched to thentre of the realme of Aufryke, they communed and devysed among themselfe; and in lyke maner the Sarazyns that were within the towne of Aufryke spake and devysed and were sore abasshed whan they sawe their enemies aproche with suche a nombre of sayles, and sayde, that surely they were lykely to be besieged. Howebeit, they thought their towne so strong with towres and walles and with artyllary, that therwith they reconforted and toke corage: and to gyve warnyng to the country, as soone as they sawe their enemyes on the see on the hyghe towres, they sowned tymbres and tabours, accordynge to their usage, in suche wyse, that the men abrode in the countrey drewe toguyder. Suche men of Barbary as had ben sente thyder by the kynge of Aufryke, and by the kynge of Thunes and Bougy, whan they knewe of the Christen mennes commynge, by reason of the noyse of the tymbres and tabours, to thentent that they shulde nat entre to farre into their countreis, every man tooke hede to his charge, and sente certayne of their capitayns to the see syde, to se the aprochyng of the Christen men, and to beholde their dealyng that nyght. Also they

provyded to defende the towres and gates about the havyn of Aufryke, to the entent that by their negligence the towne of Aufryke shulde take no dommage, whiche towne was so strong, that it was nat lykely to take great hurte without longe siege. And I, Johan Froyssart, auctour of this cronycle, bycause I was never in Aufryke, and bycause I myght truely write the maner and fascion of this enterprice, alwayes I desyred suche knyghtes and squyers as had ben at the same voyage to enforme me of every thyng. And bycause I had been oftentymes in my dayes at Calays, I demaunded also of suche there as had ben at the sayde voyage.[1] And it was shewed me of a suretie that the Sarazyns amonge themselfes sayde, howe the Christen men that were there were expert and subtyle men of armes. Wherupon an auncyent Sarazyn sayd to all his company: Sirs, all thynges consydred, it is best that the Christen men at the begynnyng se nat our strength and puissaunce, nor also we have nat men suffycient to fyght with them, but daylye men wyll come to us; wherfore I thynke it best to suffre them to take lande; they have no horses to over ron the countrey; they wyll nat sprede abrode, but kepe togyder for feare of us. The towne is stronge ynoughe and well provyded, we nede nat feare any assautes: the ayre is hote, and wyll be hotter: they are lodged in the sonne, and we in the shadowe; and they shall dayly wast their vitaylles, and shal be withoute hope to recover any newe and they lye here any long season. And we shall have plentie, for we be in our owne countrey; and they shall oftentymes be awaked and scrimysshed withall, to their dommage and to our advauntage: lette us nat fight with them, for otherwyse they can nat disconfyte us; they have nat ben used with the ayre of this countrey, whiche is contrary to their nature: I thynke this the best waye.

To the saieng of this auncient knight Sarazyn all other agreed. Thane it was commaunded on payne of dethe that no man shulde go to the see syde to scrymysshe with the Christen men without they were commaunded, but to kepe themselfe close in their lodgynges, and suffre the Cristen men to take lande. This determynacion was upholde, none durst breke it: and they sent a certayne of their archers

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

[1] *Defect here: comparison of the African town with Calais omitted.*

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

into the towne of Aufryke, to ayde to defende it. The Sarazyns shewed themselfes nothyng, as though ther had been no men in the countrey. The Christen men lodged all that night in the mouthe of the havyn of Aufryke, and the nexte mornynge the wether was fayre and clere, and the ayre in good temper, and the sonne rose, that it was pleasure to beholde. Thane the Christen men began to styrre, and made them redy, havynge great desyre to approche the towne of Aufryke, and to take lande. Than trumpettes and claryons began to sowne in the gallees and vesselles, and made great noise; and about nyne of the clocke whan the Christen men had taken a lytell refresshynge with drinke, than were they rejoysed and lighted. And accordyng as they had apoynted before, they sent in fyrst their lyght vesselles called brigandyns, well furnisshed with artyllary. They entred into the havyn, and after them came the armed galees, and the other shyppes of the flete in good order. And tournynge towardes the lande by the see syde, ther was a strong castell with hyghe towres, and specially one towre whiche defended the see syde, and the lande also. And in this towre was a bricoll or an engyn whiche was nat ydell, but styll dyde cast great stones amonge the Christen mens shyppes. In lykewise in every towre of the towne agaynst the see syde, there were engyns to caste stones. The Sarazyns had well provyded for their towne, for they loked ever longe before whane they shulde be besieged. Whan the Christen men entred into the haven of Aufryke to take lande, it was a plesaunt syght to beholde their order, and to here the claryons and trumpettes sounde so hyghe and clere; dyvers knightes and valyaunt men of the realme of Fraunce sprede abrode that day their baners, with dyvers other newe made knyghtes. The lorde Johan of Lignye was there firste made knight, he was of the countrey of Chauny:[1] he was made by the handes of a cosyn of his, named sir Henry Dantoygne, and there he sprede abrode first his baner, the felde golde, a bende of goules. And in his companye was his cosyn germayne the lorde of Hauret, in Chauny. Thus the lordes, knyghtes and squyers with great desyre avaunced them, and toke lande and lodged on the lande of their enemyes in the

[1] *Hainault.*

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

sight of the false Sarazyns, on a Wednisdaye in the evenyng of Mary Magdaleyne, in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore and ten.[1] And as they toke lande they were lodged by their marshalles. The Sarazyns that were within the towne praysed moche the Christen mennes order. And bycause that the great galees coulde nat aproche nere to the lande, the men yssued out in bottes, and toke lande and folowed the baner of Our Lady.

The Sarazins that were within the towne, and suche as were abrode in the countrey, suffered the Christen men pesably to take lande, for they sawe well it shulde nat be for their advauntage to have fought with them at their landyng. The duke of Burbone, who was as chefe of the Christen armye there, was lodged in the myddes of his company ryght honorably, his baner displayed, poudred, full of floure du lyces, with an ymage of Our Lady in the myddes, and a scochynne with the armes of Burbone under the fete of the ymage.

Fyrste, on the ryght hande of the duke there was lodged his brother sir Guylliam of Tremoyle, with his penon, and the lorde of Bordenay[2] with his baner, and sir Helyon of Lygnacke with his penon, the lorde of Tours with a penon; and than the Henowers with the standerde of the lorde Wyllyam of Heynaulte, as than erle of Ostrevaunt, eldest sonne to the duke Aubert of Bavyere, erle of Heynaulte, of Hollande, and of Zelande: the devyse in the standerde was a Herse golde, standyng on a bell[3] goules. There was the lorde of Havrech with his baner, the lorde of Ligny with his baner, and than sir Philyppe Dartoys erle of Ewe with baner, the lorde of Matefelon with baner, the lorde of Calam with penon, the seneschall of Ewe with penon, the lorde of Lynyers with baner, the lorde of Thune[4] with baner, the lorde of Ainevall with baner, sir Water of Champenon with penon, sir John of the Castell Morant with baner, the marshall of Sanxeres brother with penon, the lorde of Coucy with baner, beste apoynted nexte the duke of Burbone, sir Stephyne of Sanxere with penon. Than the Frenche kynges penon with his devyce, and therby was sir Johan of Barroys, with the penon of his armes. Than sir Guylliam Morles with baner, and the

[1] *and fourscore* P.

[2] *Voudenay.*

[3] *champaigne.*

[4] *Chin.*

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

lorde of Longuevall with penon, sir Johan of Roye with baner, the lorde of Bourse with penon, the Vycount Dausney with baner, the lorde admyrall with baner, called Johan of Vyen.

Nowe here after foloweth they on the dukes lyfte hande.

On the lyfte hande of Loyes duke of Burbone were lodged as foloweth. First, the lorde of Aufemont of Bavyere,[1] and sir Johan of Beauforde, bastarde sonne to the duke of Lancastre, with his baner displayed, sir Johan Butler Englysshe with a penon, sir Johan of Crama with a baner, the Souldyche of Lestrade with penon, sir Johan Harcourt with baner, and the lorde Beraulte erle of Clere-mount, and the Dolphin of Auvergne with baner, and sir Hugh Dolphyn, his brother, with penon, the lorde of Berten-court with penon, the lorde Pyer Buffyer with baner, the lorde of saynt Severe with baner, the lorde of Lauvart, marshall of the hoost, with baner, the lorde Begue of Beausse with penon, the lorde of Louvy[2] with baner, sir Gerarde of Lymosyn,[2] his brother, with penon, the lorde of saynt Germayne with baner. And than the penon and standerde with the devyce of the duke of Burgoyn, sir Philyppe of Barre with baner, sir Geffray of Charney with baner, sir Loyes of Poicters with penon, sir Robert of Calabre[3] with penon, the vycount of Ses[4] with baner, the lorde Montague with baner, the lorde of Vyle Neufe with penon, sir Wyllyam of Molyne with penon, the lorde of Longny with penon, sir Angorget Damboyse with penon, sir Aleyne of Champayne with penon: all these baners and penons were sette in the front before the towne of Aufryke; and besyde that, a great nombre of other knyghtes and squyers, ryght valyaunt men and of highe corage, were lodged abrode in the felde: I can nat name them all, also it wolde be to long a writyng: there were a fourtene thou-sande all gentylmen. It was a companye to do a great feate, and to susteyne a great batayle, if the Sarazyns had come forthe to have gyven them batayle, whiche they dyd nat, for as on that day they shewed no maner of defence, but castyng out of their towres great stones.

Whan the Christen men were lodged as well as they myght, and refresshed themselfes with suche as they had brought

[1] *à banière.*

[2] *Louin.*

[3] *Cabroles.*

[4] *Uzes.*

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

with them, for they myght nat ryn abrode in the countrey to gather bowes of trees to make with all their lodgynges, for it had ben to their domage if they had adventured themselfe abrode; the lordes had tentes and pavilions that they had brought with them fro Geane. Thus they lodged in good order; the crosbowes of the Genovoys were lodged on the wynges, and closed in the lordes. They occupyed a great space of grounde, for they were a great nombre; all their provisyons were in the galees, and all the day the maryners conveyed their stuffe to lande by bottes. And whan the Christen ysles adjoynyng, as Naples, Cicyll, and also the mayne landes, as Puylle, and Calabre, whan they knewe howe the Christen men had besieged the strong castell of Aufryke, they dyd what they coude to vitayle the Christen army, some to have advauntage therby, and some for love and affection that they had to the Genovoys: fro the ysle of Cande came to them the good malveysies in great plenty, without whiche conforte they coude nat longe have endured, for they were a great nombre, and good drinkers and good eaters. Howebeit, their provisyons came nat alwayes to them in lyke maner, for somtyme they had plentie, and some season they wanted.

Nowe I shall somwhat speke of the Sarazyns, as well as I have done of the Christen men, as it is reason to conclude all thynges.

Trewe it was that they of Aufrike and of Barbary knewe longe before howe the Genowayes hadde thretned them, and they loked for none other thyng, but the same yere to be besieged, as they were indede. They hadde made provisyon to resyst agaynst it; and whan the tidynges were sprede abrode in the countrey howe that the Christen-men were come to Aufryke they were in dout, for he is nat wise that feareth nat his ennemyes, thoughe they be never so fewe. Howebeit, the Sarazyns reputed the Christen men right valyant and good men of warre, wherfore they greatly douted them. And to the entent to resyst and to defende the fronters of their countreys, they assembled toguyder of dyvers parties, as they of the lande and seignorie of Aufrike, and of the realme of Maroche, and of the realme of Bougye, the best men of warre in all those countreis, and suche as leest

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

feared dethe. Thus they came and lodged on the sandes agaynst the Christen men; and they had behynde them an highe wode, to thentent that they shulde receyve on that syde no dommage by meanes of busshmentes or scrimysshes. These Sarazins lodged themselfes right sagely and surely: they were of men of warre a xxx. thousande good archers, and ten thousande horsemen, and mo. Howebeit, the Christen men coude never knowe surely what nombre they were, for they supposed they had a greater nombre lodged in the woodes, whiche myght ryght well be, for they were in their owne countre, and might go and come into their host at all houres, without paryll or dommage at their owne lybertie: they were oftentymes refresshed with newe vitayls brought to them on somers and camelles. And the seconde day that the Englysshemen had been a lande, in the mornyng at the breke of the day, and that the same nyght the lorde Henry Dantoygne had kepte the watche with two hundred men of armes, and a thousande crosbowes Genowayes, the Sarazyns came to awake and to scrimysshe with theym, whiche endured the space of two houres. There were many dedes of armes atchyved, but the Sarazins wolde nat joyne to fyght hande to hande, but they scrimysshed with castyng of dartes and shotynge, and wolde nat folysshely adventure themselfes, but wisely and sagely reculed. The Christen hoost than apparelled them to go to the scrimysshe, and some of the great lordes of Fraunce came thyder to se the demeanour of the Sarazyns, therby to know another tyme their maner in skrymysshynge. Thus the Sarazyns drewe to their lodgynge, and the Crysten men to theirs: and durynge the siege the Crysten men were never in suretie nor rest, for outher evenynge or mornynge the Sarazyns wolde awake them and skrymysshe. Amonge the Sarazyns there was a yonge knight called Agadingor Dolyferne: he was alwayes well mounted on a redy and a lyght horse: it semed whan the horse ranne, that he dyd flye in the ayre. The knyght semed to be a good man of armes by his dedes: he bare alwayes of usage thre fedred dartes, and ryght well he coulde handle them, and acordynge to their custome he was clene armed with a longe whyte towell aboute his heed: his aparell was blacke, and his owne coloure browne,

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

and a good horseman. The Crysten men sayde they thought he dyd suche dedes for the love of some yonge lady of his countrey; and trewe it was that he loved entyrely the kynge of Thunes doughter, named the lady Azala: she was enherytour to the realme of Thunes, after the discease of the kyng her father. This Agadingor was sonne to the duke of Olyferne: I can nat tell if they were maryed togyther after or nat, but it was shewed me that this knyght for love of the sayd lady durynge the siege dyd many feates of armes. The knyghtes of Fraunce wolde fayne have taken hym, but they coulde never atrape nor enclose him, his horse was so swyft and so redy to his hande, that alwaies he skaped.

The Crysten men wolde gladly have taken some Sarazyn, to the entente to have knowen the state of the towne and countrey, but for all their skrymysshynge they coulde never gette none. The Sarasyns toke good hede to themselfe, and dyd pavesse themselfe agaynst the crosebowes Genovoys: they were nat so well armed as the Cristen men, it was nat their usage, nor they had no armorers, nor metall to forge harnesse withall, for most comenly they lacke yron and steele: they be ever armed in lether, and beare targettes aboute their neckes covered and made of cureboley of Capadoce, no wepen can perce it and the lether be nat hote. So that whan they come nere to their enemyes they cast their dartes all at ones; and whan the Genovoys do shote at theym, than they couche themselfe lowe and cover them with their targes, and whan the shotte is paste, than they caste agayne their fedred dartes. Thus the space of nyne wekes durynge the siege they oftentymes skrymysshed, so that dyvers were hurte on bothe parties, and specially suche as lyghtly without avysement adventured themselfe. Thus the Crysten men toke good hede to themselfe, and so dyd the Sarazyns on their parte, and the lordes of Fraunce, and suche other as were come thyder to their ayde, gladly regarded the dealynge of the Sarazyns: to saye the trouthe to lordes of astate, and to gret men, all newelties are dylectable. And if the Crysten men hadde pleasure to beholde them, the Sarazyns had as great pleasure to regarde the maner of the Crysten men: amonge them there were

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

yonge lusty knyghtes, who had great pleasure to beholde the armure, baners, standardes, and penons, with rychesse and noblenesse that was amonge the Crysten men, and at nyght whan they were at their lodgynges they spake and devysed. But as it was shewed me there was one thynge amonge them to be marveyled at, I shall shewe you what.

The Sarazyns within the towne of Aufryke had great marveyle by what tytell or instaunce that the Crysten men came thyder so strongly to make them warre. It was shewed me howe they toke advyse amonge them howe to knowe the trouth therof, and determyned to sende to the Crysten men to knowe their myndes; and so toke a truchman that coulde speke Italyan, and commaunded hym to go to the Crysten host, and to demaunde of them in what tytle and instaunce they are come to make us warre, and why they become so strongly into the empyre of Barbary, and into the lande of Auffryke. And saye howe we have in nothynge trespased them; of a trouth afore this tyme there hath ben warre bytwene us and the Genovoys, but as for that warre by reason ought nat to touche the Crysten men of farre countreys of. As for the Genovoys are our neyghbours, they take of us and we of them, we have been auncyente enemyes and shall be, excepte whan treuce is bytwene us. With this message the trucheman departed, and rode to the Crysten army, and mette fyrst with a Genoway, and shewed hym howe he was a messanger sent fro the Sarazyns to speke with some lorde of Fraunce. The Genoway had to name Anthony Marchy, he was a centuryon of the crosbowes: he brought this messanger to the duke of Burbon, and to the lorde of Coucy, who gladly herde hym speke, and the wordes that he spake in his owne langage, the centuryon Genoway expowned theym in Frenche. Whan this messanger had declared his message, he desyred to have an aunswere. The lordes of Fraunce sayde he shulde have, but first they wolde take advyse in the mater. Than a xii. of the greatest lordes drewe togyder to counsayle in the duke of Burbons tent, and concluded, and so sent for the messanger; and the Genovoy made him his answere in al their names; sayeng, howe the tytle and quarell that they made warre in was, bycause the sonne of God, called Jesu Chryst, and trewe profyte, by their

lyne and generacyon was put to deth and crucyfyed: and bycause they had judged their God to deth without tytell or reason, therfore they wolde have amendes, and punysshe that trespace and false judgement that they of their lawe had made; and also bycause they beleved nat in the holy baptyme, and are ever contrary to their faythe and lawe; nor also bycause they beleved nat in the Virgyn Mary, mother to Jhesu Cryst: for these causes and other, they sayd, they toke the Sarazyns and all their secte for their enemyes, and sayd howe they wolde revenge the dispytes that they had doone, and dayly do to their God and Crysten faythe. With this answere the treuchman retourned without parell or domage, and shewed to his maysters all as ye have herde. At this aunswere the Sarazyns dyd nothinge but laugh, and sayd howe that aunswere was nothynge reasonable, for it was the Jewes that put Chryst to dethe, and nat they. Thus the siege styll endured, every party making good watche.

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

Anone after, the Sarazyns toke counsayle togyder, and determyned that a seven or eight dayes togyther they shulde suffre the Crysten men in rest, and nat to make any maner of skrymysshe with them, and than sodaynly on a nyght about the hour of mydnyght to sette on the hoost, trustynge therby to do a great feate. As they ordayned so they dyd, and an eyght dayes togyther they made no skrymysshe; and on the ix. day about mydnight they secretly armed them with such armure as they were accustomed to, and so came close togyder without any noyse nere to the lodgynges of the Crysten men, and had enterprysed to have done a great feate, and to have entred, nat on that side that their watche was on, but on the other parte of the felde, where there was no watche kept. They had come to their ententes, and God properly had nat ben agaynst them, in shewynge of apparante myracles: I shall shewe you howe.

As the Sarazyns aproched, they sawe sodenly before them a great company of ladyes and damosels, all in whyte colour, and one in especyall who in beauty without comparison exceded all the other, and there was borne before her a baner all of whyte and reed within. With this syght the Sarazyns were so abasshed, that they lacked spyrite and

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

force to go any further, and so stode styll, and the ladyes before them. Also it was shewed me that the Genovoys had a great dogge in their company that they brought with theym, but they knewe nat fro whence he came, there was none that chalenged the dogge to be his, whiche dogge dyd theym great servyce, for the Sarazyns coulde never come so pryvely to skrymysshe, but the dogge wolde bay and make suche brewte that he wolde nat rest tyll such as were aslepe were awaked; every man knewe whan they herde the dogge baye, that the Sarazyns were commyng to skrymysshe with them, wherby ever they aparelled themselfe to resyst them. The Genovoys called the dogge, Our Ladies dogge. The same season that the Sarazyns stode styll in a traunce, and the ladyes before them, this dogge was nat ydell, but he made gret brute, and ranne bayeng fyrst to the stande watche; the lorde of Coucy, and sir Henry Dantoigne, kept the watche that night. Whan every man herde this dogge make suche brute, they rose and armed them redy, for they knew well that the Sarazyns dyd aproche to awake them. And trewe it was that the Vyrgyn Mary and her company was before them, to defende the Crysten men fro all parelles, so that they toke that nyght no maner of domage, for the Sarazyns durst nat aproche, but retourned to their lodgynges: and after that, the Crysten men toke better hede to their watche.

The Sarazyns knyghtes and squyers, suche as were in the towne of Aufryke, and specially suche as had sene these ladyes, were so abasshed that they wyste nat what to thynke. And the Crysten knightes and squyers that lay at the siege, studyed day and nyght howe they myght wyn the towne; and they within studyed agayne howe to defende their towne. The season was hote and drye, for the sonne was in his moste strength, as in the moneth of August, and the marches of Aufryke are ryght hoote, by reason of the sande, and also they be nerer to the sonne than we be: and the wynes that the Crysten men had, came fro Pulle, and Calabre, and they be hote and drye, farre fro the nature of the French wynes, wherby many fell into hoote fevers. And to consydre acordynge to reason, I can nat tell howe the Frenchemen, and other of lowe countreys, coulde endure the payne of

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

the hote and grose ayre that they founde there, without refresshynge of good, swete, and fresshe water, whiche they lacked there. Yet they made fountaynes and welles in the sande, whiche dyde theym great pleasure, for there they founde fressh water; howbeit, oftentymes the water was sore chafed by reason of the heate. And also oftentymes they had great defaute of vytaylles, and some season they had ynough comynge fro Cicyll, and fro other isles adjoynynge. Suche as were hole, comforted them that were dysseased, and suche as had vytaylles departed with theym that lacked, otherwyse they coulde nat have endured; they dalte eche with other lyke bretherne and frendes. The lorde of Coucy specyally had the chyefe resorte of gentlemen, he coulde behave hymselfe swetely amonge them, moche better than the duke of Burbone, for the duke was somewhat of an high corage, proude, and presumptuous, nor spake nat so swetely nor so humbly to knyghtes, squyers, and straungers, as the lorde of Coucy dyd. Moste comenly the duke of Burbone wolde sytte all daye without his tente with his legges acrosse, and whosoever wolde speke with hym, it behoved him to have a procurer, and to make great reverence. He consydred nat the state of poore men so well as the lorde Coucy dyd, wherfore he was more in the grace and love of the people thanne the duke of Burbon was. And as it was shewed me by dyvers knyghtes and squyers straungers, that in their opynyons if the lorde Coucy had ben soveraygne capytayne alone, they had sped otherwyse than they dyd, for by reason of the pride of the duke of Burbon, many feates and enterprises were lefte undone. It was the opynyon of many that he kepte hymselfe sure ynough fro takynge.

This siege enduringe before the towne of Aufryke, whiche contynewed a lx. dayes and one, there was many skrymysshes made on bothe parties, abrode and at the barryers of the towne. It was nedefull for them within to make good defence, for against them was the floure of chyvalry and squyry. The knyghtes adventurers sayd one to another: If we maye get this towne with assaute or otherwyse, than we may refresshe ourselfes in it all the wynter, and at somer some great armye of Crysten men wyll come hyther, for therby we and they shall have a goodly entre into the

CAP. CLXVII realmes of Barbary, Aufryke, and Thunes. Than other dyd say: Wolde to God it were so, for thanne suche as shulde be lodged here shulde lye honorably, for dayly they shulde be redy to do dedes of armes. They that were within the towne doubted greatly the mater, wherfore they tooke great payne to defende themselfes. The great heate and brinnynge of the sonne dyd put the Crysten men to great payne and traveyle, for whan they were in harnesse, by reason of the heate, it brente them within their armure. Marveyle it was that any skaped the dethe by reason of the heate, for about the myddes of August the ayre was sore corrupted. Besyde that there fell another marveylous incydente, whiche if it had longe endured, they had ben all deed without stroke. So it was that by reason of the great heate and corrupcyon of the ayre, there fell amonge them suche a sorte of great flyes, that they covered all the hoost, for no man wyste howe to defende hymselfe, and every daye a weke togyder they encreased, wherof every man was abasshed; howebeit, by the grace of God and the Vyrgyn Mary, to whome every man avowed themselfe, on a day dyd sende a remedy; there fell suche an hayle and lyghtenyng fro heven that it slewe all the sayde flyes, and by reason of this hayle the ayre was brought into a good temperatenesse, wherby the knyghtes and squyers were in a better astate than they were before.

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

Whosoever had been in the case that these Crysten men were in at that tyme, it must have behoved them to take every thynge in gree, they coulde nat have had every thynge with wysshynge, nor at their demaunde. Whan any fell sicke it behoved them to be well kepte, or els they shulde have dyed: but they were come thyder with so good wylles and affection, that they purposed honourably to accomplysshe their voyage, whiche mynde greatly supported them to endure payne and traveyle. All thynges that was mete for their complexions they wanted, for nothynge came to them out of the realme of Fraunce, tydynges nor other, nor in Fraunce they knewe no more of them. Somtyme there came to the army fro the cytie of Barcelone, in the realme of Aragon, in a galey, provysion, wherin was mo orenges and pomegarnettes, than any other thynge. These frutes yet refresshed greatly the appetytes of the Crysten men; but

whansoever any galey came to them, it retourned nat agayne, what for doute of the encountryng of the Sarazyns on the see, as for to abyde there to se the conclusyon of the siege. The yonge kynge of Cicyll oftentymes sente to the hoost vytaylles, for he was the nexte Crysten prince adjoynynge. If the Sarazyns had ben of that strength to have stopped the passage of the see fro them, and to have kepte fro them suche vytayls and provysions as came to the armye fro Pule, Calabre, Naples, and Cicyll, the Crysten men had been deed without any stroke stryking; but they made no warre but by lande, nor also they be nat of suche puyssaunce on the see, nother in galees nor in other vessels, as the Genovoys and Venysians be. For if the Sarazyns be on the see it is but by stelthe, for they dare nat abyde the Crysten men, without they have farre the advauntage; a galey with Crysten men well armed wyll discomfyte four galees of Sarazyns. Trewe it is, the Turkes are of greater force, and better men of armes, outher by lande or by see, than any other secte of the myscreantes contrary to our beleve, but they dwell farre of fro the lande of Aufryke, the Affrikans can nat be ayded by them. The Turkes had certayne knowledge howe the towne of Aufryke was besyeged by the Crysten men; they wysshed them oftentymes there.

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

The Crysten men studyed howe to do domage to the Sarazyns, and in lykewyse so the Sarazyns agaynst the Chrysten men studyed howe to delyver their countrey of them. And on a day Agadingor Doliferne, Madefer de Thunes, Belyns Madages, and Brahadyn of Bougy, with dyvers other Sarazyns, devysed amonge themselfes, and sayd: Beholde here the Crysten men our enemyes, who lye here before our faces in our owne countrey, and yet we can nat discomfyte them, and they are but a handefull of men, as to the regarde of us; howebeit, we thinke veryly they have some great confort of some valyaunt men out of their owne countreys, for at no maner of skrymyssh that we can make, and for all that ever we can do, we can take never a prisoner: for if we myght take one or two of their valyaunt men, it shulde be greatly to our honour, and by them to knowe their demeanour and puyssaunce, and what they purpose to do. Syrs, quod Agadingor, let se what coun-

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

sayle is best in this case: as for me I am one of the yongest, yet I speke fyrst. We are contente therwith, quod all the other, say what ye wyll. Syrs, quod he, I desyre greatly to do some dede of armes with some Crysten man, and I thynke veryly if I were matched with one to dyscomfyte hym in playne batayle; and syrs, if ye wyll do so that we myght fynde a xx. or xxx. valyaunt men amonge us, I shall cause and I canne, the Crysten men to sette forthe as many; our quarell is good, for they have no cause of reason to make warre against us, and I thynke what by reason of our juste quarell, and the good corage that we be of, shall gyve us victory. Than Madyfer of Thunes aunswered and sayd: Syr, in your wordes is nothyng but honour; to morowe if ye wyll ryde and be in the former fronte of the batayle with a trucheman with you, and make some token that ye wolde speke with some Crysten man, and than do you so moche as to offre the batayle of x. of yours agaynst ten of theirs, than shall ye here and se what they wyll aunswere, and yet howe so ever they answere we may be advysed what we wyll do: at leste the Crysten men shall repute us the more valyaunt. They all agreed to that apoyntmente, and so passed that nyght. The next mornyng they rode forth to skrymysshe with their enemyes, and Agadingor formest, mounted on his good horse, and his trucheman with him. The daye was clere and bright, and a lytell before the sonne rysynge the Sarazyns set themselfe in ordre of batayle. The same nyght sir Willyam of Tremoyle had kept the watch on the Crysten parte, and with hym sir Guy his brother. Than the Sarazins apered before the Cristen men within a thre crosbowe shot, and Agadingor had his truchman by him: he rode on before all his company, and made token to speke with some Crysten man, on the one wynge of the felde. And a gentle squyer, called Affrenall,[1] seyng the Sarazyn, and the sygnes that he made, rode fro his company, and sayd: Syrs, stande styll here, and I wyll go and speke with yonder Sarazyn, and torne agayne to you: he hath a truchman with hym, he cometh to speke with some man. This squier came to the Sarazyn, who taryed for him. Than the truchman said, Ye Crysten man, are a noble man and a man of armes, and redy to gyve aunswere to our demaunde? I

[1] *Ciffreval.*

CAP. CLXVII Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

am suche a one, quod Affrenall: say what it pleace you, ye shal be harde and receyved. Than quod the trucheman: Syr, beholde here a gentleman and a nobleman of ours, who demaundeth the batayle to fyght with you hande to hande, and if ye wyll have mo, we shall fynde to the nombre of sixe[1] of ours redy to fight with vi.[1] of yours, and the quarell of our men shal be this; they say and wyll justifye that our faythe is better and more of valure than yours, for our faythe and lawe hath ben written syth the begynning of the worlde: and as for your lawe was founde out by one man, whome the Jewes hanged on a crosse. Ah, syr, quod Affrenall, speke no further of that mater; it appertaygneth nat to the to speke or dispute our fayth and lawe; but say to this Sarazyn, that he swere by his fayth and beleve to afferme the batayle, and let hym bringe to the nombre of x. all gentlemen of name and armes, and within this thre houres I shall bringe as many to try the mater. The truchman resyted those wordes to the Sarazyn, who be semyng had gret joy to accept and afferme the batayle. Thus they toke this enterprise bytwene them twayne and departed, and returned to their owne companyes. Tydinges herof came to sir Guy of Tremoyle, and to syr Willyam, his brother, and whan they met with Affrenall, they demaunded fro whence he came, and what he had done with the Sarazyn. Than Affrenall shewed hym all the hole mater, and how that he had taken the batayle, wherof the sayd two knightes were joyfull, and sayd: Affrenall speke to other, for we two shall be of the nombre of the ten. Syr, quod Affrenall, as God wyll, so be it: I trust I shall fynde ynowe that wolde be glad to fyght with the Sarazyns. Anone after, Affrenall mette with the lorde of Thune, and shewed hym the adventure, and demaunded if he wolde be one of the company. The lorde of Thune wolde nat refuse, but gladlye graunted to be one of their company. For every one that Affrenall dyd gette he myght have goten a C. if he had wolde. Sir Boucyquaut the yonger, syr Helyons of Lingnac, syr Johan Russell Englysshe, sir Johan Harpedon, Aleys Bodet,[2] and Bochet, all these accepted the batayle. Whan the nombre of ten were accomplisshed, every man drewe to their lodgynge to arme

[1] *dix.*

[2] *Baide.*

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

them incontynent to do batayle. Whan this was knowen in the hoost, and the knyghtes named that had taken on them that enterprise, than all other knyghtes and squyers sayd: A these ten knightes were borne in a good houre, that have founde this day so happy an adventure; wolde to God, quod dyvers, that we were of the nombre. Every knight and squyer was joyfull of this enterprise, and greatly praysed the adventure, savynge the gentle lorde of Coucy, who was nat contente therwith.

The lorde of Thune [1] was of the company of the lorde of Coucy; he shewed him the covenante he had made with Affrenall, to be one of the ten to fight with ten Sarazyns. As many as herde therof praysed greatly that adventure; but the lorde of Coucy spake against it and sayd: Ah, sirs, ye yonge people that knowe but lytell of the worlde, but rather exalte a folysshe dede than a wyse dede: in this enterprise I can se no reason, for dyvers causes; one is, that ten knyghtes and squyers of our men, all gentlemen of name and blode, must fyght agaynste as many Sarazyns: howe shall our men knowe whether they be gentlemen or no? If they lyst they may set agaynst our men ten rybauldes or varlettes, and if they hap to be dyscomfyted, we shall wyn nothynge but ten varlettes, and yet we shall be never the nerer to wyn the towne of Aufryke, but we shall thus put our good men in adventure. Peradventure they wyll set a busshment, and whan our ten men be in the felde to tary for their men, they wyll close them rounde about, wherby we shall lese them, and be so moche the febler. There I say, quod the lorde of Coucy, that Affrenall hath nat wrought wysely in this mater, for at the first whan the Sarazyn dyd defye him he shulde than have made another maner of aunswere than he dyd. He shulde have sayd howe he was nat the chefe heed of that army, but rather one of the poorest; and where as ye blame our faythe and byleve, ye are nat mete to have an answer made you therof by me; but if ye lyst I shall brynge you to the great lordes of our armye, and I shall take you under my save conducte, that ye shall go and returne in savegarde and suretie, and ther ye shall here the lordes speke. Thus Affrenall shulde have ledde the Sarazyn

[1] *Chin.*

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

to the duke of Burbone and to the counsayle, and there he shulde have been herde at leyser, and answered by good advyse; suche defyaunce in armes for suche quarell ought nat to passe without great deliberacion of good counsayle. And than if the batayle had ben agreed unto by us, yet it wolde have ben known of them what men by name and surname shulde acomplyssh the batayle; therupon we to have chosen other of our men for our honour and profite, and therupon to have had of the Sarazyns suretie and hostage, and they of us. This had ben a more metely maner to have used; wherfore, if this treatie might be withdrawen with reason, it shulde be well doone, and I wyll go and speke with the duke of Burbone, and to take counsayle with the lordes of the armye, and to knowe what they wyll say therto. Thus the lorde of Coucy departed fro the lorde of Thune, and wente to the Duke of Burbons tent, where all the barons assembled togyder to take counsayle in that mater. For all that the lorde of Coucy had sayde these wordes to the lorde of Thune, by maner of good counsayle and advyse, yet for all that he lefte nat, but armed hymselfe, and so came forth with other of his company redy to fight with the Sarazyns, and sir Guy of Tremoyle the formest knight. Thus the lordes of Fraunce were in counsayle in the duke of Burbons tent. Some thought this defiaunce to be reasonable, and susteyned greatly the wordes and opinyon of the lorde Coucy, sayeng howe it were better to make another maner of treatie. And some other, as specyall the lorde Loys erle of Arthoys, and sir Philyp of Bare sayd: Syth the armes be taken and accepted on our parte, it shulde be great blame to let it; wherfore in the name of God and Our Lady let our knyghtes and squyers furnysshe their enterprise. This purpose was holden and susteyned; but than, all thynges consydred, it was thought for the best that all the hole host shulde be armed, and be in ordre of batayle, to thentent that if the Sarazyns wolde do any falsnesse, they shulde be redy to resyst them. This was accomplysshed, and every man well armed, and drewe into the felde in good ordre of batayle redy to fyght, the Genovoys crosebowes on the one syde, and the knyghtes and squiers on the other syde, every lorde under his baner or

CAP. CLXVII

Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

penon of their armes; it was a goodly syght to beholde them. The Crysten men shewed well howe they had great desyre that the Sarazyns shulde have come and fought with them. And the ten Crysten knightes and squiers were redy in the felde alone of fro their company, abydynge for the ten Sarazins that shulde have fought with them. But it semed well they had no wyll therto: for whan they sawe howe the Crysten men ordred themselfe and were redy in batayle, they douted them and durst nat come forwarde, for all that they were thre tymes as many men as the Crysten men were. The Sarasyns wolde often tymes come well mounted and skrymyssh before the Crysten mennes batayle, and than returne againe; and this they dyd of pure malice to put the Crysten men to payne and traveyle. This day was so hote with the sonne, that before nor after there had been no suche sene, so that they that were moste lusty and fresshe were so sore chafed in their harnesse that they were nere overcome for faute of ayre and wynde. And always the x. Crysten men taryed aparte for the ten Sarazyns, but they nother sawe nor herde tydynges of any. Than they advysed to aproche the towne of Aufryke and to assayle it, seynge they were all redy armed and redy in batayle. And all day to kepe their honour the ten knightes kept the felde tyll it was nyght. There went to the assaute knyghtes and squyers, desyringe to do dedes of armes; they were hote and sore chafed, and yet they traveyled themselfe more and more: and if the Sarasyns had well knowen what case the Crysten men were in, they might have done them great dommage, and a reysed the siege, and by lykelyhode to have had the victory; for the Crysten men were so wery and so sore traveyled, that they had but lytell strenght; howebeit, they conquered by assaute the first wall of the towne where no man dwelte. Than the Sarazyns retrayed into the seconde fortresse, skrymysshynge without takynge of any great domage; but the Crysten men had domage ynough, for in skrimisshing and assautynge they were in the heate of the sonne and in the duste of the sandes tyll it was nyght, wherby dyvers knyghtes and squiers toke their dethe, whiche was great pytie and domage. By the said occasion there dyed, first, syr Willyam of Gacill, and sir Guissharde de la

Garde, syr Lyon Scalet, sir Guy de la Salvest,[1] syr Willyam of Staple, syr Wilyam Guyret, syr Geffrey of the Chapell, the lorde of Pierbuffier, the lorde of Bonet, sir Robert of Hanges, sir Stephyn Sanxere, sir Aubert de la Mote, sir Alaine of Champayn, sir Geffrey Fresiers, sir Rafe of Conflan, the lorde of Bourke, Artysion, sir Johan of Trey bastarde, sir Bertram de Sanache,[2] syr Pyncharde of Morlayne, sir Trystram his brother, syr Ayme of Cousay, syr Ayme of Tournay, sir Foukes of Stanfours,[3] sir Johan of Chatenas; all these were knightes: and there dyed of squiers, Foucans of Liege, Johan of Isles, Blondelet of Areton, John de la Mote, Bounberis, Floridas of Roque, the lorde of Belles, brother to Willyam Foudragay,[4] Water of Cauforus, Johan Morillen, Pier of Malves, Gyllot Villaine, John of Lound, John Perier, Johan Menne,[5] Johan of Lanay, and Willyam of Parke. There dyed mo than a lx. knightes and squyers, whiche, wysely to consyder, was a great losse. And if the lorde of Coucy had ben beleved, this had nat fortuned, for and they had kepte their lodgynges as they dyd before, they had receyved no suche domage.

CAP. CLXVII
Howe the Chrysten lordes and the Genowayes departed to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary.

[1] *Flavesche.*
[2] *La Mache.*
[3] *Escauffour.*
[4] *le seigneur de Bellefire, Guillemme Foudigray.*
[5] *Le Moine.*

CAP. CLXVIII

Howe after this adventure and domage that fell to the Crysten men by reason of this assaute before the towne of Aufryke, and that so many knightes and squyers were deed, they mayntayned themselfe more wysely after than they dyd before, and contynued their siege a longe season after.

OF this foresaid adventure the knightes and squiers of the host were sore displeased and abasshed; every man bewayled his frendes: at nyght they drewe to their lodginges and made gretter watche than they had made before, for dout of the Sarazyns. They passed that nyght without any other dommage. Of this adventure the Sarazins knewe nothyng, for if they had knowen what case the Christen men had been in, they might have done

CAP. CLXVIII

Howe after this adventure the Crysten men contynued their siege.

them great dommage; but alwayes they feared the Christen men. They durst never adventure to avaunce themselfe, but by scrimysshing and castynge of their dartes. They that were moost renomed in armes of their partie was Agadyngore of Olyferne, for he loved the doughter of the kyng of Thunes, wherby he was moost fresshest and joly in dedes of armes. Thus contynued the siege before the towne of Aufryke. In the realme of Fraunce and Englande, and in suche countreys as these knightes came fro, they herde no maner of tidynges of them, wherof their frendes were sore abasshed, and wyst nat what to saye nor thynke. In dyvers places, bothe in Englande, Heynalte, and in Fraunce there were processyons made, to pray to God for the prosperite of these Christen men. Thentencion of the Christen men beyng at the siege, was to abyde there tyll they had conquered the town of Affrike, outher by force, famyne, or treatie. The kyng of Cicyll wolde gladly it had ben so, and so wolde all other Christen yles adjoynyng, for this towne of Affrike was their utter enemye; and specially the Genovoys toke great payne to serve the lordes to their pleasure, to thentent they shulde nat be anoyed by reason of their long siege. To speke properly, it was a marveylous enterprice, and came of an highe corage of the Christen knightes and squyers, and specially the Frenchmen, who for all the losse of their knightes and squiers, and povertie that they endured, yet they contynued styll the siege at their great costes and charges without ayde or conforte. And the Genovoys, who were the first setters on that enterprice, began than to faynt and dissymule, for as the brute ran than, they wolde have ben gladde to have made a treatie with the Sarazyns, and to have lefte the knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande, and of other Christen countreys styll in that busynesse, as I shall shewe you hereafter as it was enformed me.

Nowe at this present tyme lette us leave to speke of this siege of Aufryke, and speke of a fest that the kynge of Englande made the same season in London.

CAP. CLXIX

Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London, whyle the Christen knyghtes and squyers were at the sege before the towne of Aufryke agaynst the Sarazyns; and howe this feest was publisshed in dyvers countreis and landes.

YE have herde before in this hystorie what a feest was holden at Paris whan quene Isabell of Fraunce made there her first entre, of the whiche feest tidynges sprede abrode into every countre. Than kynge Richarde of Englande and his thre uncles, heryng of this goodly fest at Paris, by the reportes of suche knyghtes and squyers of their owne as had ben at the same fest, ordayned a great fest to be holden at the cyte of London: where there shulde be justes and lx. knyghtes to abyde all commers, and with them lx. ladyes fresshely apparelled to kepe them company: and these knightes to just two dayes besyde Sonday, and the chalenge to begyn the next Sonday after the fest of saint Michaell, as than in the yere of oure Lorde God M.CCC. fourscore and ten, whiche Sonday the said lx. knightes and lx. ladyes at two of the clocke at afternoon shuld issue oute of the towre of London, and so to come along the cytie through Chepe, and so to Smythfelde: and that daye xii. knightes to be there redy to abyde all knyghtes straungers suche as wolde just. This Sonday was called the Sonday of the fest of chalenge; and on the Monday next after, the sayd lx. knightes to be in the same place redy to juste, and to abyde all commers curtesly to ron with rokettes; and to the best doer of the out syde shulde be gyven hym for a price a riche crowne of golde; and the best doer of the in syde, duely examyned by the ladyes in the quenes chambre, shulde have for a price a riche gyrdell of golde. And the Tuesday folowynge the knightes shulde be agayne in the same place, and to abyde all maner of squyers straungers and other, suche as wolde just with rokettes; and the best juster on the out syde shulde have for his price a courser sadled;

CAP. CLXIX

Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London.

and the chiefe doer of the in syde shulde have a faucon. The maner of this fest was thus ordayned and devised, and heraulides were charged to crye and publysshe this feest in Englande, in Scotlande, in Almayne, in Flaunders, in Brabant, in Heynalt, and in Fraunce. The heraldes departed some hider and some thider: these tidynges sprede abrode into dyvers countreys: the heraulides had daye and tyme suffycient. Knightes and squiers in dyvers countreys apparelled themselfes to be at this feest, some to se the maner of Englande, and some to juste. Whan these tidynges came into Heynalt, sir Wyllyam of Heynalt, erle of Ostrevaunt, who was yonge and lyberall, and desyrous to juste, purposed in hymselfe to go to the feest in Englande, to se and to honour his cosyns, kyng Rycharde of Englande and his uncles, whome he had never sene before. He hadde great desyre to be aquaynted with them, and desyred other knightes and squyers to kepe hym company, and specially the lorde of Gomegynes, bycause he was well acquaynted with Englysshemen, for he had ben dyvers tymes amonge them. Thanne sir Wyllyam of Haynaulte purposed whyle he made his provisyon to go into Hollande to se his father Auberte, erle of Heynaulte, Hollande, and Zelande, to the entente to speke with hym, and to take leave to go into Englande. He departed fro Quesnoy in Heynault, and rode tyll he came to Haye in Hollande, where the erle his father was at that tyme, and there he shewed his father his purpose that he was to go into Englande to se the countrey and his cosyns, whom he had never sene. Than theerle his father answered and sayd: Wyllyam my fayre son, ye have nothyng to do in Englande, for nowe ye be by covenaunt of maryage alyed to the realme of Fraunce, and your suster to be maryed to the duke of Burgoyne; wherfore ye nede nat to seke none other alyaunce. Dere father, quod he, I wyll nat go into Englande to make any alyaunce; I do it but to feest and make myrthe with my cosins there, whom as yet I never sawe, and bycause the feest whiche shal be holden at London is publisshed abrode; wherfore, syth I am signifyed therof and shulde nat go thyder, it shulde be sayd I were proude and presumptuous; wherfore in the savynge of myne honoure I wyll go thider; therfore, dere father, I requyre

you agree therto. Sonne, quod he, do as ye lyste; but I thynke surely it were better that ye taryed at home. Whan the erle of Ostrevaunt sawe that his wordes contented nat his father, he wolde speke no more therof, but fell in other communicacion; but he thought well ynough what he wolde do, and so dayly sent his provisyon towardes Calais. Gomegynes the heraulde was sente into Englande fro therle of Ostrevaunt, to gyve knowlege to kynge Rycharde and to his uncles howe that he wolde come honorably to his feest at London. Of those tidynges the kynge and his uncles were ryght joyouse, and gave to the heraulde great giftes, whiche after stode hym in great stede, for after in the ende of his dayes he fell blynde; I can nat tell if God were displeased with hym or nat; in his dayes he lyved marveylously; wherfore in his olde dayes, and that he hadde loste his syght, there were but fewe that were sorie therof. Thus the erle of Ostrevaunt departed from Haye in Hollande, and toke leave of his father, and so retourned to Quesnoy in Heynaulte to the countesse his wyfe.

CAP. CLXIX
Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London.

This noble feest wherof I make mencyon was publysshed and cryed in dyvers places, wherby knyghtes and squyers and other advaunsed themselfes to go thyder. The erle Walleran of saynt Pole, who as than had to his wyfe kyng Richarde of Englandes suster, he prepared greatly to go into Englande, and so came to Calys. And also the erle Ostrevaunt departed fro Heynaulte, well accompanyed by knyghtes and squyers, and so passed throughe the countrey of Arthoys, and came also to Calis, and there he founde the erle of saynt Poule, and the shyppes passagers of Dover were there redy. And whan the shippes were charged and the wynde good, these lordes tooke the see; howebeit, as it was shewed me, and I thynke it true, that therle of saynt Poule passed first into Englande before the erle of Ostrevaunt. And whan he came to London he founde there the kyng, and his brother in lawe sir Johan Hollande, and other lordes and knyghtes of Englande, who receyved hym with great joye, and demaunded of hym tidynges of the realme of Fraunce. He aunswered well and wysely. Than therle of Ostrevaunt passed over on a Thursdaye and so came to Canterbury, and on the Fridaye he visyted saint Thomas shrine, and offred there in the mornyng, and laye there all that daye, and the

CAP. CLXIX
Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London.

nexte day rode to Rochester; and bycause he had so gret a company and cariages, he rode but small journeys, to ease his horse; and on the Sondaye he rode to dyner to Dertforde, and after dyner to London, to be at the feest, whiche began the same Sonday.

On the Sonday nexte after the feest of saynt Michaell, this feest and triumphe shulde begyn, and that daye to be done in Smythfelde justes called the chalenge. So the same Sonday, about thre of the clocke at afternoone, there issued out of the towre of London, first, threscore coursers apparelled for the justes, and on every one a squier of honour ridyng a softe pase. Than issued out threscore ladyes of honour mounted on fayre palfreys, ridyng on the one syde, richely apparelled; and every lady ledde a knight with a cheyne of sylver, which knightes were apparelled to just. Thus they cam ridynge alonge the stretes of London with great nombre of trumpettes and other mynstrelles, and so came to Smythfelde, where the quene of Englande and other ladies and damoselles were redy in chambres richely adorned to se the justes, and the king was with the quene. And whan the ladyes that ledde the knyghtes were come to the place, they were taken downe fro their palfreys, and they mounted up into chambres redy aparelled for them. Than the squiers of honour alighted fro the coursers, and the knightes in good order mounted on them; than their helmes were sette on and made redy at all poyntes. Than thyder came the erle of saynt Poule, nobly accompanyed with knyghtes and squyers, all armed with harnesse, for the justes to begynne the feest, whiche incontynent beganne; and there justed all knyghtes straungers, suche as wolde and hadde leysar and space, for the nyght came on. Thus these justes of chaleng began, and contynued tyll it was night: than knyghtes and ladyes withdrue themselfes, and the quene was lodged besyde Poules in the bysshoppes palace, and there was the supper prepared. The same evennynge came therle of Ostrevaunt to the kyng, who was nobly receyved.

Nowe for these justes on the Sonday: for the aunswerer without, the erle Walleran of saynt Poule had the price; and of the chalengers, the erle of Huntyngdon. There was goodly daunsyng in the quenes lodgyng, in the presence of

the kynge and his uncles, and other barons of Englande, and ladyes and damoselles, contynuyng tyll it was daye, whiche was tyme for every persone to drawe to their lodgynges, except the kyng and the quene, who lay there in the bysshoppes palays, for there they laye all the feestes and justes duryng.

CAP. CLXIX
Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London.

On the nexte day, whiche was Mondaye, ye myght have sene in dyvers places of the cytie of London squyers and varlettes goynge aboute with harnesse, and doynge of other busynesse of their maisters. After noon kynge Richarde came to the place all armed, richely apparelled, accompanyed with dukes, erles, lordes, and knyghtes; he was one of the inner partie. Than the quene, well accompanyed with ladyes and damosels, came to the place where the justes shulde be, and mounted into chambres and scaffoldes ordayned for them. Than came into the felde the erle of Ostrevaunte, well accompanyed with knyghtes of his countrey, and all were redy to juste: than came the erle of saynt Poule and other knyghtes of Fraunce, suche as wolde juste. Than began the justes; every man payned hymselfe to gette honour. Some were stryken down fro their horses. These justes contynued tyll it was nere nyght: than every person drewe to their lodgynges, knyghtes and ladyes, and at the hour of supper every man drewe to the courte: there was a goodly supper and well ordayned. And as that day the price was gyven to the erle of Ostrevaunt for the best juster of the utter partie, and well he deserved it; the price was gyven hym by the ladyes, lordes, and herauldes, who were ordained to be judges. And of the inner partie a knyght of Englande, called sir Hughe Spenser, had the price.

The nexte daye, Tuesday, there was justes agayne in the same place, of all maner of squyers, whiche endured tyll it was nyght, in the presence of the kyng, quene, lordes, and ladyes. Than every man drewe to their lodgynges, as they had done the dayes before, and at supper they retourned to the bysshoppes palais, where the kyng, the quene, and the ladyes were. There was a goodly and a costely supper, and after great daunsynge, contynuynge all nyght. The Wednisdaye after dyner they justed in the same place, all maner of knightes and squyers suche as wolde juste. That was a sore

CAP. CLXIX

Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London.

and a rude justes, enduryng tyll nyght, and than withdrue, and at the hour of supper they resorted where they supped before. The Thursdaye the kyng made a supper to all knyghtes and gentylmen straungers, and the quene to all ladyes and damoselles. Than on the Friday the duke of Lancastre made a dyner for all knightes and squyers straungers, whiche was a goodly dyner. And on the Saturdaye the kyng and all the lordes departed fro London to Wyndsore; and therle of Ostrevaunt and the erle of saynt Poule, with all other knightes and squyers straungers, were desyred to acompany the kyng to Wyndsore; every man rode as it was reason to the castell of Wyndsore. Than there began agayne great feestes, with dyners and suppers gyven by the king: and specially the kyng dyde great honour to the erle of Ostrevaunt his cosyn, whiche erle was desyred by the kyng and his uncles that he wolde be content to take on hym the order of the garter. The erle aunswered, howe he wolde take counsayle in that mater. Than he counsayled with the lorde of Gomegines and with Fierabras of Vertan bastarde, who in no wyse wolde discorage nor counsayle hym to refuce the order of the garter. So he toke it on hym, wherof the knightes and squyers of Fraunce suche as were there had great marveyle, and murmured sore therat among themselfe, sayeng: The erle of Ostrevaunt sheweth well that his courage enclyneth rather to be Englysshe than Frenche, whan he taketh on hym the order of the garter, and weareth the kynge of Englandes devyse. He sheweth well he regardeth nat the house of Fraunce, nor the house of Burgoyne. The tyme wyll come he shall repent hymselfe: all thynges consydred, he knoweth nat what he hath done, for he was wel beloved with the Frenche kynge, and with the duke of Thourayne his brother, and with all the blode royall, in suche wyse, that whan he came to Parys or into any other place to any of them, they ever made hym more honour than any other of their cosyns. Thus these Frenchemen evyll accused hym without cause: for that he had done was nothyng contrary nor hurtfull to the realme of Fraunce, nor to his cosyns nor frendes in Fraunce; for he thought none otherwyse but honour and love, and to pleace his cosyns in Englande, and to be therby

CAP. CLXIX
Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London.

the rather a good meane bytwene Fraunce and Englande, if nede were: nor the daye that he toke on hym the order of the garter and his othe, every man maye well understande that he made none alyaunce to do any prejudyce to the realme of Fraunce. For that he dyde was but for love and good company; howebeit, no man canne let the envyous to speke yvell.

Whan they had daunced and sported them a certayne space in the castell of Wynsore, and that the kyng hadde gyven many fayre gyftes to the knightes and squyers of honour of the realme of Fraunce and Heynaulte, and specially to the yonge erle of Ostrevaunt, than every man toke leave of the kynge and of the quene, and of other ladyes and damoselles, and of the kynges uncles. Thane the erle of saynt Poule and the Frenchemen, and the Henowayes and Almaygnes departed. Thus ended this great feest in the cytie of London, and every man went to their owne. Than it fortuned, as anone brute ronneth farre of, the Frenche kynge, his brother, and his uncles, were enfourmed by suche as hadde ben in Englande at the sayde feest, of every thyng that hadde been done and sayd; nothynge was forgotten, but rather more putte to, in the exaltyng of yvell dedes, than fortheryng of good dedes. It was shewed the kynge playnly how the erle of Ostrevaunt had ben in Englande, and taken great payne to exalte and to do honoure to the Englysshemen, and in helpynge forwarde the feest holden at London: and howe he hadde the chiefe prise and honoure of the justes above all other straungers, and howe he had spoken so fayre to the Englysshmen that he was become the kynge of Englandes man, and had made servyce and alyaunce with hym: and taken on hym the order of the garter in the chapell of saynt George in Wyndsore, whiche order was fyrste stablysshed by kynge Edwarde the Thirde and his sonne prince of Wales; and howe that no man myght entre into that confrary or company, without he make servyaunt or othe, never to beare armoure agaynste the crowne of Englande; whiche promyse they sayd the erle of Ostrevaunt had made without any reservacyon. With these tidynges the Frenche kynge, his brother, and his uncles were sore troubled and grevously displeased with the erle of Ostrevaunt. Than

CAP. CLXIX
Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London.

the Frenche kyng sayde, Lo, sirs, ye maye se what it is to do for hym. It is nat yet a yere paste sythe he desyred me that his brother myght be bysshoppe of Cambray; and by these tidynges that gyfte were rather prejudycial to the realme of Fraunce than avauncement: it hadde been better we had gyven it to our cosyn of saynt Poule: the Heynoways dyd never good to us, nor never wyll, for they be proude, presumptuous, and to fierse; alwayes they have owed better good wyll to the Englysshemen than to us; but a daye shall come they shall repent them: we wyll sende to the erle of Ostrevaunt, commaundynge hym to come to us, to do us homage for the countie of Ostrevaunt, or els we shall put hym fro it and annexe it to oure realme. They of his counsayle answered and sayde, Sir, ye have well devysed; lette it be done as ye have sayde. It maye well be thought that the duke of Burgoyne, whose doughter the erle of Ostrevaunt had to his wyfe, was nothynge content with those tidynges, for alwayes he had avaunsed his sonne of Ostrevaunt towardes the kyng and his counsaile. This mater was nat forgotten, but incontinent the Frenche kyng wrote sharpe letters to therle of Ostrevaunt, who was at Quesnoy in Heynaulte, commaundyng hym to come to Parys to do his homage before the kynge and the other peeres of Fraunce for the countie of Ostrevaunt, or els the kyng wolde take it fro hym and make hym warre. Whan the erle had well oversene these letters, and parceyved howe that the Frenche kyng and his counsayle were displeased with hym, to make his answere he assembled his counsayle, as the lorde of Fountayns, the lorde of Gomegynes, sir Wyllyam of Hermes, the lorde of Trassegines, the bayly of Heynaulte, the lorde of Sancelles, sir Rase of Montigny, the abbot of Crispyne, Johan Sulbart,[1] Jaquemart Barrier of Valencennes. These wyse men counsayled togider what answere might be made to the kynges letters. There were many reasons alleged; at last, all thynges consydred, they thought it for the best to write to the Frenche kynge and to his counsayle, to take a daye to answere clerely to all maner of demaundes, by the mouthe of certayne credyble persons, and none by writyng. And in the meane season they sente certayne notable personages to the erle of Heynaulte and

[1] *Seuwart.*

CAP. CLXIX
Of a feest and justes made by the kyng of Englande in London.

duke Aubert of Holande, to have their counsayle what answere to make. Thus they dyde: they wrote swetely and courtesly to the kynge and to his counsayle, so that with those fyrst letters the kyng and his counsayle was well content. Than therle and his counsayle sent into Hollande the lorde of Trassegines, and the lorde of Sancelles, Johan Seuvart, and Jaques Barrier. They rode to the erle of Heynault, and shewed hym the state of the countie of Heynault, and the letters that the Frenche kyng hadde sent to his sonne the erle of Ostrevaunt. The erle of Heynaulte had marveyle of that mater, and said, Sirs, I thought never otherwyse but that it shulde come thus to passe: Wyllyam my sonne had nothyng to do to go into Englande; I have delyvered hym the rule and governaunce of the countie of Heynaulte; he might have done and used hymselfe accordyng to the counsayle of the countrey. Sirs, I shall tell you what ye shall do: Go to my fayre cosyn the duke of Burgoyn, for it lyeth well in his power to regarde and to sette an order in all thynges demaunded by the Frenche kynge; I canne gyve you no better counsayle. With this answere they departed out of Hollande and came into Heynault, and there shewed what answere they had; wherwith the erle and his counsayle were content. There was assigned to go into Fraunce to the duke of Burgoyne, the lorde of Tressegines, sir Wyllyam of Hermes, sir Rase of Montigny, Johan Seuvart, and Jaques Barrier. To shewe and declare all the processe and sute that they made at the Frenche courte shulde be over longe to resyte. But finally, all thynges concluded, for all that the duke of Burgoyne coulde do, there was non other remedy but that the erle of Ostrevaunt must come personally to Parys, and to knowe his homage due to the Frenche kyng for the countie of Ostrevaunt, or els surely to have warre. The lorde of Coucy and sir Olyver of Clysson toke great payne for the erles sake, but sir John Mercier and the lorde de la Ryver labored on the contrarye syde as moche as they might.

Nowe let us leave to speke any more of this mater, and retourne to speke of the lordes and knyghtes of Fraunce, who were at the siege before the strong towne of Aufryke agaynst the Sarazyns.

CAP. CLXX

Howe and by what incydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke, and by what occasyon and howe, every man retourned to their owne countreis.

YE have herde here before howe the Christen men had besieged the stronge towne of Aufryke by lande and by see, settyng all their ententes howe to conquere it: for they thought if they might wyn it, the brute therof shulde sounde to their great honours and prayse, and howe they myght there kepe themselfe toguyder and to resyst agaynst their ennemyes, sayeng: howe they shulde alwayes have conforte of the Christen men, and specially of the Frenche kyng, who was yong and desyrous of dedes of armes, consydring howe he had truce with the Englysshmen for two yeres to come. The Sarazyns feared the same; wherfore dayly they made provysyon for the towne, and refresshed alwaies their towne with newe fressh men, hardy adventurers, accordynge to their usage. Thus the season passed on; and after the Christen men hadde suffred the great losse of their companyons with lytell wynnynge or advauntage on their partye, all their hole hoost were in a maner dyscomforted, for they coulde nat se howe to be revenged. Than many of theym beganne to murmure, sayenge: We lye here all in vayne; as for the skrymysshes that we make, therby shall we never wyn the towne of Aufryke, for if we slee any of them, for eche of them they wyll gette agayne ten other: they be in their owne countrey; they have vytayles and provysyons at their pleasure, and that we have is with great daunger and parell. What shall we thynke to do? If we lye here all this wynter, longe and colde nyghtes, we shal be morfounded and frosen to dethe: thus we shall be in a herde case by dyvers wayes. First, in wynter no man dare take the see for the cruell and tyrryble wyndes and tempestes of the see, for the sees and tempestes are more fierser in wynter than in somer: and if we shulde lacke vytayles but eight dayes togyther, and that the see

CAP. CLXX

Howe and by whatincydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke.

wolde suffre none to come to us, we were all deed and lost without remedy. Secondly, though it were so that we had vytayles and all thynges necessary without daunger, yet howe coulde our watche endure the payne and traveyle contynually to watche every night? The parell and adventure is over herde for us to beare, for our enemyes who be in their owne countrey, and knowe the countrey, may come by nyght and assayle us to their great advauntage, and do us great domage, as they have done allredy. Thyrdly, if for faute of good ayre and of swete fresshe meates, wherwith we have been norysshed, that mortalyte hap to fall in our hoost, we shall dye every man fro other, for we have no remedy to resyst agaynst it. Also furthermore, if the Genovoys turne agaynst us, which are rude people and traytours, they may be nyght tyme entre into their shyppes, and so leve us here to pay for the scotte. All these doutes are to be consydred by our capytaynes, who lye at their ease, and regarde nat the case we be in. And also some of the Genovoys spared nat to speke, and sayd in raylynge to the Crysten men: What men of armes be ye Frenchemen? whan we departed fro Genne we thought that within fyftene dayes that ye had layen at siege before the towne of Aufryke ye shulde have conquered it: and nowe we have ben here more thanne two monthes, and as yet we have done nothyng; as for such assautes and skrymysshes as ye make, the towne nedeth nat to feare this yere, nor yet the nexte; by this maner of meanes ye shall never conquere this realme of Aufryke, nor yet of Thunes. This comunynge sprede so abrode in the hoost, that it came to the knowlege of the gret lordes and capytaynes of the armye, and specyally the lorde of Coucy, who was sage and discrete, and to whose counsayle the chefe parte of the host inclyned ever unto. He sayd to himselfe and considered howe all these doutes were greatly to be feared; and to the entente to ordayn hastely remedy, he assembled secretly all the great lordes of the hoost togyder in counsayle, bycause wynter aproched. This counsayle was kept in the duke of Burbons tente, and the conclusyon was to dyslodge for that seasone, and every man to retourne the same way as they came; the lordes prepared secretly for this. Than the patrons of the galees were sente for, and

CAP. CLXX Howe and by whatincydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke.

their purpose was shewed unto them, and they wyst nat what to say to the contrary; at laste they sayde: My lordes take no doute nor suspecte in us; we have made you promesse, wherfore we wyll acquyte us truely to you: for if we wolde have enclyned to the treaties of the Affrykans, they wolde have[1] desyred to have had peace with us, but we wolde never gyve heryng to them: we wyll kepe our faythe to you, syth we have promysed so to do. Sirs, quod the lorde of Coucy, we repute you for good and trewe and valyaunt men, but we have consydred dyvers thynges; wynter aprocheth, and we are destytute of vitayles and other provysions. By the grace of God, we ones retourned into the realme of Fraunce, we shall so enfourme the kynge, who is yonge and lusty, and desyrous to knowe the maner of these marches, and seynge that he hath treuce with the Englysshemen, we thynke small counsaylynge wyll cause hym to come hyther with a puyssaunce royall, as well to ayde the king of Cicyll as to make some conquest upon the Sarazyns; wherfore, syrs, we requyre you make redy your galees and all other vessels, for we wyll departe within shorte dayes. The Genovoys were nothynge content with the Frenchemen, in that they wolde departe fro the siege before the stronge towne of Aufryke; but they coulde fynde none other remedy, wherfore it behoved them to suffre. A generall brute ran through the hoost, howe the Genovoys were aboute to bargayne with the Sarazyns, and take their parte, and to betray the Crysten men. The Crysten men beleved this to be true, and some said one to another: Our soverayne capitayns, as the duke of Burbone, the erle Dolphyn of Auvergne, and the lorde Coucy, syr Guy de la Tremoyle, syr Johan of Vyen, and syr Phylyppe of Bare, they knowe surely howe every thynge gothe, and therfore we shall thus sodaynely departe fro the siege. Their departure was publysshed throughe the hoost, and every man commaunded to convey every thing into their shyppes. Than sarvauntes and varlettes were redy to trusse all maner of baggages, and to cary it into their vessels lyenge at ancre: when every thyng was conveyed, every man entred into suche shyppes as they came in, and dyvers barones and knyghtes made covenaunt with their patrons and maysters of their shyppes, some to sayle to Naples, some to Cicyll, some to

[1] *gauc* P.

Cyper, and some to Rodes, to the entent to go to Jherusalem. Thus they departed fro the siege of Aufryke, and toke the see in the syght of the Sarazyns that were within the towne. Whan they sawe their departure, they made gret noyse with blowyng of hornes and sownynge of taburs, and shoutynge and cryeng, in suche wyse, that the host of Sarazyns that lay abrode knewe therof. Than ye shulde have sene the yonge Sarazyns mounte on their horses, and came to the place where the siege had layne, to se if they coulde have founde any thynge there; Agadingor of Olyferne, and Brahadyne of Thunes formest. And there they sawe howe the Christen men were so clene departed that they had lefte nothynge behynde that they myght cary. There the Sarazyns rode up and downe more than two houres, to se the maner howe the Crysten men had lodged theymselfe at the siege; they greatly praysed the Crysten mennes subtyltie, in that they had made so many pyttes in the erthe to have therby fresshe water. And whan they hadde been there a certayne space, and well regarded the galees and shyppes on the see, some of theym entred into the towne of Aufryke, to se their frendes and alyes, and other departed agayne to their lodgynges, and made bost of their voyage: sayenge howe the Crysten men durst abyde there no lengar: and sayd howe their puissaunce was nothynge to regarde, and that they wolde never more sette so moche by the Frenchemen nor by the Genovoys as they had done before: and of this they sayd trouth; I shall tell you howe and wherfore.

CAP. CLXX

Howe and by whatincydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke.

After that this siege was thus contynued, as I was enfourmed, the Sarazins waxed proude, for they sawe well howe the Genovoys had done their full power to hurte and to anoy them, and they sawe that this voyage was to their great coste, and yet had won but lytell, whiche was of trouthe. And all that season the Sarazyns knewe nothing of the deth of so many Crysten knyghtes and squyers as were slayne at the great skrymysshe; but the same day that the Crysten men departed they had knowledge therof, and I shall shewe you by what meanes. The Sarazyns founde in the felde a varlet of the Genovoys, lyenge on the grounde sore sycke of the hote fever, and was nat able to go to the galees whan his felowes departed. And of the fyndynge of

CAP. CLXX
Howe and by whatincydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke.

this varlet the Sarazyns were ryght joyfull, and brought him before their lordes, and shewed howe they had founde hym; than a trucheman was set to here his examynacion. In the begynnynge he wolde shewe nothyng, for he rekened himselfe but deed, and he desyred the Sarazyns incontynent that they wolde put hym to deth. Than the lordes of the hoost, as Agadingor Dolyferne, Brahadyn of Thunes, and dyvers other, thought if they shulde cause hym to dye they shulde wyn nothyng therby, yet rather to save his lyfe, so that he wolde shewe the trouthe of that he shulde be demaunded. Than it was shewed hym, that if he wolde without lyenge shewe the trouth, his lyfe shulde be saved, and to be delyvered franke and free, and sent into his owne countrey by the first shyp that shulde come thence, outher into the lande of Geneve or Marcyll, and also that he shulde have gyven to hym a C. besantes of golde. Whan the varlet, who feared dethe, herde this promesse, he was well comforted, for he knew well whatsoever the Sarazyns promyse by their faythe shulde be truely kepte, and also ye knowe well naturally every man is lothe to dye. Than he said to the truchman, Cause the lordes to swere on their lawe to upholde all that ye sayd, and than shall I aunswere you to all that I shal be examyned of, as farre forth as I knowe. The trucheman shewed this to the lordes, and they made faythfull promesse by their fayth to fullfyll their promesse. Than the varlet sayd, Nowe demaunde what ye wyll, and I shall answere. Than firste he was demaunded of whence he was: he answered and sayd, he was of Portvances. Than they demaunded of hym of the feates of the Frenchemen that had been at the siege. He named to them dyvers, for he hadde kepte often tymes company with haraulde, by whome he had lerned dyvers of their names. Than they desyred to knowe the occasion why they departed so sodaynely fro the siege: wherto he answered wysely and sayd: As for that I cannat tell, but by supposynge, and acordyng as I have herde spoken in our host; as for me, I was never a counsayle with the lordes; but, as the brute went, the Frenchmen were in doute of the Genovoys that they shulde betray them; and the Genovoys denyed it, and sayd they never thought it, nor never wolde, and blamed the Frenchmen that they

shulde so slaunder them: also it was sayd, that parte of the occasyon of their departure was bycause the wynter drue nere, and they were afrayde of taking of suche domage as they had receyved before. What domage was that? quod the lordes. Syrs, quod he, the same daye that ten of our men shulde have fought with ten of yours, they lost about a lx. knightes and squiers of name and armes; the Genovoys sayd, for that cause they departed. They beleved well the varlet, of whiche newes the lordes Sarazyns had great joye. They enquered of hym no further, but uphelde to him all their promesses; and so he retourned to Portvances and to Geane, and shewed all this adventure, and what he had said and herde, and he receyved no blame therof. Than the Sarazyns sayd amonge themselfe, they shulde nat nede to care for the Frenchemen nor for the Genovoys of a longe season after, and said, howe before the towne of Aufryke they had taken no profyte; howebeit, they sayde they wolde take better hede to their portes and havens and the see costes of their realmes, and specyally to the straytes of Marroke; they set sure watche, that the Genovoys nor Venysians shulde nat passe that wayes into Englande nor into Flaunders with their marchaundyses without payenge of a great trybute, and yet that to be by greate grace and lycence. Thus the Sarazyns assembled and alyed them togyther of dyvers realmes, as of Aufryke, Thunes, Bogy, Marroke, Belmaryn, Tremessyans, and Granade: all agreed togyder to kepe straytly their portes and passages, and to sette galees armed on the see to a great nombre, to the entent to be lordes and maisters of the see. And all this they dyd for the great hatred that they had to the Frenchmen and Genovoys, bycause they had been at the siege before Aufryke. Thus they dyd great trouble to the goers and commers on the see, so that moche yvell and myschefe grewe therby: for by meanes that the Sarazyns were thus lordes of the see, suche marchaundyses as came fro Dammas, fro Cayre, fro Alexaunder, fro Venyce, fro Naples, and fro Geane, were in that season so dere in Flaunders and so scarce, that many thynges coulde nat be gotte, nouther for golde nor sylver, and specially all spycery was wonderfull dere and gayson.

CAP. CLXX

Howe and by whatincydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke.

Ye have herde here before howe the Crysten men departed

CAP. CLXX
Howe and by whatincydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke.

fro the siege of Aufryke: they all passed the see, but all aryved nat at one porte, for some were so sore tourmented on the see, that they retourned in great daunger: howebeit, some of theym returned to Geane. Processyons were made in Fraunce for their good spede, for there was no tydynges herde of them. The lady of Coucy, the lady of Sulley, the lady Dolphyn of Auvergne, and other ladyes of Fraunce, who had their husbandes in this voyage, were in great sorowe as longe as the voyage endured; and whan tydynges came howe they were passed the see, they were ryght joyfull. The duke of Burbone and the lorde of Coucy retourned prively, and lefte behynde them all their caryage and trayne, and so they came to Parys aboute saynte Martyns tyde in wynter. The Frenche kynge was joyouse of their comynge, as it was reason, and demaunded of them tydinges of Barbary and of their voyage: they shewed al that they knewe and had herde and sene. The kynge and the duke of Thourayne were glad to here them speke. Than the kyng sayd, If we can bringe it aboute to make peace in the churche, and bytwene us and Englande, we shall gladly make a voyage with an army royall into those parties, to exalte the Crysten faythe, and to confounde the infydels, and to acquyte the dedes of our predecessours, as kyng Philyp and kinge Johan: for they bothe, eche after other tooke on them the crossey, to have gone to the holy lande, and they had gone thyder if the warres had nat fallen in their realme; in lykewyse we wolde gladly make suche a voyage. Thus the Frenche kynge comuned with these lordes, and so the day passed; and lytell and lytell men came home fro their voyage, and the kynge helde hymselfe that season most comenly at Parys, somtyme at the castell of Lowre, and another tyme in the howse of saynt Powle, where the quene most comenly laye. So it fell in the same season, aboute the feest of saynt Andrewe, and that all knyghtes and squyers were retourned fro their voyage into Barbary, wherof all the worlde spake. Than in the Frenche kynges court there was a mocyon moved for a newe journey to be made thyder. And bycause that the Frenche kynge had gret affection to dedes of armes, he was counsayled and exorted therto, and it was sayde to hym: Syr, ye have

devocyon and great ymagynacion to go over the see, to fyght agaynst the infydels, and to conquere the holy lande. That is trewe, quod the kynge; my thought nyght and day is on none other thyng. And, as I was enfourmed, it was the lorde of Tremoyle and sir Johan Mercier that had these wordes to the king, for they owed their favour to pope Clement beynge at Avignon. And loke, what they two sayd the kyng wolde agre to them, for they were most speciall in favour. Than they sayd to the kynge, Syr, ye can nat with good conscience take on you this voyage, without first the church be all one: syr, begyn first at the heed, than your enterprise shall take good conclusyon. Why, quod the kynge, where wolde ye have me to begyn? Syr, quod they, at this present tyme ye be nat charged with any great busynesse; ye have treuce with the Englysshemen for a longe space; wherfore, syr, if it please you this peace durynge, ye myght make a goodly voyage; and, syr, we can se no better nor more honourable a voyage for you thanne to go to Rome with a great puyssaunce of men of armes, and pull downe and dystroy that ante-pape, whome the Romayns by force hath created and set in the seate cathedrall of saynt Peter: if ye wyll, ye maye well accomplysshe this voyage, and we suppose ye can nat passe your tyme more honorably; and, syr, ye maye well know, that if this antepape and his cardynals knowe ones that ye be mynded to come on them with an army, they wyll yelde themself, and aske mercy. The kynge remembred hymselfe a lytell, and sayd, howe he wolde do as they had devysed, for surely he said he was moche bounde to pope Clement: for the yere past he had ben at Avygnon, where as the Pope and his Cardynals made hym ryght honourable chere, and had gyven more than was demaunded, bothe to hymselfe, to his brother, and to his uncles; wherfore the kynge sayd it hadde deserved to have some recompence; and also at his departure fro Avignon he had promysed the Pope to helpe and to assyst hym in his quarell. At that season there was at Parys with the kyng the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne. Than it was agreed and concluded, that the nexte Marche after, the kynge shulde departe fro Parys, and take the way towardes Savoy and Lombardy, and the erle of

CAP. CLXX

Howe and by whatincydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke.

CAP. CLXX Howe and by what incydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Aufryke.

Savoy to send his cosyn germayne with hym: and the kynge to have under his charge the duke of Tourayne his brother, with four thousande speares, and the duke of Burgoyne with two thousande speares, and the duke of Berrey two thousande, the constable of Fraunce two thousande speares, with the Bretons, Xaintoners and lowe marches, the duke of Burbon a thousande speares, the lorde of saynt Poll and the lorde of Coucy a thousande speares; and all these men of armes to be payed in hande for thre monethes, and so fro terme to terme. And whan those tydynges were knowen in Avignon, pope Clement and his cardynals were greatly rejoysed, and thought in a maner their enterprise atcheved. Also the kinge was counsayled nat to leave the duke of Bretayne behynde hym, but to sende and to desyre hym to prepare hymselfe to go with him in this voyage. The kyng wrote notably to hym, and sent his letters by a man of honour, an offycer of armes, signyfyenge the duke in his letters the state of this voyage. Whan the duke had red these letters, he turned hymselfe and smyled, and called to hym the lorde of Mountboucher, and sayd: Syr, harke and regarde well what the Frenche kyng hath written to me; he hath enterprised to departe this next Marche with a great puissaunce to go to Rome, and to distroy suche as take parte with pope Bonyface. As God helpe me his journey shall tourne to nothynge, for in shorte space he shall have more flax to his dystaffe than he can well spynne; I thynke he wyll leave soone his folyssh thought. And also he desyreth me to go with hym with two thousande speares; howebeit, I wyll honour him as I ought to do, and I wyll write to him joyously, bycause he shall be contente, and shewe hym, howe if he go in this voyage he shall nat go without me, seyng it pleaseth him to have my company. Howebeit, sir, of Mountboucher, I say unto you, I wyll nat traveyle a man of myne for all that the kyng hath purposed and sayd: nothynge shall there be done in that behalfe. The duke of Bretayne wrote goodly letters and swete to the Frenche kynge, and the officer of armes returned with theym to Parys, and delyvered them to the kynge, who redde them, and was well contented with the aunswere.

CAP. CLXXI

Of the Englysshe knyghtes that were sente to Parys to the Frenche kynge, fro the kynge of Englande, and his uncles, to treate for a peace.

THE wyll and purpose of the Frenche kynge none wolde breke, for it pleased greatly all the knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce, bycause they wyst nat where better to enploy their season, and every man prepared towardes that voyage; and namely the clergy of all the provynces of the realme ordayned and graunted a tayle, to sende at their costes and charges men of warre with the kynge. Howebeit, this voyage tourned to nothynge, as the duke of Bretayne had sayd before, and I shall shewe you by what incidence. About the feest of Candelmas, came other tydynges to the Frenche kyng, and to his counsayle, whiche they loked nothynge for. Certayne of the kynge of Englandes counsayle, and suche as were of his privy chambre, were sent nobly to Parys to the Frenche kyng; and they that were chefe of this legacyon was, syr Thomas Percy, syr Loys Clyfforde, and sir Robert Briquet, with dyvers other knyghtes in their company, but I herde as than no mo named. Whan these thre knyghtes were come to Parys to hym, than the Frenche kyng was desyrous to knowe what it myght meane, that the kynge of Englande dyd sende so hastely of his counsayle to hym. These knyghtes of Englande, syr Thomas Percy, and other, alyghted in Parys, in the streate called the Crosse, at the signe of the Castell. The Frenche kynge as than lay in the castell of Lowre, and his brother the duke of Tourayne with hym, and his other thre uncles in other lodgynges in the cytie, and the constable syr Olyver Clysson. It was nere hande noone whan the Englysshemen came to Parys, and they kept their lodgynge all that day and nyght after, and the next day aboute nyne of the clocke they lept on their horses ryght honorably, and rode to the castell of Loure to the kyng, where he with his brother and uncles, the erle of saint Poll, the lorde of Coucy, the constable of

CAP. CLXXI

Of the Englysshe knyghtes that were sente to Parys to treate for a peace.

Fraunce, sir Johan of Vien, and sir Guy de la Tremoyle, with dyvers other barons of Fraunce, were redy to receyve the Englysshe ambassadours, who alyghted at the gate and entred in: and there receyved them the lorde de la Ryver, syr Johan Mercyer, sir Lyon of Lignach, sir Peter Villers, sir Willyam of Tremoyle, and syr Marcell. There they receyved them honourably, and brought theym into the chambre, where the kynge taryed for them. Than they dyd of their bonettes and kneled downe. Syr Thomas Percy hadde the letters of credence that the kynge of Englande had sente to the Frenche kynge; he delyvered them to the kyng, who tooke them, and caused the knyghtes to stande up: than they stepte somewhat backe. The kynge opyned the letters and red them, and sawe well that they had credence; than he called to hym his brother, and his uncles, and shewed them the letters. Than his uncles sayd: Syr, call forthe the knyghtes, and here what they wyll say. Than they aproched, and were commaunded to declare their credence. Than sir Thomas Percy spake, and sayd: Dere sir, the entencyon of our soverayne lorde the kinge of Englande is, that he wolde gladly that suche of his specyall counsayle, as his uncles, dukes of Lancastre, Yorke, and Glocestre, and other prelates of Englande, suche as his specyall trust is in, might come into your presence, and to your counsayle, as shortely as myght be, to treate for a maner of peace: so that if he and you togyther myght covenably and resonably be conjoyned, and meanes founde to have a conclusyon of peace, he wolde be therof right joyfull: and for that entente he wolde nouther spare his owne payne and laboure, nor yet none of his men, nother to come hymselfe, or to sende suffyciente persones over the see to the cytie of Amyence, or to any other place assigned; and syr, we be come hyder for this entente to knowe your pleasure in this behalfe. Than the kynge aunswered and sayde: Syr Thomas Percy, you and all your company are ryght hertely welcome, and of youre comynge and wordes we are ryght joyfull; ye shall tary here in Paris a season, and we wyll speke with our counsayle, and make you suche a covenable answere or ye depart, that it shall suffyce you. With this answere the

Englysshemen were well content. Than it was nere dyner tyme, and the Englysshemen were desyred to tary to dyne. And so the lorde of Coucy brought them into a chambre, and the lorde de la Ryver; there they dyned at their layser: and after dyner they retourned into the kynges chambre, and there had wyne and spyces, and thanne toke their leave of the kynge, and wente to their lodgynge.

CAP. CLXXI Of the Englysshe knyghtes that were sente to Parys to treate for a peace.

The comynge of syr Thomas Percy and his company into Fraunce, and the tydynges that they brought, pleased greatly the Frenche kynge, and the duke of Burgoyne, and dyvers of his counsayle, but nat all, and specially suche as ayded to sustayne pope Clementes quarell: for they sawe well by these tydynges, that if the Frenche kynge enclyned to this treatie, that it shulde greatly let and hynder the voyage that was mynded to go to Rome, to distroy pope Bonyface and his cardynals, or els to bringe them to the beleve of pope Clemente. But the mater of treatie of peace was so hygh, and touched so moche the welthe and profyte of all Crystendome, so that no persone durst speke against it; the duke of Burgoyn and his counsayle, with the kynge and his brother, and the duke of Burbone, were all of one acorde. The kyng made good chere to sir Thomas Percy, and to the Englysshmen, but amonge them there was one knyght, called sir Robert Briquet, whome the Frenche kynge loved nat; he was a Frencheman borne, but alwayes he helde himselfe outher Naveroys or Englysshe, and as than he was one of the king of Englandes privy chambre. The Frenche kynge dyssymuled with hym sagely, for whan he spake to theym, alwayes the kynge wolde tourne hisselfe to syr Thomas Percy, or els to syr Loys Clyfforde, and sayd: Syrs, we wolde gladly se this peace to be had bytwene us and our adversary the kynge of Englande, for the quarell and warre hath to long endured bytwene us; and one thinge I wyll ye knowe, that it shall nat be hyndred on our parte, though it be gretly to our cost. Sir, quod they, the kyng our soverayne lorde, who hath sent us hyther, hathe great affection to have peace, and saythe, that it shall nat be let on his parte, and hath marveyle that the warre and dyscensyon bytwene your landes hath endured so longe, and that no good amyable meanes hathe been had or this tyme.

CAP. CLXXI Than the Frenche kynge answered and sayd: We shall se the good affection that he hath therunto.

Of the Englysshe knyghtes that were sente to Parys to treate for a peace.

These Englysshemen taryed at Parys vi. dayes, and every day dyned with one of the dukes of Fraunce; and in the meane season it was determyned that the Frenche kynge, his uncles, and his privy counsayle, shulde be at Amyence, by the myddes of Marche next after, there to abyde the coming of the kynge of Englande, his uncles, and his counsayle, if they wolde come thyder. And the Englysshe knyghtes sayd, they made no doute but at the lest the kynge of Englandes uncles shulde be at the day assigned at Amyence. This was the conclusyon of this treatie. The daye before that they shulde departe out of Parys, the kynge came to the palays where his uncles were, and there he made a dynner to the Englyssh knightes, and caused sir Thomas Percy to sytte at his borde, and called hym cosyn, by reason of the Northumberlandes blode, at which dyner there was gyven to sir Thomas Percy and to the Englyssh knightes and squiers great gyftes and fayre jewels: but in the gyvynge of them, they over slypte syr Robert Briquet. And syr Peter Villers, chefe steward with the Frenche kynge, delyvered the gyftes, and he said to Syr Robert Briquet: Sir, whan ye have done suche servyce to the kynge my maister, as shall please hym, he is ryche and puisaunt ynough to rewarde you. With whiche wordes sir Robert Briquet was sore abasshed, and parceyved well therby that the kyng loved hym nat, but he was fayne to suffre it. After dyner mynstrels began to play; that pastyme ones past, sir Thomas Percy came to the kyng and sayd: Sir, I and my company have great marveyle of one thing: that ye have made us so good chere, and gyven us so great gyftes, that sir Robert Briquet hath nothynge, who is a knight of our maisters prevy chambre; sir, we desyre to knowe the cause why. Therto answered the Frenche kyng, and sayd: Sir Thomas, the knyght that ye speke of, syth ye wyll knowe that mater, he hath no nede to be in batayle agaynst me, for if he were taken prisoner his raunsome shulde soone be payde: and therwith the kyng entred into other communycacion. Than wyne and spyces were brought forthe, and so tooke leave and retourned to their lodgynge, and made a reconyng and

payde for every thyng. The nexte daye they departed and spedde so in their journeys that they arryved in Englande, and shewed the kyng and his uncles howe they had spedde, and greatly praysed the Frenche kyng, and the chere that he had made them, and shewed of the gyftes and jewels that he had gyven them.

CAP. CLXXI
Of the Englysshe knyghtes that were sente to Parys to treate for a peace.

Nowe lette us leave a lytell to speke of the Englysshemen, and somewhat shewe of kyng Johan of Castyle.

CAP. CLXXII

Of the dethe of kyng John of Castyle, and of the crownyng of kynge Henry his sonne.

YE have herde here before in this hystorie, how peace was made bytwene the kynge of Castyle, and the duke of Lancastre, who chalenged to have ryght to the realme of Castyle, by reason of the lady Constaunce his wyfe, doughter to kyng Dompeter. And by meanes of a fayre doughter that the duke of Lancastre had by the sayde lady Constaunce, the peace was made and confyrmed: for the sayde kynge Johan of Castyle had a sonne to his heyre, called Henry, who was prince of Galyce; this Henry was maryed to the duke of Lancasters doughter, wherby good peace was made bytwene Englande and Castyle; and within two yeres after this maryage kynge Johan of Castyle dyed, and was buryed in Burgus, in Spaygne. Anone after his dethe, the prelates and lordes of Spaygne drewe toguyder, and determyned to crowne the yonge herytoure the prince of Galyce: this prince Henry was crowned the nynth yere of his age, and his wyfe, doughter to the duke of Lancastre, was a fyftene yere of age. Thus the dukes doughter, by the lady Constaunce, was quene of Castyle, and lady and heritour to all the landes and seignories that kyng Dompeter, kyng Henry, and kyng Johan helde, excepte that the duke of Lancastre her father, and his wyfe her mother, had durynge their lyves, whiche was a pensyon of a hundred thousande floreyns by yere: and foure of the best erles of Spayne were

CAP. CLXXII
Of the dethe of kyng John of Castyle.

pledges and dettours for the same. Thus the duke of Lancastre sawe his two doughters, one quene of Spaygne, the other quene of Portugale, bestowed.

Nowe lette us speke of the yonge erle of Armynake, and of the voyage he made into Lombardy, for the matter requyreth it, and we shall leave to speke of the kynge of Castyle.

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy, and howe he dyed at the siege before the towne of Alexandre.

IT hath been shewed here before what great affectyon the yonge erle of Armynake had to go into Lombardy with menne of warre, to ayde and assyste his suster germayne, and his brother in lawe her husbande, the lorde Barnabo, eldest sonne to the lorde Barnabo, whome the duke of Myllayne had caused to be slayne marveylouslye. And this duke of Myllayne was erle of Vertues, and named Galeas, whose doughter the duke of Orlyaunce hadde to wyfe. This sayd lady, who was doughter to the olde erle of Armynake, and suster to the yonge erle, was greatly abasshed and disconforted, and had no truste but on her brother. She signified to hym all her estate, her povertie and necessyte, and dommage that she suffred, and humbly requyred her brother that he wolde helpe to kepe and defende her agaynste the tyraunt the erle of Vertues, who wolde disheryte her without any tytell of reason. And to the request of his suster the erle of Armynake condiscended, and sayde: that whatsoever it shulde coste hym, he wolde do his devoyre to ayde his suster. And all that he promysed he accomplisshed in dede: for he had, by the ayde of the erle Dolphyne of Auvergne, made dyvers treaties in Auvergne, Rouergue, Quercy, Lymosyn, Piergourte, Engoulmoys, and Agenoyes, and had bought certayne fortresses whiche had been kepte by the Englysshemen, Gascoyns, and Bretons, suche as

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

hadde made warre agaynst the realme of Fraunce, under colour of the kyng of Englande; and all suche as he hadde agreed withall, hadde their pardons of the Frenche kyng, and besyde that the kyng gave golde and sylver to be gyven amonge theym. But they were all bounde to the erle of Armynake, to go with hym into Lombardy to ayde hym in his warres there. And every man shewed hymselfe therto well wyllynge, and every man drewe to the ryver of Rosne, and to the ryver of Sosne. The duke of Berrey, and the duke of Burgoyne, suffred them in their countreys to take vitaylles at their pleasure, for they wolde gladly have had them clene delyvered out of the countre. And in that season under the kyng there ruled in the Dolphynry, the lorde Engueram Durdyn,[1] and the kynge had written to hym, commaundyng that these men of warre parteynyng to the erle of Armynake, shulde pesably passe throughe the countrey, and to have that they neded for their money.

[1] *Eudin.*

Whan the erle of Foiz, beynge in Byerne, in his castell of Ortays, understode howe the erle of Armynake assembled men of warre toguyder, he began to muse, for he was a man greatly ymaginatife. Well he had herde howe the brute was, that the erle of Armynake made this assemble to go into Lombardy, agaynst the lorde of Myllaygne; but bycause in tyme past the erle of Armynake, and his predecessours before him, and his brother Bernarde of Armynake, had made hym warre, therfore he douted lest the sayde assemble shulde tourne agaynst hym: wherfore he thought he wolde nat be unprovyded, but prepared his fortresses with men of warre, and made suche provysion, that if he were assayled, to resyst it with all his puissaunce. But the erle of Armynake, nor his brother, were nothynge of that purpose, but thought surely to upholde the treuce that was bytwene them, and to atcheve his enterprice into Lombardy. There were many knyghtes and squyers Englysshe, Gascoyns, Bretons, and other, that were bounde to serve the erle of Armynake in his warres; but if he shulde have made warre agaynst the erle of Foiz, they wolde have taken the erle of Foiz parte, and have forsaken the erle of Armynake, the erle of Foiz was so wel beloved with all men of warre, for the wysedome, largesse and prowesse that was in hym.

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

And whane the duchesse of Thourayne was enfourmed howe therle of Armynake was redy to passe over the mountayns, to entre into Lombardy, with puissaunce of men of warre, to make warre agaynst the duke of Myllayne her father, and howe that the Frenche kyng and his uncles, the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne, consented therto, bycause they wolde have their countreis clene avoyded of the companyons and routes of pyllars, suche as had oftentymes greved sore their countreys, this lady thought nat to forgette the matter, but wrote to her father the duke of Myllayne all that she knewe, to the entente that he shulde take hede to hymselfe, and to his countrey. The lorde of Myllayne was well enformed of the busynesse, and provyded for menne of warre where he might gette them, and refresshed his townes, cyties, and castelles, with vitayle and other munysions of warre, and loked surely to have warre with the erle of Armynake, as they hadde indede.

About the myddes of the moneth of Marche, the moost parte of these companyons were assembled toguyder in the marchesse of Avignon, all along the ryver of Rosne, to the nombre of fyftene thousande horses, and passed the ryver, and so entred into the Dolphynny of Vyen, and lodged abrode in the vyllages: and some passed forwarde, to have the more easy passage throughe the mountayns, whiche were peryllous to passe, bothe for man and horse. The erle of Armynake, and his brother, with certayne other knyghtes, wente to Avygnon, to se hym that was called pope Clemente, and the cardynalles there, and offred their servyce to the Pope, to ayde hym agaynst the tyrantes the Lombardes, for whiche offre they were thanked. And whan they had ben there an eight dayes, and that great parte of their company were paste forwarde, they tooke their leave of the Pope, and of the Cardynalles, and prepared to folowe their men: there the two bretherne departed asondre, the erle Johan of Armynake, and sir Bernarde his brother. Than the erle sayde: Brother, ye shall retourne backe to Armynake, and kepe our herytage of Comynges and Armynake, for as yet all the fortresses be nat delyvered fro the companyons. There is as yet the garyson of Lourde, where as Peter Arnaulte kepeth under the kynge of Englande, and also the garyson

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

of Bountevyll, whiche is kepte by sir Johan of Granley,[1] sonne to the Captall of Buse. And thoughe it be so that as nowe we have peace with the erle of Foiz, yet it is good to doubte hym, for he is cruell and hastye; his thought is unknowen, therfore it is good that our landes be nat dys-purveyed. Wherfore brother, for these causes and other, ye shall retourne home, and ye shalle here often fro me, and I fro you. Sir Bernarde lightlye agreed to this purpose: the devyse semed good to hym; nor also he had no great affectyon to go forthe in that journay. Than at his departynge the erle his brother sayde to hym: Brother, in youre retournyng, ye shall go to our cosyn Raymonde of Thourayne, who holdeth lande of the Pope in the countie of Venus,[2] and maketh warre agaynst hym, and my cosyn hath maryed his doughter to the prince of Orenge: and shewe hym howe I am desyred of the Pope to requyre hym to go with me in this voyage, and I shall make hym my companyon in every thynge, and I shall tary for hym at the cytie of Gappe, bytwene the mountayns. Sir, quod Bernarde, I shall do your message. Thus the two bretherne departed asondre in the felde, and never mette toguyder agayne after. The erle of Armynake toke the waye to the cytie of Gappe, in the lande of Gavos, and Bernarde his brother went to the castell of Bolongne,[3] where sir Raymonde of Thouraygne was, who receyved his cosyn joyously. Than sir Bernarde shewed hym the message that he had to saye fro his brother the erle of Armynacke, with as fayre wordes as he coulde devyse, the rather therby to enclyne hym therto. Than sir Raymonde aunswered and sayd: Fayre cosyn, or your brother the erle of Armynake be entred farre into Lombardy, and hath besieged any town, I shall folowe hym, but as yet it is to soone for me and my men to go forwarde: write unto your brother my cosyn, that aboute the moneth of Maye I shall folowe hym, and by that tyme I trust to have an ende of the war bytwene myne uncle pope Clement, and the cardinals at Avignon and me, who as yet wyll do me no ryght, and kepeth awaye fro me perforce, that myne uncle pope Gregorie gave me. They wene to wery me, but they shall nat: they desyre knyghtes and squyers, and gyveth theym pardons to make warre agaynst me, but they have no

1 *Grailly.*

2 *Venaissin.*

3 *Voulonne.*

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

lyst therto. For I canne have mo men of warre for a thousande floreyns in one daye, than they can have for all their absolucions in sevyn yere. Fayre cosyn, quod sir Bernarde, that is trewe; kepe on your purpose, I wolde nat counsayle you otherwyse; and as ye have aunswered me, so shall I write to my brother therle of Armynake. So be it, quod sir Raymonde. Thus they were toguyder all a hole daye. Thane sir Bernarde departed and passed the ryver of Rosne, at the bridge Saynt Espyrite, and so retourned into Quercy, and into Rouergue, by the mountayns, and so came thyder as he wolde be, and lefte the erle of Armynake his brother alone with his warre, against the duke of Myllayne, erle of Vertues. Or he departed fro Bologne, he wrote to his brother all the newes that he knewe, and the answere of sir Raymonde of Thourayne. The erle of Armynake receyved the letters in the waye goyng to the cytie of Gappe: he redde the letters, and so passed forthe and made no great force of the matter.

We wyll contynue to speke of the yonge erle of Armynacke, and shewe his feate, or I speke of any other mater. And thus I say, the good love and great affection that he had to conforte his suster and brother in lawe her husbande, whom the erle of Vertues, who called hymselfe lorde of Myllaygne, falsely disheryted withoute cause or tytell, caused the erle joyously to passe in his journey as farre as Pyemount, in Lombardy. There was two great reasons that caused the erle of Armynake to assemble, and to make that journey at that tyme. The fyrste was, that the realme of Fraunce therby was clene rydde of the routes of these companyons, that hadde done moche hurte in the realme, and therby the countreys better assured than they were before. The seconde reason was, to ayde his suster, for he had great pytie that she and her husbande shulde lese their herytage, wherby they shulde lyve and maynteyne their estate: and for these consyderacions he toke on hym this enterprice. The capitayns of the companyons sayde one to another: Lette us ryde forthe merily agaynst these Lombardes: we have a good quarell, and a juste tytell, and we have a good capitayne, wherby our warre shal be moche the better; and also we shall go into the best countrey of all the

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

worlde, for Lombardy receyveth fro all costes the fatnesse of the worlde; and these Lombardes be naturally ever riche and cowardes; we shall attayne agaynst theym moche profyte; there is none of us that be capitayns, but that shall retourne so ryche, that we shal never nede to make warre more agaynst any man. Thus the companyons devysed one with another, and whan they came into a plentuous countrey, there they wolde tary a season to refresshe them and their horses.

In the same season the good adventurous knight of Englande, sir Johan Hacton,[1] was in the marchesse of Florence, and made warre agaynst the Florentyns, in the quarell of pope Bonyface of Rome, for they were rebell agaynst the Popes commaundement, and so were also the Perusyns. The erle of Armynake thought that if he might get this Englysshe knyght to take parte with hym, he shulde have a great treasure of hym, bycause of his wysedome and valyauntnesse. The erle wrote to hym, signyfieng hym all the hole mater of his enterprice, desyringe hym of his ayde; whiche letter was sente by a discrete person to sir Johan Hacton, beyng in the marchesse of Florence, and had a two thousande fyghtynge men. He receyved the letter and redde it, and whan he hadde well understande all the substaunce therof, he was ryght joyfull, and aunswered and sayde, that his owne warre ones atchyved, he wolde do nothyng after, tyll he were in the company of the erle of Armynake. The messangere sayde: Sir, ye saye well: I requyre you write your mynde to my lorde the erle of Armynake, he wyll the better beleve it. With ryght a good wyll, sir, quod the knight, it is reason that I so do. Than the Englysshe knyght wrote, and delyvered the letter to the messangere, who retourned and came agayne to his lorde, and founde hym as than in the marchesse of Pyneroll, where was gret treatie bitwene hym and the Marques of Saluces, who shulde be alyed with hym, to ayde him in his warre agaynst the duke of Myllayne, erle of Vertues.

[1] *Hawkwood.*

The tidynges that the erle of Armynackes squyer brought to hym fro sir Johan Hacton, and of the wordes that were written within the letter, the erle was greatly rejoysed, and sayde that he trusted to make suche warre to the duke of

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

Myllayne that he wolde bring hym to reason, or elles to dye in the payne. Whan all his company were passed the straytes of the mountayns, and were in the good countrey of Piemounte, nere Thouraygne,[1] than they rode abrode, and dyde moche hurte in the vyllages, suche as coulde nat holde agaynst them. Than the erle layde sige before Aste, in Pyemount, and entended to tary there for sir John Hacton. Provisyon came to them fro all partes, and also the companyons wan certayne small holdes, and toke the vitayls that was within them. The countre of Pyneroll, and the landes of the Marques Mountferaunt were opyned and apparelled to delyver vytayles, and other thynges necessary for the hoost, bothe for men and horse; and also great provisyon came to them out of the Dolphyne, and out of the countie of Savoy. Many folkes greatly enclyned to the erle of Armynake, bycause they sawe his quarell was good and just, and also bycause the erle of Vertues had caused to be slayne his owne uncle, sir Bernabo, for envy, to sette agayne the lordes of Lombardy into their herytages, and disheryted his cosyn germayns, wherof many great lordes, thoughe they spake but lytell therof, yet they hadde great pytie of the case. Whyle the erle laye thus at siege before Aste, he herde tidynges of sir John Hacton, wherof he was greatlye rejoysed. The tidynges was, that the Florentynes were come to the Popes mercye, and also the Venisyens,[2] and howe that the sayd sir John shulde have threscore thousande floreyns for hym and his company. And that money ones payde, receyved, and delyvered, where as it shulde be departed, than he promysed with a fyve hundred speares, and a thousande brigans afote, to come into the fronter of Gennes, and to passe over the ryver,[3] wheder their ennemyes wolde or natte, and so to come to the erle of Armynake, wheresoever he shulde be. These tidynges greatly rejoysed the erle of Armynake, and all his company, for the ayde of this sir John Hacton was right pleasaunt. Than the erle of Armynake was counsailed to departe thens, and to go and laye siege before a great cytie called Alexandre, at the entryng of Lombardy, and whane they had won that, than to go to Bresuell,[4] whiche was also a good cytie and a fayre.

[1] *Turin.*

[2] *Pérousins.*

[3] i.e. *the Riviera.*

[4] *Vercelli.*

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

Thus the erle of Armynake and his company layde siege before the cyte of Alexaundre, standyng in a fayre countrey and a playne, at the departyng out of Pyemount, and at the entrynge of Lombardy, and the way to go to the ryver of Gennes. These men of warre passed the ryver of Thesyn,[1] and lodged at their ease at large, for the countrey was good and plesaunt there aboute. The lorde Galeas lorde of Myllayne, and erle of Vertues, was as than in a towne called the cytie of Pavy, and daylye herde tidynges what his enemyes dyde. But he had marveyle of one thynge, howe therle of Armynake coude gette the rychesse to pay wages to so many men of warre as he hadde brought with hym. But his counsayle answered hym and sayde: Sir, have no marveyle therof, for the men that he hath, be suche companyons that desyreth to wynne and to ryde at adventure; they have used longe to overron the realme of Fraunce, and to take holdes and garysons in the countrey, so that the countrey coude never be delyvered of them. And so it is, that nowe of late the duke of Berrey, and the dolphyn of Auvergne, to whose countreys these rutters dyde moche dommage, for they kepte them there against the lordes wylles, and overranne the beste parte of their herytages, and made theym warre: and they caused the erle of Armynake to treate with these companyons, so that the Frenche kyng shulde suffre them to come into this your countrey to make warre: and therby, and by meanes of certayne money gyven to them, they are avoyded oute of all the forteresses in the countrey; and also besyde that, the Frenche kynge hath pardoned all suche as made warre agaynst hym, on the condycion that they shulde serve the erle of Armynake in his warres, and all that they coude get shulde be their owne; they demaunde none other wages; and suche be named men of armes amonge theym, with a fyve or sixe horses, that if they were in their owne countreys they wolde go afoote, and be but as poore men. It is great parell and jeopardy to fyght agaynst suche men, and also lightly they be all good men of warre: wherfore, sir, the best counsayle that we can gyve you, is to kepe your townes and fortresses: they be stronge and well provyded for, and your enemyes have none artyllary nor engyns, for the saute to be regarded. They maye

[1] *Ticino.*

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

well come to the barryers of your townes and scrimysshe: other dommage they can do none; and this appereth well, for they have ben in your countrey this two monethes, and as yet have taken no fortresse lytell nor gret. Sir, let them alone, and they shall wery themselfe, and be distroyed at the ende, so ye fyght nat with them. And whan they have distroyed the playne countrey, and have no more to lyve by, they shall than be fayne to returne for famyne, without any other yvell fortune fall on them in the meane tyme. And it shall be well done that your men of warre in your fortresses kepe toguyder to ayde eche other in tyme of nede. And sir, sende to suche places as ye thynke your enemyes wyll besiege to resyst them, for townesmen have but small defence: for they be nat so used nor accustomed to warre, nouther to assaut nor to defende as men of armes, knightes and squyers be, who are norisshed and brought up therin. Sir, sende your men of warre to the cytie of Alexandre, therby ye shall have double profyte; your cytie shal be defended, and your people shall love you the better, whan they se ye do ayde and confort them. And sir, therto ye be bounde sithe ye have governaunce over them, and that they paye to you their rentes, subsydies, and aydes, that ye have demaunded of them dyvers tymes. Your enemyes can nat be so strong in the felde before Alexaundre, that the towne shulde be closed in rounde about: they have no suche nombre to do it, wherfore your men shall entre into the towne at their ease. And whan they of the towne shall se themselfe refresshed with your men of warre, they shall have the more corage, and love you moche the better, and shall putte out of their hertes all maner of treatie with your ennemyes. To this counsaile the lorde of Myllayne agreed; and incontynent he assembled toguyder his men of warre a fyve hundred speares. And he made capitayne of them an auncient knight, called sir Jaques of Byerne,[1] an expert man of armes, and they rode through the countrey prively, and so on a nyght they entred into the towne of Alexaundre. They of the towne were greatly rejoysed of their commyng, and good cause why: bycause the erle of Armynake sawe no menne styrrynge in the towne, therfore thre dayes toguyder they sauted and scrimysshed at the barriers, and yet with the

[1] *Verme.*

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

small nombre that were there, the Armynakes were so well resysted that they wan nothyng. Whan sir Jaques de la Byerne, and his company were entred into the strong cyte of Alexaundre, and were lodged and refresshed, the governour of the cytie and other came to vysite them in their lodgynge. Than sir Jaques demaunded of them the state of the cyte, and the demeanour of their enemyes, to take counsayle therupon. The auncient men and most sagest answered and sayd: Sir, sithe the erle of Armynake hath layde siege before us, every daye we have had assautes and scrimysshes before our barryers. Well, sirs, quod the knyght, tomorowe we shall se what they wyll do; they knowe nat of my commyng, I wyll make a secrete issue, and lye in an enbusshe for them. Ah, sir, quod they, ye have nede to beware what ye do, for they are a sixtene thousande horses, and if they discover you in the felde without any bataile, they shall reyse suche a dust with their horses agaynst you and your company, that ye shal be clene disconfit among yourselfe. Well, quod the knyghtes, tomorowe we shall se howe the mater shall go; we must do some feate of armes sithe we be come hyder. Than every man retourned to their lodging, and the knight gave knowledge to his company, howe that the next mornyng secretly he wolde issue out of the cytie and lye in a busshment in the feldes, and commaunded every man to be redy.

The nexte mornyng sir Jaques de la Bierne armed hym and all his company, and issued out secretely, and with hym a foure hundred, halfe a myle oute of the towne, and assembled in a valey, and caused other two hundred to abyde at the barriers: and commaunded them, that if their enemyes came to assayle them, that they shulde make but faynt defence, and recule backe thyderwarde, where as they wolde lye in the busshement. The daye was fayre and clere, and the erle of Armynake, who was yong and lusty, after he had herde masse in his pavilyon, armed hym and displayed his penon, and toke with hym but a hundred men, thynking that no man shulde encountre hym, and so came with his company before the barryers lytell and lytell. Some folowed hym and some satte styll and sayd: What nede we to arme us; whan we come to the barryers we shall

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

se no man there; and so satte styll eatyng and drinkyng. And therle of Armynake went to scrimysshe before the barryers, and there began to scrimysshe one with another; and within a shorte season the defenders beganne to recule lytell and lytell, tyll they came to their enbusshe. Whan sir Jaques de la Bierne sawe his enemyes come before hym, he discovered hymselfe, and set on the Armynagoys, who valyauntly defended themselfe, for alwayes lytell and lytell socour came to them; there was many a feate of armes done. It was on saynte Christofers daye, and the daye was so hoote that suche as were in their harnes thought verily they had ben in a furnes, the wether was so faynt without wynde, so that the lustyest ther had moche a do to do any feate of armes: the partye of Myllayne were thre agaynst one: the duste and the powder was so great that they coulde scante se one another, and specially they of the erle of Armynakes parte. There fell to the erle a great adventure: he was so oppressed with heate, that he was so feble that he coulde scant helpe himselfe, so that he drewe aparte out on the one syde of the felde, and no man with him, and there founde a lytell ryver. Whan he felte the ayre of the water he thought he was in paradyse, and sate downe alone besyde the water, and with moche payne dyd of his basenet and sate bareheded, and wasshed his face, and dranke of the water, wherby he was worse than he was before, for the coldnesse of the water coled so his blode that he was faynter thanne he was before, and fell in a palvesy, so that he lost the strength of his body and speche. And his men had loste hym: there were many taken. After, a knight of the duke of Millayns founde the erle of Armynake; whan he sawe hym, he had mervayle what he was: he parceyved wel he was a knyght and a man of honour; than the knight said, Sir, who be you? Yelde you, ye are my prysoner. The erle understode hym nat, nor he coulde nat speke, but he helde up his hande, and made token to yelde hym. The knyght wolde have hadde hym to ryse, but he coulde nat; the knyght taryed styll with him whyle other dyd fyght, in the whiche batayle many a feate of armes was done.

Whan syr Jaques de la Bierne, who was a sage knyght, sawe howe the journey was good for his party, and howe

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

that a great nombre of his enemyes were taken and slayne, and also sawe well that his owne men waxed wery, and that his enemyes began to multyply with fresshe men, than he reculed towarde the cytie skrymysshynge and defendynge. The knyght that had taken the erle of Armynake, thought nat to leave hym behynde, for he thought surely he was some man of honoure, and desyred his company to ayde hym to beare his prisoner into the towne, promysynge them to have parte of his raunsome. They dyd so, and with moche payne brought him into the cyte, and he was unarmed and layde in a bedde. Than syr Jaques de la Bierne entred into the cytie, and toke his lodgynge, and unarmed hym, and refresshed him and his company. And whan the erle of Armynacke was myst in the hoost without, they were sore dysmayed and wyst nat what to say nor do, and some came to the place where the batayle had ben to seke for hym, and returned agayne clene dyscomfyted. The knyght that had taken the erle of Armynake had great desyre to know what man his prisoner was, and came to another squyer that was in lykewyse taken prisoner, a Gascon, desyringe his mayster to suffre hym to go with hym to his lodgynge; so they went togyder. The Lombarde knyght led the squyer of Fraunce into a chambre, and brought hym to the bedde where the erle of Armynake lay sore complaynyng, and caused torches to be lyghted up, and than said to the French squyer: Sir, knowe you nat this man? The squyer regarded hym well and sayd: I knowe hym well, for I ought so to do, it is our capitayne the erle of Armynake. With the whiche wordes the Lombarde was joyfull, but the erle was so sycke that he understode nothynge that was sayd to hym. Than his mayster sayd, Go we hence, let hym rest. Thus they left him, and the same nyght he dyed, and passed this transitory lyfe. The next day whan it was knowen that the erle of Armynake was deed in Alexaunder in his bedde, syr Jaques of Bierne wolde nat that his dethe shulde be unknowen, but caused it to be publysshed in the hoost, by suche prisoners as he had, to se what his enemyes wolde do. They of the host were sore dyscomfyted as they well shewed, for as than they had no capitayne to drawe unto, for they were but companyons gadred of all partes: than they sayd, Let us returne and

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

save ourselfe, for we have lost our tyme. Anon it was knowen in the cytie, howe the Armynois were discomfyted, and had no capytayne; than they armed them, and issued out a horsebacke and afoote, and set on the hoost cryenge: Pavy for the lorde of Myllayne: there they were taken and slayne without defence. The conquest and botye was great with the companyons that were come thyder with syr Jaques of Bierne. The Armynagois yelded themselfe without defence, and caste away armure and fledde, and were chased lyke beastes. Lo what a harde adventure therle of Armynake and his company had, and where as his entente was to do well, it tourned hym to great yvell. If he had lyved fyve dayes lenger, syr Johan Acton had come to hym with fyve hundred speares, and a thousande brigandyns afoote, wherby he myght have done many feates of armes, and all lost by harde adventure.

Whan the duke of Myllayn knewe the trouth that his enemyes were slayne and taken, and specyally the erle of Armynake slayne, he was joyfull therof, and loved syr Jaques de Bierne the better in his herte, and made hym soveraygne over all his chyvalry, and made him chefe of his counsayle. The duke of Myllayne, to avoyde his countrey of his enemyes, gave to every prysoner that was a gentylman a horse, and to every other man a florayne, and quyted them clene of their raunsomes: but at their departynge he caused them to swere that they shulde never after arme them agaynst hym. Thus these companions departed out of Lombardy, and Piemount, and entred into Savoy, and into the Dolpheny, and had suche povertie that it was marveyle, for as they passed every towne was closed agaynst theym. Anone, every man had spent his florayn; some had pytie of them, and dyd gyve them almes for charite, and some rebuked and mocked them, sayenge: Go your wayes, seke out your erle of Armynake, who is drinkynge at a well before Alexaundre. Yet they were in more myschiefe whan they came to the ryver of Rone; they had thought lightly to have passed over into the realme of Fraunce, but they dyd nat, for the Frenche kynge hadde commaunded all the passages to be closed and kept agaynst them, wherby they fell in great daunger and povertie; after that they coulde

never assemble togyther agayne. Thus the yonge erle of Armynakes army brake asonder, and his suster abode styll in as yvell case as she was in before. Than the duke of Myllayne sent for a bysshop of his countrey, and for suche as were most next to the erle of Armynake, as had ben there with hym at that journey: and the duke commaunded that therles body shulde be baumed, and sente to his brother syr Barnarde, who was ryght sorowfull of those tydynges, and good cause why, but there was no remedy. Than the erle of Armynake was buryed in the cathedrall churche of Rodays, and there he lyeth.

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

It ought to be knowen, as it hath ben contayned here before in this history, how syr Thomas Percy was sent by kyng Rycharde of Englande, into the realme of Fraunce, and shewed well howe he had gret affectyon to have a ferme peace bytwene Englande and Fraunce, and specyally two of the kynge of Englandes uncles, as the duke of Lancastre, and the duke Edmonde of Yorke; but the kynges other uncle, the duke of Glocestre, and constable of Englande, wolde in no wyse acorde to have any peace with the Frenchmen, without it were to the kynges honoure and theirs, and that there myght be rendred agayne all suche cyties, townes, castels, landes, and sygnories, whiche had been gyven to the kynge of Englande, and to his heyres, whiche falsely had ben taken away by the Frenchmen without tytell or reasone, and besyde that the somme of four thousande[1] frankes, whiche was owyng whan the Frenchmen began the warre agayne. And of this opynyon was dyvers lordes of Englande, sayenge, that to the dethe they wolde justifye the same. Many sayd that the duke of Glocestre had good ryght and reason to sustayne that opinyon; but they dissymuled the mater covertely, bycause they sawe the kynges mynde and affection enclyned greatly to have peace. But the poore knightes and squyers and archers of Englande rather enclyned to have warre, suche as had susteyned their estates by reason of the warre. Consydre well than howe peace, love, or acorde might be had bytwene these parties: for the Frenchemen in their treatie demaunded to have Calays beaten downe, and to have the sygnorie of Guysnes, Hammes, Marke, and Oye, and all the landes of Froyton,[2]

[1] 1,400,000.

[2] *Fretin.*

CAP. CLXXIII

Of the army of the yonge erle Johan of Armynake, and of the vyage that he made into Lombardy.

and the dependantes of Guysnes, unto the lymyttes of the water of Gravelyng. And the Frenche kynge offred to delyver to the crowne of Englande as moch landes in valure in Acquytayn. Against whiche artycle the duke of Gloucestre helde and said: The Frenchmen wyll paye us with our owne, for they knowe well ynough howe we have charters sealed by kynge Johan and all his chyldren, that all hole Acquytayn shulde have been delyvered to us, without any resorte or soveraynte to any man; and all that ever they have doone sythe, hath ben by fraude and false engyn, and nyght and day entende to no other thyng but to disceyve us: for if Calays and suche landes as they demaunde were delyvered into their handes, they shulde be lordes of all the see coste, and than all our conquestes were as nothynge: I shall rather never agree to peace as long as I lyve.

CAP. CLXXIIII

How syr Peter of Craon fell in the French kynges displeasure and in the duke of Thourayns, and after he was receyved by the duke of Bretayne.

IN this said season there was a knyght of Fraunce of the countrey of Anjou, a gentle knight and of noble extraction, called syr Pyer of Craon, marveylously well beloved, and specially with the duke of Thourayne, for aboute the duke nothynge was doone but by hym. Also this knyght helde a gret astate about the duke of Anjou, who was called kynge of Naples, Cicyll, and Jherusalem, and also he was ryche. A sclaunder was brought upon hym through the realme of Fraunce, howe he had robbed the yonge kynge of Cycyll, duke of Anjou: for the whiche brute the sayd sir Peter absented himselfe fro the yonge kynge and fro his mother, who had ben wyfe to the olde duke of Anjou; howebeit, he delte so that he was welbeloved with the Frenche kynge, and with his brother the duke of Thourayne. Also the same season syr Olyver of Clysson, as

CAP. CLXXIIII

How syr Peter of Craon fell in the French kynges displeasure and in the duke of Thourayns.

thanne constable of Fraunce, was greatly in favour with the kyng and with the duke of Thourayne, whiche favour he had get by reason of the good servyce that he had done in armes, as well in Fraunce as els where, in the kynges dayes and in his fathers dayes kinge Charles. And sir Olyver of Clyssons doughter had wedded Johan of Bretayne, brother germayne to the quene of Jherusalem. And this syr Olyver Clysson, by reason of the alyaunce that he had by the maryage of Johan of Bretayne, was greatly in the duke of Bretayns indignacion, insomoch that the duke helde him for his mortall enemy, and Johan of Bretayne in likewyse: and the duke of Bretayne repented hym that he had nat slaine sir Olyver of Clysson whan he had hym in prisone in his castell of Ermyn. This syr Peter of Craon was in suche favour with the duke of Bretaygne, that he myght do with him what he lyst; he was his cosyn. And whyle he was in favour with the Frenche kynge and with the duke of Thourayn, he wolde gladly have brought out of the kynges favoure syr Olyver of Clysson the constable, if he coulde have brought it aboute.

Thus the envyous whiche covertely always hath reygned in Fraunce, dissymuling their maters tyll they come to an yvell conclusion. The constable of Fraunce had alwayes ben so true in all his dedes to the crowne of Fraunce, that every manne loved hym, except the duke of Burgoyne, who loved him nothyng. The hatred came by the duches of Burgoyne, who was a lady of hygh corage, for she coulde nat love the constable, for the duke of Bretayne was nere of blode to her: and all that her father the erle of Flaunders loved she loved, and suche as he hated she dyd the same; she was of that condycion. This syr Peter of Craon, whyle he was in the Frenche court, and great with the duke of Thourayne, he wrote often tymes to the duke of Bretayne secretly every thynge that he knewe, and the duke wrote agayne to hym. Theffecte of their writynges I coude nat knowe; howbeit, I Johan Froysart, auctor of this hystory, on a tyme whan I was at Parys, on a night whan a great myschefe was lykely to have fallen upon sir Olyver Clysson, constable of Fraunce, by a marveylous enterprise of syr Peter of Craon, as I shall hereafter more playnly declare,

CAP. CLXXIIII

How syr Peter of Craon fell in the French kynges displeasure and in the duke of Thourayns.

whan tyme shall requyre; and bycause I sawe the mater darke and obscure, and lykely to be great trouble and daunger, I dyd all the payne I coulde to knowe the grounde and occasyon of the mater, why syr Peter of Craon was so sodaynly banysshed fro the Frenche kynges love and the duke of Thourayns. Suche serche I made, and suche enquery of them that knewe the mater, that some of them enfourmed me of the trouth as the fame and renome ran. Fyrst, the duke of Thourayn was dyspleased with this syr Peter of Craon through his owne faute, for he dysclosed the secretnesse that was bytwene the duke of Thourayne and another lady. If he dyd so, he dyd yvell.

The duke of Thourayne as than had suche favour to syr Peter of Craon, that he toke hym as his companyon, and ware ever lyke apparell, and had hym alwayes with hym wheresoever he wente, and shewed hym all his secretes. This duke of Thourayn as than was yonge and amorous, and gladly wolde company with ladyes and damosels, and sporte hym amonge them, and specially as it was shewed me, he loved entierly a fayre lady of Paris, yonge and fressh. His love and secretes were knowen in suche wyse that it turned to great dyspleasure to the duke, and he wyste nat whome to blame but syr Peter of Craon, for the duke had shewed hym all his secretes in that mater, and had taken hym in his company whan he wolde secretly speke with the said yonge lady. The duke on a tyme promysed the sayd lady a thousande crownes of golde, so that he myght have his pleasure of her; but the lady as than refused it, and sayd, howe she loved hym nat for his golde nor sylver, but pure love enclyned her to beare hym her good wyll; but as for golde or sylver she wolde nat sell her honoure. All these wordes and promesses were knowen by the duches of Thourayne, who incontynent sent for the said yonge lady into her chambre. Than she called her by her name, and in gret displeasure sayd: Wylte thou do me wronge with my lorde my husbande? The yonge lady was abasshed, and all wepynge sayd: Nay, madame, by the grace of God I never dyd thynke it, nor never wyll. Than the duchesse sayd: Thus it is, I ame enfourmed that my lorde my husbande loveth you, and you him, and the mater so farre gone bytwene you,

CAP. CLXXIIII

How syr Peter of Craon fell in the French kynges displeasure and in the duke of Thourayns.

that in suche a place and at suche a tyme he promysed you a thousande crownes of golde to have his pleaser of you; howebeit, ye dyd refuse it as than, wherin ye dyd wysely, and therfore as at this tyme I pardon you; but I charge you, as derely as ye love your lyfe, that ye commune nor talke no more with hym, but suffre hym to passe, and herkyn nat to his comunynge. Than whan the yonge lady sawe herselfe accused, of trouth she answered and sayd: Madame, I shall delyver me fro him as sone as I can, and shall so deale that ye shall have no cause of dyspleasure in this mater. Therwyth the duchesse gave her leave to departe, and so she returned to her lodgyng. The duke of Thourayne, who knewe nothynge of this mater, and as he that entierly loved this yonge lady, fortuned on a day to come where as she was. Whanne she sawe hym, she eschewed his company, and made hym no maner of semblant of love, but dyd clene contrary to that she had used before, for she durst nat, and also she had sworne and promysed to the duches. Whan the duke sawe her countenaunce he was pensyve, and thought he wolde knowe why she delte so straungely, and demaunded of her the cause of her straungnes. The yonge lady all wepynge sayd: Syr, ye have bewrayed your love, and the secrete promesse and offre that ye made me to my lady your wyfe, or els some other; remembre you wel to whom ye have shewed your secretnesse, for, syr, I was in great daunger by my lady your wyfe, and by none other; and I have sworne and promysed her that after this tyme I wyll never company nor talke with you, wherby she shulde have any jelousy. Whan the duke herde that, they were sore wordes to him, and greatly to his displeasure, and said: Ah, my fayre lady, I swere to you by my faythe, that rather than this mater shulde have ben shewed to my wyfe, that I had loste a hundred thousande frankes; sythe ye have sworne, kepe your promesse, for whatsoever it coste me I wyll knowe the trouth who hath bewrayed our secretes.

Thus the duke departed fro the yonge lady, and made no semblant as than, but pacyentely suffred; howebeit, he thought the more, and at nyght came to his wyfe to supper, and shewed her more token of love than ever he dyd before;

CAP. CLXXIIII

Howsyr Peter of Craon fell in the French kynges displeasure and in the duke of Thourayns.

and he dyd so moche with fayre wordes, that the duchesse shewed him all the matter, and howe that she knewe it by syr Peter of Craon. Than the duke spake no more at that tyme. That nyght passed, and the nexte day, about nyne of the clocke, he toke his horse and rode fro the howse of saynte Poll to the castell of Lowre, where he founde the kynge his brother heryng of masse. The kyng swetely receyved hym, for he loved hym entyerly, and the kynge sawe well by the dukes maner that he had some dyspleasure in his mynde, and said: Ah, fayre brother, what is the mater? It semeth ye be troubled. Syr, quod he, good cause why. Wherfore, quod the kynge: I praye you shewe me. The duke, who wolde hyde nothynge fro the kynge, shewed hym all the hole mater, and complayned greatly agaynst syr Peter of Craon, and sayd: Syr, by the faythe that I owe to God and to you, if it were nat for your honour, I wolde slee hym. We shall do well ynough, quod the kynge; he shall be warned by our counsayle to avoyde our house and servyce, and in lyke wise cause him to avoyde your house and company. I am well content with this, quod the duke. The same day the lorde de la Ryver and sir Johan Mercyer sayd unto syr Peter of Craon, on the kynges behalfe, that he shulde avoyde the kynges courte and servyce, and go where he lyste. In lykewyse syr Johan of Buell and the lorde of Dervaulx,[1] seneschall of Thourayne, gave hym lyke commaundement on the duke of Thourayns behalfe. Whan syr Peter of Craon sawe this, he was abasshed, and tooke it in great dyspyte, and coude nat ymagyn why it shulde be. And trewe it was, he desyred to come into the kinges presence and the dukes, to knowe the cause of their dyspleasure; but he was aunswered, that nother the kynge nor the duke wolde nat here hym speke. Whan he sawe none other remedy, he apparelled hymselfe and departed out of Parys in great displeasure in his hert, and so rode into Anjou to a castell of his owne called Sable, and taryed there a season sore troubled in his mynde. He sawe well he was chased out of the Frenche courte and out of the house of Thourayn, and also out of the house of the quene of Naples and Jherusalem. Than whan he parceyved these thre howses closed fro hym, he thought to go to the

[1] *Herbault.*

CAP. CLXXIIII

duke of Bretaygne his cosyn, and to shewe hym all his adventures. So he dyd, and rode into Bretayne, and founde the duke at Wannes, who made hym good chere, and knewe somwhat before of his trouble. And than this syr Peter shewed hym all the case. Whan the duke of Bretaygne had well herde all the mater, he sayde: Fayre cosyn, recomforte yourselfe; all this is surely brought about by syr Olyver of Clysson.

How syr Peter of Craon fell in the French kynges displeasure and in the duke of Thourayns.

This rote and foundacion of hatred multyplyed greatly after, as ye shall here in this hystory. Syr Peter of Craon taryed so longe with the duke of Bretaygne, that he forgate Fraunce, for the constable, syr Olyver of Clysson, and the kynges counsayle were agaynste hym; and also they were nat contente with the duke of Bretayne in that he kepte sir Peter Craon in his house. As for the duke of Bretaygne he cared nat greatly neyther for the good wyll nor yvell wyll of the Frenche kynge; he provyded suffyciently for his cyties, townes, and castelles, in suche wyse that he loved as well warre as peace. And all that ever he dyd was well knowen in Fraunce and with the kinges counsayle. And suche as were nexte aboute the kynge reputed the duke of Bretaygne prowde and presumptuous, and thretened him greatly: but the duke dyde sette lytell therby, and sayde, that he wolde make warre agaynst the erle of Pointhieur[1] in a juste quarell, For the erle of Pointhyeur our cosyn wryteth and nameth hymselfe Johan of Bretayne, as though he were herytour of this countrey. I wyll he be called Johan, for that is his name, and erle of Pointhieur; and I wyll he put out of his armes the ermyns, and write himselfe Johan of Bloys, or of Chatellon, and none other. And if he wyll nat do thus, I shall cause him to do it, and take fro hym his lande, for he holdeth it by faythe and homage of us: as for the herytage of Bretaygne he hathe nothynge to do therwith, so that it shulde returne to him, for I have bothe sonnes and doughters that shall be myne heyres. Let hym purchase hym landes in some other place, for as of this he hath fayled. Thus often tymes the duke of Bretayne wolde devyse with sir Peter of Craon, who wolde nat replye agaynst his pleasure, but rather dyd further it, and all for the yvell wyll that he bare to the

[1] *Penthièvre.*

CAP. CLXXIIII

constable syr Olyver of Clysson and to the counsayle of Fraunce.

How syr Peter of Craon fell in the French kynges displeasure.

Nowe let us leave spekynge of this mater, and treate a lytell of another pytuous mater concernynge the erle Guy of Bloys, of whom mencyon is made here before in this hystory.

END OF VOLUME V.

PRINTED BY
T. & A. CONSTABLE
EDINBURGH
1902

D
113
F713
1901a
v.5

Froissart, Jean
Chronicle

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY